

# HISTORY OF ENGLAND

FROM

THE FALL OF WOLSEY

TO

THE DEFEAT OF THE SPANISH ARMADA.

BY

JAMES ANTHONY FROUDE, M.A.

*JATP FELLOW OF EXETER COLLEGE OXFORD*

VOLUME VI

*EDWARD THE SIXTH  
MARY*

LONDON

LONGMANS, GREEN, AND CO

1875.

---

JOHN CHILDS AND SON, PRINTERS



# CONTENTS OF VOLUME



## CHAPTER XXVIII

### *EXECUTION OF THE DUKE OF SOMERSET*

	PAGE
Alliance between England and France	1
Edward is betrothed to a French Princess	3
The Emperor and the Princess Mary	5
Likelihood of War with the Empire	7
The Rise of Prices	9
The Silver Coin is called down	10
Fresh Issue of Base Money	11
Proclamation of Prices	13
Partial Restoration of the Currency	14
The Sweating Sickness	15
Suppression of Bishopsrics	18
The Princess Mary	19
Intrigues of Somerset	31
Somerset's Conspiracy	32
Evidence of Sir Thomas Palmer	35
Elevations in the Peerage	38
Arrest of Somerset	38
The Trial	41
Sentence of Death	44
The Execution	51
Conduct of Cranmer	52
The Liturgy	54

	PAGE
Second Act of Uniformity	57
The London Hospitals	58
Statute of Usury	60
Reform of the Law of Treason	61
The Lutheran Preachers are expelled from Augsburg	63
The Emperor goes to Innspruck	65
The Council of Tient	65
Duke Maurice declares against the Emperor	67
Peace of Passau	69
State of Ireland	71
First Administration of Sir Anthony St Leger	71
Deputation of Sir Edward Bellingham	74
Character of Bellingham	79
Results of his Government	82
Return of St Leger	84
The Irish Mint	85
St Leger and the Reformation	87
St Leger and Bellingham's Captains	87
Sir James Crofts is made Deputy	91
The Irish Currency	91
Irish Council of Trade	93
Artificial Famine and General Misery	96

---

## CHAPTER XXIX

### *NORTHUMBERLAND'S CONSPIRACY.*

Moral Results of the Reformation	99
Character of Edward	101
Edward's Opinions on the State of England	103
Proposed Protestant Synod	105
Church Discipline	106
Continued Disorders in the Country	108
The Antwerp Loans	110

# CONTENTS

	VII
	PAGE
The Crown Debts . . . .	112
Differences with France . . . .	113
England and the Empire . . . .	117
Commissions to raise Money . . . .	119
The Churches are again spoiled . . . .	120
The Public Accounts . . . .	121
A new Parliament to be called . . . .	123
A General Election . . . .	124
Nomination of the Members . . . .	125
The Council and the Estates of the Church . .	126
The Merchant Adventurers and the Fellowship of London Merchants . . . .	130
A Subsidy . . . .	134
John Knox and the Duke of Northumberland . .	136
John Knox preaches before the Court . . . .	137
Dissolution of Parliament . . . .	139
Prospects of Northumberland . . . .	140
The King's illness . . . .	142
Siege of Metz . . . .	143
England offers to mediate between France and the Empire . . . .	144
Renard and Noailles . . . .	148
Anticipations of the King's Death . . . .	149
Popular Good Feeling towards Mary . . . .	150
Possible Alteration of the Succession . . . .	153
Views of France . . . .	154
Northumberland determines to set Mary aside . . . .	157
He persuades Edward . . . .	159
The King's Device for the Succession . . . .	160
Opposition of the Council and of the Judges . . . .	163
The Letters Patent . . . .	164
The Signatures . . . .	167
Conduct of Cranmer . . . .	169
Cranmer yields to Edward's Entreaties . . . .	170
Features of the King's Disease . . . .	172

General Discontent . . .	PAGE 173
Edward dies . . .	175

---

## CHAPTER XXX

### *QUEEN JANE AND QUEEN MARY.*

Flight of Mary . . .	177
Advice of the Flemish Ambassadors	177
Position of Northumberland	180
Lady Jane Grey . . .	181
Proclamation of Queen Jane . . .	186
Letter of Mary to the Lords . . .	187
Gulford Dudley and the Crown . . .	190
Mary's Party gains Strength . . .	193
Northumberland levies Troops . . .	194
Lord Pembroke . . .	197
The Council prepare to declare for Mary	199
Revolt of the Fleet and Army	200
Sunday during the Crisis . . .	200
Northumberland invites a French Invasion	203
The Meeting at Baynard's Castle	205
Proclamation of Mary in London . . .	207
Arrest of Northumberland . . .	210
The Emperor and the Queen's Marriage	213
Funeral of Edward VI. . .	216
The Emperor's Advice . . .	218
Gardiner returns to the Council	220
The Ambassador Renard . . .	222
Mary enters London . . .	224
Advice of Renard . . .	226
Restoration of the deprived Bishops	227
Reduction of Expenditure	229
The Hot Gospeller	229

# CONTENTS

ix  
PAGE

Mass at the Tower	233
Disputes in Council	233
Sermon at Paul's Cross	235
The Marriage Question	236
Northumberland's Trial	238
Northumberland under Sentence	241
The Recantation	243
The Executions	245
The Reaction . .	249
The Purging of Convocation .	252
Arrest of Latimer .	253
Arrest of Cranmer	256
General Restoration of the Mass	257
Reginald Pole	258
England and the Papacy	260
Visit of Commendone to the Queen	261
Difficulties in restoring the Papal Authority	263
The Prince of Spain proposed as the Queen's Husband	265
Parties in England .	266
Elizabeth and the Mass	270
Lord Courtenay and the Queen .	270
The Coronation Oath	273
The Coronation .	275
The Spanish Marriage	276
The Queen and Renard	278
Philip's Virtues	279
Reginald Pole .	280
Meeting of Parliament	283
Preliminary Discussion	285
The Queen's Legitimacy and the Authority of the Pope	285
Convocation	287
Debate on the Real Presence . . .	288
The Spanish Marriage .	290
Mary's Prayer . .	292
Views of Gardiner and Paget	293

	PAGE
Impending Fate of Cranmer . . .	295
Petition of the House of Commons .	296
The Queen and Council . . .	298
The Succession . . .	299
Menace of Rebellion . . .	301
The Queen and Elizabeth . . .	302

## CHAPTER XXXI.

*THE SPANISH MARRIAGE.*

Conflicting Parties . . .	304
Advice of Pole . . .	307
The Marriage Articles . . .	309
Opposition of the People . . .	312
Arrival of Count Egmont . . .	314
The Marriage Treaty . . .	315
Alarm of France . . .	316
Conspiracies . . .	317
Plans for a General Insurrection . . .	318
Commencement of Disturbance . . .	319
Flight of Sir Peter Carew . . .	322
Conference at Allingham Castle . . .	323
Rising in Kent . . .	323
The Duke of Suffolk . . .	326
Sir Thomas Wyatt . . .	326
Intercepted Despatches of the French Ambassador . . .	329
The Queen's Troops join Wyatt . . .	331
Alarm at the Court . . .	333
The Queen at the Guildhall . . .	336
Ill Success of Suffolk in the Midland Counties . . .	338
Storming of Cowling Castle . . .	339
State of Coventry . . .	340
Suffolk is taken . . .	342

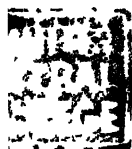
# CONTENTS

xi

## PAGE

Wyatt at Southwark . . . . .	343
Agitation of the Council . . . . .	344
Wyatt crosses the Thames . . . . .	347
The Night at Whitehall . . . . .	349
Advance of Wyatt . . . . .	351
The Insurrection fails . . . . .	354
The Queen's Revenge . . . . .	355
Lady Jane Grey the first Victim . . . . .	357
General Havoc among the Prisoners . . . . .	361
Arrest of Elizabeth . . . . .	363
Parties in the Council . . . . .	366
The Proxy Marriage . . . . .	367
Gardiner and the intended Persecution . . . . .	370
Creation of Catholic Peers . . . . .	371
The Refugees in France . . . . .	372
Perils of Elizabeth . . . . .	376
Sentence of Wyatt . . . . .	377
Elizabeth writes to the Queen . . . . .	379
The Tower . . . . .	382
Protest of the Lords . . . . .	384
Renard and the Queen . . . . .	384
Meeting of Parliament . . . . .	385
The Marriage Bill . . . . .	387
Execution of Wyatt . . . . .	389
Trial and Acquittal of Throgmorton . . . . .	391
The Succession . . . . .	392
The Persecution Bills . . . . .	393
Resistance of the Lay Lords . . . . .	393
The Bills are lost . . . . .	396
The Court and Lord Howard of Effingham . . . . .	398
Elizabeth is sent to Woodstock . . . . .	399
The Queen's Troubles . . . . .	401
Philip sails from Spain . . . . .	404
Philip at Southampton . . . . .	405
The Wet Ride to Winchester . . . . .	409

	PAGE
The Marriage	410
War in Belgium	412
Charles V at Namur	413



## CHAPTER XXXII

*RECONCILIATION WITH ROME*

Pole and the Emperor	416
The Church Lands	419
The Papal Commission	420
Objections to Pole's Return	422
Pole appeals to Philip	423
The Spaniards in London	426
Philip is weary of England	428
Bonner's Articles	429
Agitation in the City	430
A New Parliament	432
The Elections	433
The Roman Question	434
An Embassy is sent to Pole	437
Pole's Return	441
The Journey	441
Pole at Canterbury	442
The Salutation	444
The Queen <i>encointe</i>	446
Speech of Pole at Whitehall	448
Parliament petitions for Absolution	454
St Andrew's Day	454
Absolution and Reconciliation of England	458
Pole writes to the Pope	460
Catholic Exultation	462
Petition of the Clergy	464
The Act of Reconciliation	465



## CONTENTS

The Passing of the Heresy Acts	466
Importance of Parliament and Discontent of Pop.	468
The Act of Reconciliation	470
Regency Bill	478
Dissolution of Parliament	480
The Limits of the Catholic Reaction	482
The Legate's Injunctions	484
Commencement of the Persecution	486
Trials of Hooper and Rogers	488
Rogers is burnt at Smithfield	490
Hooper is sent to Gloucester	491
Martyrdom of Hooper	492
Effect upon the People	497
Conspiracy and Failure	499
Renard's Advice to Philip	502

## CHAPTER XXXIII

### *THE MARTYRS*

The Persecution continues	504
Burning of William Hunter	508
Ferrars, Bishop of St. David's	508
The Crimes of Ferrars	509
Ferrars is burnt	512
Prospects of European Peace	514
Proposed Concurrence	515
The Queen's expected Continent	516
Litanies and Processions	516
The Child is not born	518
Condemnation of the Queen	520
Fresh Stimulus to the Persecution	522
Burning of Cardmaker and Wainwright	524

	PAGE
Change in the Queen's Prospects . . .	526
Release of Elizabeth . . .	528
Interview between the Sisters . . .	529
Intended Abdication of the Emperor . . .	532
Philip leaves England . . .	533
Views of the Spaniards . . .	536
Philip on the Continent . . .	539
The Persecution . . .	540
Trial of Cranmer at Oxford . . .	542
Trials of Ridley and Latimer . . .	550
Ridley and Latimer are burnt . . .	557
Effects of the Persecution . . .	560
Paul IV and the Church Lands . . .	562
Death and Character of Gardiner . . .	564
Meeting of Parliament . . .	566
The Subsidy and the First-fruits . . .	567
First-fruits cannot be restored to the Pope . . .	569
Irritation of the Queen . . .	571
Further Failures and Dissolution . . .	571
Correspondence of Mary with Philip . . .	573
Fate of Cranmer referred to the Pope . . .	574
Sentence arrives from Rome . . .	576
The Archbishop is condemned . . .	578
Pole writes to him . . .	578
He wavers and recants . . .	583
The Court nevertheless will kill him . . .	587
Cranmer at St Mary's Church . . .	588
The Sermon . . .	589
The Archbishop's last Speech . . .	592
His Penitence . . .	598
His Death . . .	599

## CHAPTER XXVIII.

### THE EXECUTION OF THE DUKE OF SOMERSET.

FRANCE and England having completed <sup>1511</sup> their private understanding, special embassies on both sides paraded the friendship before the world. The Marshal St André came to London in splendour, with a retinue of lords, Northampton Goodrick,<sup>1</sup> Sir Philip Hoby, and others, carried powers to Paris to arrange a marriage between Edward and the Princess Elizabeth. Though France had quarrelled with the Pope, though Henry was disclaiming an allegiance to the Council of Trent, it was remarked that the English ambassadors were received with processions, masses, and litanies in approved Catholic form. In England, such decorations of altars and churches as had escaped the mint or the hands of the grandees, were employed to decorate the royal tables on the reception of St André. The

<sup>1</sup> Bishop of Ely, afterwards bishop at Westminster when made preparations for the purpose,

<sup>2</sup> 'It was appointed that I should and not grieve of new and taken receive the Frenchmen that come out of Church still, mates, golden

French faction in Italy interpreted the alliance to promise a return of England to the faith. The credulous among the English laboured to revive the old hope that France might unite with them in schism.<sup>1</sup> At both Courts there was, as it were, an ostentatious declaration that, in matters of religion, the two countries had no intention of approximating; on neither side would the creed be sacrificed to the exigencies of policy

Courtesy and mutual good offices might compensate, however, for differences of opinion, and the English had an opportunity for a display of integrity which passed for magnanimous. The death of Mary Stuart would have broken the chain by which the French held her subjects linked to them. A Scot sent in an offer to take her off by poison.<sup>2</sup> But the council resisted the temptation amidst the applause of their friends; and the intended assassin was delivered in custody over the Calais frontier.<sup>3</sup>

missals, primers, crosses, and reliques.—EDWARD'S *Journal*, June 2, 1551

<sup>1</sup> 'There is much talk in Italy of this marriage between our master and France. They that would the French to seem big say the league is offensive and defensive. They also add, that one of the covenants is that we must return to the true faith of Holy Church, as they call it, that is, as we know it—to the blind Romish synagogue. Would God the French King were as like to

dering Popistant'—Morrison to the Council *MS Germany*, Edward VI bundle 15, State Paper Office

<sup>2</sup> 'One Stewart, a Scotchman, meaning to poison the young Queen of Scotland, thinking thereby to get favour here, was, after he had been awhile in the Tower, delivered over the frontiers at Calais to the French, to have him punished according to his deserts.'—EDWARD'S *Journal*, May

<sup>3</sup> 'Men talk in this Court that one made offer to your Lordships to

St André's was a visit of ceremony: he brought with him the order of St Michael for the young King. The business of the connection was transacted on the Continent.

The differences with Scotland had been adjusted on the 10th of June in a treaty in which the engagements of 1543 for the marriage of <sup>June</sup> Edward and Mary were passed over in silence. The French and English commissioners meeting to arrange a new connection, found it necessary to peruse and consider those engagements. The Scottish promises were produced, and Northampton first demanded that the contract should be fulfilled.

'To be frank and plain with you,' Montmorency replied, 'seeing you require us so to be, the matter hath cost us both much riches and much blood, and so much doth the honour of France hang thereupon, as we cannot talk with you therein, the marriage is already con-

French King word thereof, whereupon the man is committed to prison, and the young lady out of danger. Your honours are much increased by this your noble fact. Your integrities so much the more commended, that they see many are glad largely to hire whom they may by any means corrupt, and find few complaints made against such as in this point offer service. It is to your Lordships' eternal praise that ye, by this your honourable example, do teach the King's Majesty, in these his young years, to abhor foul

practices—a lesson better and more worth it than is the violent catching of the fairest kingdom that the sun sheweth light unto. In spite of this, even these are forced to like, to allow, yea, to wonder at things nightly done, that by no entreaty can mean to follow them.'—Morrison to the Council from the Emperor's Court *MS Germany*, Edward VI bundle 15, State Paper Office. I know no keener satire on the public morals of the age than this passage.

cluded between her and the Dauphin, and therefore we would be glad to hear no more thereof.’<sup>1</sup> The answer was of course anticipated, and was perhaps preconcerted. The King of France said that, although he had been at war with England, ‘he never enterprised anything with worse will, nor more against his stomach.’ ‘He thanked God it was at an end, he trusted, for ever.’<sup>2</sup> The English waived their claims on Mary, and made their proposals in exchange for the hand of a princess of France. Acquiescence in general terms was promptly conceded; but when the details of the arrangement came under consideration, it appeared that the French still intended to profit by the weakness and the necessities of Edward’s Government. Northampton suggested that they should give with the princess, as a moderate dowry, 1,500,000 crowns. He lowered his terms on being refused, amidst shouts of laughter, to 1,400,000 crowns; then to a million, then to 800,000, and at last to 200,000; which only, ‘after great reasonings and showings of precedents,’ the French commissioners consented to allow. These terms, or any terms, England was obliged to accept. Dr Wotton was gone on his errand of defiance to Charles. The liberty demanded for Mary Tudor had not only been refused, and her chaplains imprisoned, but she had been informed that, if she continued obstinate, she might not herself be exempt from punishment.<sup>3</sup> Lord Warwick and his friends had cast in their fortune with extreme

---

<sup>1</sup> Northampton to the Council. *Tytler*. vol. 1 p. 385 &c

measures, and were in no condition to drive a bargain hard.

The Emperor, however, on his side, was unable immediately to fulfil his threat of declaring war, he was compelled to content himself with repeating it. Dr Wotton's report of his interview has been injured, and is in parts illegible.<sup>1</sup> Where the letter begins to be intelligible the conversation was turning upon the Protestant refugees in England.

'Here,' says Wotton, 'the Emperor, by signs and nod, willed those of his chamber to go from thence and leave him alone with me.' He then said that he had a great love for the King, and had every good will to his country, 'but the English were all now' he said, 'so far out of the way, that he did not know what to do about them, 'they did infect his own realm' Wotton begged him to think better of the English, they were a people who feared God, and desired only to know how God delighted most to be served. 'You have well traversed,' Charles answered scornfully; 'you say you have chosen a good way, the world takes it for a naughty way, and ought it not to suffice you that ye spill your own souls, but ye have a mind to force others to lose theirs too. My cousin the Princess is evil

---

<sup>1</sup> The surviving portions of this despatch contain so much which is characteristic of Charles, that the loss of the rest is especially to be regretted. The more so indeed because the destruction of the MS is not due to legitimate decay, but to the use of ox-gall by some careless antiquary, who, to facilitate his own researches, wetted the ink with a material which impart a momentary clearness, at the expense of making the writing illegible afterwards for evermore.

handled among you, her servants plucked from her; and she still cried upon to leave mass, to forsake her religion in which her mother, her grandmother, and all our family have lived and died.'

'Sacred Majesty,' Wotton answered, 'at my coming out of England she was honourably entertained in her own house, and had such about her as she liked and I think she is so still. I do not hear to the contrary.'

'Yes, by St Mary,' said Charles, 'there is to the contrary, and therefore say you hardly to them, I will not suffer her to be evil handled by them—I will not suffer it. Is it not enough that my aunt, her mother, was evil entreated by the King that dead is, but my cousin must be worse ordered by councillors now. I had rather she died a thousand deaths than that she should forsake her faith. The King is too young to skill of such matters'

When Wotton urged that Mary was a subject, and must submit to the law, Charles gave the usual answer that a law made in a minority was no law at all. The Church had been ruined, the bishoprics plundered, the religion of Christ set aside or altered by the violent will of a few men who had no authority to meddle with such things. Wotton said the changes had been discussed in Parliament: the Emperor replied that Parliament was no place for the discussion of any such questions.

Seeing his humour, Wotton passed unwillingly to the second part of his instructions, and required the license for Sir Thomas Chamberlain to use the communion service at Brussels. The Emperor said distinctly



and at once, that he would have no service used in his dominions which was not allowed by the Church; and if his own ambassador was refused the mass, he should be recalled; 'the cases were not like, the English service was new and naught,' 'the mass was old and approved.'

'Again,' wrote Wotton, 'he went to the Lady Mary, willing me to require your Lordships that she might have her masses still, if not, he would provide for her remedy: and if his ambassador was restrained, he had already given him orders that if the restraint came to-day, he should to-morrow depart, and ours as well.' 'He fell to earnest talk,' he spoke again of the danger of introducing changes in Edward's infancy, 'who, when he came to his years, would take sharp account of it, and make them know what it was to bring up a king in heresy.' Wotton answered that, 'the Lords of the Council did well understand with what fear and danger they made the alteration, and the greater the peril, the more were they to be praised that would rather venture land, life, and all than not do that that God required at their hands'<sup>1</sup>

The interview ended stormily. Whether war would follow, the ambassador said he could not tell. He was certain only that the Emperor meant him to believe that there would be war; and he recommended the council not to press matters to extremity about the Princess for a month or two; 'in that space it should

---

<sup>1</sup> Wotton to the Council *MS Germania*, p. 6, m. 15, State Paper Office

appear whether the Emperor should need English amity, or whether England should have cause to be afraid of his displeasure' The council took his advice, and mean time the French alliance was consolidated. The European difficulties of the Emperor thickened. The country, after drifting close upon a reef, escaped shipwreck, more by a change of wind than the skill of its pilots. The dominant factions were again at leisure to follow their career of misgovernment.

In contemplating the false steps of statesmen, it is difficult at all times to measure their personal responsibility, to determine how much of their errors has been due to party spirit, how much to pardonable mistake; how much again seems to have been faulty, because we see but effects, which we ascribe absolutely to the conduct of particular men, when such effects were the result, in fact, of influences spreading throughout the whole circle of society. The politicians who governed England in the minority of Edward VI, however, succeeded, at any rate, in making themselves individually execrated, and in bringing discredit upon the cause of which they were the professed defenders. All over the country discontent, social, political, and religious, was steadily on the increase. In the *Privy Council Records* are to be found entries perpetually recurring of persons conspiring here, or conspiring there, and being put to death occasionally on the spot by martial law<sup>1</sup> The prisons were full to overflowing

---

<sup>1</sup> 'August 31 The Duke of Somerset, taking certain that began a new conspiracy for the destruction of the gentlemen at Okeingham, two

with Catholic recusants, who would not relinquish the mass, or with persons guilty of 'lewd talk,' or 'seditious words;' this or that prisoner, as his place was required for another, being taken out to have his ears slit, or to be set upon the pillory.<sup>1</sup> The greatest of the offences of the Government, the issue of base money, was drawing to an end, but it was ending as hurricanes end, the worst gust being the last.

In the teeth of statutes, in defiance of proclamations, prices rose to the level of the metallic value of the current coin, and, at last, rose beyond it. The exchanges ceased to be intelligible. In the absence of accessible tests, and with coin circulating of all degrees of purity and impurity, the common processes of buying and selling could no longer be carried on, and the council were compelled at last to yield before the general outcry.

From the enormous quantity of base silver which was now in circulation, the honest redemption of it appeared, and at the time, perhaps, really was, impossible. It remained, therefore, to throw the burden upon the country, to accept the advice of the city merchants, and call it down to its actual value. By this desperate remedy every holder of a silver coin lost upon it the difference between its cost when it passed into his hands, and its worth as a commodity in the market. Taking an average of the whole coin in

---

days past executed them with death for their offence'—EDWARD'S *Journals*. | the months of April, May, and June, 1551, when a crisis was so near—*Privy Council Records, MS*

<sup>1</sup> Especially, it would seem, in

circulation, the proportion of alloy was fifty per cent, and in the end, the silver currency would have to descend to half its nominal value. But the entire descent, though inevitable, was not to be accomplished at once. To relieve the shock (so the Government pretended), the first fall was made a partial one. A resolution was taken in council on the 30th of April that the shilling in future should pass for ninepence, and the groat for threepence. But anxiety for the convenience

May. of the public was not the only cause of the delay in the completion of the operation. The treasury was as usual exhausted. The economy which had been attempted in the household had been more than defeated by the cost of the gendarmerie, as the force was called, which the council had been obliged to raise for their protection. The wages, food, and clothing of nine hundred men were added to the ordinary expenditure, and the revenue, which had been unequal to the usual demands upon it, was now hopelessly deficient. 'Purveying,' by which the Court was accustomed to supply its necessities, by taking what it required from the farmers at statute prices, had been forbidden by Act of Parliament.<sup>1</sup> The prohibition had not been observed, for the Court, it was said, must live, and the King had no money. The royal purveyors continued to take at their pleasure, paying exactly half the market prices for everything.<sup>2</sup> But rapacity of this kind could supply

<sup>1</sup> 2 and 3 Edward VI.

<sup>2</sup> 'To show what hurt cometh by provisions to the poor man it shall not need, experience doth make it too plain. But, for example, the purveyors alloweth for a

but very poorly the hungry deficiency which was perpetually growing. In April a fresh issue of base money had been contemplated,<sup>1</sup> but was for the moment postponed. The Fuggers were the resource instead; and being increasingly bad debtors, the Government were made to pay for fresh accommodation by buying a hundred thousand crowns' worth of rubies and diamonds.<sup>2</sup> It was with no good humour, therefore, that they found themselves compelled to keep their hands for the future from the mint, and they determined to dip once more, and to dip deeply into the closing fountain. The fall of the coin, as I have said, was resolved upon on the 6th of May. The intention was made known to the public, and it was to take effect in the following July. The second fall could be at no great distance; it is impossible, therefore, that the council could have been any longer under a delusion on the nature of the course which they had pursued. With the consequence of it immediately before their eyes, they issued, on the 30th of May, 80,000*l.* worth of silver, in a coin of which two-

lamb worth two shillings but twelve pence, for a capon worth twelve pence, sixpence, and so after that rate so that, after that rate, there is not the poorest man that hath anything to sell but he loseth half in the price, besides tarrying for his money, which sometimes he hath, after long suit to the officers, and great costs, suing for it, and many times he never hath it'—Causes of the dearth in England TYTLER, vol 1 p. 369

<sup>1</sup> For the amendment of the currency, so Edward was led to believe 'It was appointed,' he writes, 'to make 20,000 pound weight for necessity somewhat baser, to get gain sixteen thousand clear, by which the debt of the realm might be paid, the country defended from any sudden attempt, and the coin amended.' — EDWARD'S *Journal*, April 10

<sup>2</sup> Ibid. April 25.

June thirds was alloy; on the 18th of June they issued a further 40,000*l*. worth in a coin of which three-quarters was alloy. Possibly, or rather probably, it was put out subject to the partial depreciation of the first fall; but every creditor of the Court, artisan, or labourer, servant, tradesman, farmer, or soldier was forced to receive that money at a fictitious value, although the council knew that a further depreciation was immediately and necessarily imminent.<sup>1</sup>

This was the last grasp at the departing prey, and perhaps it transpired to the world . for so profound and so wide was the public distrust, that when the first fall took effect on the 9th of July, prices everywhere rather rose than declined, even allowing for the difference of denomination. In vain the

---

<sup>1</sup> The numerous entries in EDWARD'S *Journal* on this dry subject are curious. The King appears to have been keeping his eyes upon the council, and seeking information on the subject without their knowledge. William Thomas, Clerk of the Council, whose name has been more than once mentioned, was one of his secret advisers; and, I sometimes think, may have assisted him in the composition of his *Journal*. 'Upon Friday last,' Thomas writes, in an undated letter to the King, 'Mr Throgmorton declared your Majesty's pleasure unto me, and delivered me withal the notes of certain discourses, which, according to your Highness's commandment, I shall most gladly apply, to send you one every week, if it be possible for me in so little time to compass it—as indeed it were more than easy, if the daily service of mine office required not the great travail and diligence that it doth. And because he told me your Majesty would first hear mine opinion touching the reformation of the coin, albeit that I think myself both unmeet and unable to give any judgment in so great and weighty a matter without the advice of others, yet, since it is your Highness's pleasure to have it secret, which I do much commend, I therefore am the bolder to enterprise the declaration of my fantasy, trusting that, upon this ground, better devices and better effects may ensue than my head alone can contrive'—

council admonished the Lord Mayor, and required the Lord Mayor to admonish the wardens of the trading companies.<sup>1</sup> Confidence was steadily refused to the currency as long as the worth of the coined shilling was artificially greater than the worth of the bullion of which it was made. The falling process having once begun, had to be completed with as little delay as possible, and on the 17th of August the shilling was ordered by proclamation to pass for no more than sixpence, the groat for no more than two-pence,<sup>2</sup> and all other silver coins in proportion. To

Thomas to Edward VI. *Cotton MSS Vespasian*, D 18 Printed in STRYPE's *Memorials*, vol iv p. 389

<sup>1</sup> *Privy Council Records, MS.*

<sup>2</sup> The second proclamation was drawn on the 1st of August, but was not put out till the 17th. The following is the text of it. In such a matter the Government must be heard for themselves —

‘Whereas the King’s Majesty, minding to reduce the coin of this his Highness’s realm to a more fineness, hath of late, for sundry weighty considerations, partly mentioned in our proclamation of the last of April last past [It was drawn on the last of April, and issued on the 6th of May], ordained and established that the piece of silver called the teston, or shilling, should be current for nine pence, and no more, and the piece of silvered coin called the groat should likewise be current for three pence, and no

more, minding, both at the time of the said proclamation and sithens also, to have reduced the coin of this realm to a fineness by such degrees as should have been less burdensome to his Majesty, and most for the ease of his Highness’s loving subjects forasmuch as sithens which time his Majesty is sundry ways informed that the excessive prices of all victuals and all other things, which of reason should have grown less as the coin is amended, is rather, by the malice and insatiable greediness of sundry men, especially such as make their gain by buying and selling, increased and waxen more excessive, to the great hindrance of the commonwealth and intolerable burden of his Majesty’s loving subjects, especially of those of the poorer sort for the remedy whereof, nothing is thought more available than the speedy reduction of the said coin more nigher his just fineness. His Majesty, therefore, by the advice of

pacify the people, to prevent curious inquiries, and also perhaps to soften the blow to the holders of the money, the Government declared their intention of enforcing the Farm Statutes, and of prohibiting the exportation of coin. A scale of prices was again issued for articles of food, with a hope that it would now be maintained; and if the cost of living was 'not to be so good cheap as when the coin was at its perfectest,' it should be 'within a fifth part of it.'<sup>1</sup>

It was now possible to restore a pure silver currency—possible and also necessary; for although the depreciation was calculated fairly on the average value of the coin, the good and the bad were affected equally by the proclamation; and unless the whole existing circulation was called in and recoinied, to call it down was merely

the Lords and others of his Highness's privy council, more esteeming the honour and estimation of the realm, and the wealth and commodity of his Highness's most loving subjects, than the great profit which, by the baseness of the coin, did and should continually have grown to his Majesty, hath, and by the advice aforesaid doth, ordain that, from the 17th day of this present month of August, the piece of coin called the teston, or shilling, shall be current within the realm of England and the town and Marches of Calais only, for six pence sterling, and not above, and the groat for two pence sterling, and not above, the piece of two pence for a penny, the piece of a

penny for a halfpenny, and the piece of a halfpenny for a farthing, and therefore straightly chargeth and commandeth every person of what estate, degree, or condition he or they may be, to pay and receive, after the said day of the present month, the said coins for no higher nor no lower value or price within this realm, upon pain of forfeiture to his Majesty of all such money as shall be paid or received at other values than by this proclamation is put forth, and also upon pain of fine and imprisonment during his Majesty's pleasure.—*MS Domestic*, Edward VI. vol. xiii. State Paper Office.

<sup>1</sup> EDWARD'S *Journal*.



to offer a premium on the debasement of all the pure shillings and groats which remained in the realm. The council saw half the truth, but unhappily only half. They undertook to set the presses at work coining silver at a pure standard; an honest shilling was to be given at the mints for every two testons, and the alloy, it was thought, would pay the cost of the stamping<sup>1</sup>. But from ignorance, carelessness, or some less worthy motive, men were left to their own discretion either to bring in their money or leave it circulating at its new rate; and those who held the old coin found more advantage in exporting it as bullion, or in melting it down to the level of the lowest recent issues, in which a third or a fourth part only was pure silver. Thus the people lost their money, and prices, nevertheless, would not subside. The council abstained from further speculation. That was the extent of the amendment.

To increase the misery of the summer, there reappeared, in July, the strange and peculiar plague of the English nation. The sweating sickness, July the most mortal of all forms of pestilence which have ever appeared in this country, selected its victims exclusively from among the natives of Great Britain. If it broke out in a foreign town, it picked out the English residents with undeviating accuracy. The sufferers were in general men between thirty and forty, and the stoutest and the healthiest most readily caught the infection. The symptoms were a sudden perspiration,

---

<sup>1</sup> EDWARD'S *Journal*.

accompanied with faintness and drowsiness. Those who were taken with full stomachs died immediately. Those who caught cold shivered into dissolution in a few hours. Those who yielded to the intense temptation to sleep, though but for a quarter of an hour, awoke only to die; and so rapid was the operation of the disorder that, of seven householders who one night supped together in the city of London, six before morning were corpses. 'The only remedy was to be kept close with moderate air, and to drink posset ale or such like for thirty hours, and then the danger was passed.'<sup>1</sup> 'It was a terrible time,' says Stow. 'Men lost their friends by the sweat, and their money by the proclamation.' In London alone eight hundred men died in one week in July.

Visitations of pestilence in Christian countries have ever operated as a call to repentance. The effect upon the English was heightened by the singularity which confined the attack to themselves. The council, in an address of profound solemnity, invited the nation to acknowledge humbly the merited chastisements of Heaven: it was not the first time, as it will not be the last, that men have been keen-eyed to detect in others their own faults, and to call upon the world to repent of them.

July 18      The bishops were charged to invite all men to be more diligent in prayer, and less anxious for their personal interests; especially to refrain their greedy appetites from that insatiable serpent of covetous-

ness, wherewith most men were so infected that it seemed the one would devour another, without charity, or any godly respect 'to the poor, to their neighbours, or to the commonweal:' this it was, the council said, 'for which God had not only now poured out this plague on them, but had also prepared another plague that after this life should plague them everlastingly:' the bishops must 'use persuasions that might engender a terror to redeem men from their corrupt and naughty lives; but the clergy were chiefly to blame; 'the members of a dull head could not do well;' 'the flocks wandered because the ministers were dull and feeble.'<sup>1</sup>

The people, says Holinshed, for a time were affected and agitated 'They began to repent, to give alms, and to remember God; but as the disease ceased, so devotion in a short time decayed.' The council perhaps confined their own penitence to the exhortation of others, seeing that at the time when the disease was at its worst, they were engaged upon their last great fraud with the currency. Lulled by the panegyrics of the Protestants, who saw in them all that was most excellent, most noble, most devout, the Lords, or rather the triumvirate of Warwick, Northampton, and Sir William Herbert, who now governed England, were contented to earn their praises by fine words, by persecuting and

<sup>1</sup> TYTLER, vol 1 p 404. Lord Warwick affected to Cecil a keen regret for the shortcomings of the clergy, which he attributed to their marriages 'These men,' he said, 'that the King's Majesty hath of late preferred, be so sotted of their wives and children, that they forget both their poor neighbours and all other things which to their calling appertaineth.'—Ibid vol 11

depriving bishops inclined to be conservative, and by confiscating and appropriating the estates of the vacated sees.

When Ponet was installed as the successor of Gardiner, the estates of the bishopric of Winchester were transferred to the Crown in exchange for a few impropriated rectories. The woods on the lands of the See of London were cut down and sold.<sup>1</sup> Heath, Bishop of Worcester, was deposed, and his place was taken by Hooper, the See of Gloucester, which Henry had founded, being suppressed, and the estates surrendered.<sup>2</sup> Westminster, another of Henry's Sees, had been suppressed before; while a further project was on foot to depose Tunstal from the bishopric of Durham. The diocese was to be divided, part to be given to the Dean of Durham, to be endowed out of the estates of the chapter, and part to Newcastle, with a trifling salary; while the princely domains of the bishopric itself were to be shared between Warwick and his friends.

But the Protestants looked on with admiration and applause. The Papists were put out of the way. The doctrinalists were promoted to honour. Miles Coverdale went to Exeter, in the place of Voysey, Scory went to Rochester, Taylor to Lincoln. When men like these were raised to dignity, what more could be desired?

<sup>1</sup> STRYPE, TYTLER

<sup>2</sup> RYMER, vol vi part 3, p 216.  
The intention was to suppress both  
Worcester and Gloucester and to

found a new see out of the combination.—See Strype's *Memorials*, vol. 1v p. 45

'What a swarm of false Christians have we among us,' said the large-minded Becon, 'gross gospellers, which can prattle of the gospel very finely, talk much of justification by faith, crack very stoutly for the free remission of their sins by Christ's blood. As for their almsdeeds, their praying, their watching, their fasting, they are utterly banished from these gospellers. They are puffed up with pride, they swell with envy, they wallow in pleasures, they burn with concupiscence. Their covetous acts are insatiable, the increasing their substance, the scraping together of worldly possessions. Their religion consisteth in words and disputations, in Christian acts and godly deeds nothing at all.'<sup>1</sup>

Of this class of men the highest living representative was the Earl of Warwick, the ruling spirit of the English Reformation in the phase into which it now had drifted.

To return to the Princess Mary.

There being no longer, as it seemed occasion to fear the resentment of the Emperor, the council, on the 9th of August, resolved to execute their <sup>August 9</sup> resolution, and put an end to her resistance with a high hand. 'They considered how long and patiently the King had laboured in vain to bring her to conformity.' They 'considered how much her obstinacy and the toleration of it endangered the peace of the realm.' Her chaplains, therefore, should be compelled for the future to perform in her chapel the English service

established by law, and none other; while Edward undertook to write to his sister with his own hand. The Flemish ambassador was informed at the same time, that the terms of his own residence in England must be identical with those granted to Sir Thomas Chamberlain. He should use the mass on condition only that Chamberlain might use the communion.<sup>1</sup> The Duke of Somerset only defended Mary's interests. His name was attached with the rest to the resolutions of the council,<sup>2</sup> but as to him the Princess had been indebted for her first license 'to keep her sacrificing knaves about her,'<sup>3</sup> so he endeavoured to prevent the withdrawal of it; and partly, perhaps, from good feeling, partly from opposition to Warwick, he had begun to advocate a general toleration.<sup>4</sup> Somerset, in fact, was growing weary of Protestantism, seeing what Protestantism had become. He preferred the company of his architects and masons to attendance at chapel and sermons;<sup>5</sup> and Burgoyne, writing to Calvin, said that he had become so lukewarm in the service of Christ, as scarcely to have anything less at heart than religion.<sup>6</sup>

No cause, however, at that time, could be benefited

<sup>1</sup> *Council Records, MS.*

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> John ab Ulmis to Bullinger.  
*Zurich Letters*

<sup>4</sup> Charges against the Duke of Somerset. *Infra*

<sup>5</sup> Master Bradford spared not the proudest, and among many others, will't them to tak example be the

so cald in hering God's word, that the year before his last apprehension hee wald gae visit his masonis, and wald not dingye himself to gae from his gallerie to his hall for hearing of a seimon — *Letter of John Knox to the Faithful in London*

<sup>6</sup> Burgoyne to Calvin. *Zurich Letters.*

by the advocacy of Somerset; and Warwick was supported by the powerful phalanx of able and dangerous men whose interest committed them to the Reformation—those who had shared, or hoped to share, in the spoils of the Church or the State—those who had divided among them the forfeited estates of the Percies, the Howards, the Courtenays, and the Poles, and would support any men or any measures which would prevent reaction.

The Princess was at Copt Hall, in Essex. On the 14th of August three of the officers of her household, Sir Robert Rochester, Sir Francis Englefield, and Sir Robert Waldegrave, were sent for by the council: the King's letter was put in their hands, with a charge to deliver it to their mistress. They were instructed to inform the chaplains that the mass must cease, and to take care, for their own part, that the order was obeyed. At the end of a week they returned to say that the Lady Mary was 'marvellously offended.' She had forbidden them to speak to her chaplains, if they persisted, she said she would discharge them from her service, and she herself would immediately leave the country. She was subject to a heart complaint, and her passion was so violent, that they were afraid to press her further for fear of the possible consequences. They had approached the subject only once afterwards, 'when they not only did not find her more conformable, but in further choler than she was before.' They could, therefore, go no further. She had written to her brother, and they had brought the letter with them.

A message, Mary said in this letter, had been brought to her by her servants on a matter which concerned the salvation of her soul; her servants were no fit messengers for the lords to have chosen. The meanest subjects in the realm would ill bear to receive such treatment through their own attendants. For the letter which Edward had written to her, it was signed indeed with his hand, but it was not his own composition, and he was too young to be a fit judge in such questions. Her father had brought her up in the Catholic faith, and she would not believe one thing and say another, nor would she submit to rule her mind by the opinions of the privy council. She entreated, therefore, that her want of conformity might be tolerated till the King was old enough to act for himself, and if this could not be, 'rather than offend God and my conscience,' she said, 'I offer my body at your will, and death shall be more welcome than life.'<sup>1</sup>

The appeal was naturally ineffectual. The council would not have ventured so far, had they not been determined to go farther; and with a reprimand for the neglect of their orders, Rochester and his companions were commanded to go back and execute them. They refused. They were commanded again on their allegiance to go, and again refused, and were committed to the Fleet for contumacy. 'Pinnaces' were sent to cruise between Harwich and the mouth of the Thames to prevent an attempt at flight on the part of the Princess, and

---

<sup>1</sup> *Privy Council Records, MS* 'The Lady Mary to King Edward



Rich, the Lord Chancellor, Sir William Petre, and Sir Anthony Wingfield took the ungracious office on themselves. Her servants, they were directed to inform Mary, had not returned to her, and would not return. They had disobeyed the King's orders, and if a privy councillor had so far misconducted himself, he would have been equally punished. Competent officers would be furnished for her household in their places. For the rest, his Majesty was grieved that her conscience was so settled in error, as he would himself express to her.<sup>1</sup> She offered her body to be at the King's service, but no harm was meant to her body—the King desired only that she might have *mentem sanam in corpore sano*. If she had a conscience, so had the King a conscience, and the King must avoid giving offence to God by tolerating error.

The adventures of the new messengers, character-

<sup>1</sup> Right dear and entirely beloved Sister, we greet you well, and let you know that it grieveth us much to perceive no amendment in you of that which we, for God's cause, your soul's health our conscience, and the common tranquillity of the realm, have so long desired, assuring you that our sufferance hath much more demonstration of natural love than contumacious of our conscience and foresight of our safety. Wherefore, although you give us occasion, as much almost as in you is, to diminish our natural love, yet we be loath to feel it decay, and mean not to be so careless of you as we be provoked. And therefore meaning your weal, and therewith joining a care not so be found guilty in our conscience to God, having cause to require forgiveness that we have so long, for respect of love towards you, omitted our bounden duty, we send at the present the Lord Rich, the Lord Chancellor of England, and our right trusty and right well-beloved Councillors, Sir Anthony Wingfield and Sir William Petre, in message to you touching the order of your house, willing you to give them firm credit in those things they shall say to you from us. Given under our signet. Windsor, August 24 — Letter of King Edward to the Lady Mary: FOXE, vol vi

istic of Mary and of the times, shall be related in their own words.

August 28      ‘Having received commandment and instructions from the King’s Majesty,<sup>1</sup> we repaired to the Lady Mary’s house at Copt Hall, on the 28th instant in the morning, where, shortly after our coming, I, the Lord Chancellor, delivered his Majesty’s letter to her, which she received upon her knees, saying that, for the honour of the King’s Majesty’s hand wherewith the said letter was signed, she would kiss the letters, and not for the matter contained in them; for the matter, said she, I take to proceed not from his Majesty, but from you his council.

‘In the reading of the letter, which she did read secretly to herself, she said these words in our hearing—Ah! good Mr Cecil took much pains here. When she had read the letter, we began to open the matter of our instructions unto her; and as I, the Lord Chancellor, began, she prayed me to be short, for, said she, I am not well at ease, and I will make you a short answer.

‘After this, we told her at good length how the King’s Majesty having used all the gentle means and exhortations that he might, to have reduced her to the rites of religion and order of divine service<sup>c</sup> set forth by the laws of the realm, and finding her nothing conformable, but still remaining in her former errors, had

---

<sup>1</sup> Report of the Commissioners to the Lady Mary, August 29. *MS.* } State Paper Office, printed by ELLIS,  
Domestic, Edward VI. vol. xiii. } 1st series, vol. ii p. 179.

resolved, by the whole estate of his Majesty's privy council, and with the consent of divers others of the nobility, that she should no longer use the private mass, nor any other divine service than is set forth by the laws of the realm; and here we offered to show her the names of all those which were present at this consultation and resolution. But she said she cared not for any rehearsal of the names, for, said she, I know you to be all of one sort therein.

'We told her further that the King's Majesty's pleasure was we should also give strait charge to her chaplains that none of them should presume to say any mass, and the like charge to all her servants that none of them should presume to hear any mass

'Hereunto her answer was thus—

'To the King's Majesty she was, is, and <sup>August 29</sup> ever will be his Majesty's most humble and most obedient subject and poor sister, and would most willingly obey all his commandments in anything—her conscience saved—yea, and would willingly and gladly suffer death to do his Majesty good. But rather than she will agree to use any other service than was used at the death of the late King her father, she would lay her head on a block and suffer death. But, said she, I am unworthy to suffer death in so good a quarrel. When the King's Majesty, said she, shall come to such years that he may be able to judge these things himself, his Majesty shall find me ready to obey his orders in religion; but now in these years, although he, good, sweet King, have more knowledge than any

other of his years, yet it is not possible that he can be a judge of these things. If ships were to be sent to the sea, or any other thing to be done touching the policy and government of the realm, I am sure you would not think his Highness yet able to consider what were to be done. And much less, said she, can he in these years discern what is fit in matters of divinity. If my chaplains do say no mass, I can hear none; no more can my poor servants. But as for my servants, I know it shall be against their will, as it should be against mine; for if they could come where it were said, they should hear it with good will, and as for my priests, they know what they have to do. The pain of your law is but imprisonment for a short time, and if they will refuse to say mass for fear of that imprisonment, they may do therein as they will, but none of your new service, said she, shall be used in my house, and if any be said in it, I will not tarry in the house.

‘After this, we declared to her Grace, for what causes the Lords of the Council had appointed Rochester, Englefield, and Waldegrave, being her servants, to open the premises unto her, and how ill and untruly they had used themselves in the charge committed unto them; and beside that, how they had manifestly disobeyed the King’s Majesty’s council. She said it was not the wisest counsel to appoint her servants to control her in her own house; and that her servants knew her mind therein well enough, for, of all men, she might worse endure any of them to move her in

she, my Lords may use them as they think good and if they refused to do the message unto her and her chaplains, they be, said she, the honestest men, for they should have spoken against their own conscience

‘After this, when we had at good length declared unto her our instructions, touching the promises which she claimed to have been made to the Emperor, and, besides, had opened unto her at good length all such things as we knew and had heard therein, her answer was, that she was well assured the promise was made to the Emperor; and that the same was once granted before the King’s Majesty in her presence, there being there seven of the council, notwithstanding the denial thereof at her last being with his Majesty. And I have, quoth she, the Emperor’s hand testifying that this promise was made, which I believe better than you all of the council; and though you esteem little the Emperor, yet should you show more favour to me for my father’s sake, who made the more part of you all almost of nothing. But, as for the Emperor, said she, if he were dead, I would say as I do; and if he would give me now other advice, I would not follow it. Notwithstanding, quoth she, to be plain with you, his ambassador shall know how I am used at your hands

‘After this, we opened the King’s Majesty’s pleasure, for one to attend upon her Grace for the supply of Rochester’s place during his absence.

‘To this her answer was, that she would appoint her own officers, and that she had years sufficient for that purpose; and if we left any men there, she would

go out of her gates, for they two would not dwell in one house. And, quoth she, I am sickly, and yet I will not die willingly, but will do the best I can to preserve my life. But if I shall chance to die, I will protest openly that you of the council be the causes of my death; you give me fair words, but your deeds be always ill to me.

‘Having said this, she departed from us into her bed-chamber, and delivered to me, the Lord Chancellor, a ring upon her knees, with very humble recommendations to her brother, saying, that she would die his true subject and sister, and obey his commandment in all things, except in these matters of religion. But yet, said she, this shall never be told to the King’s Majesty. After her departure, we called the chaplains and the rest of the household before us, and the chaplains, after some talk, promised all to obey the King’s Majesty’s commandment. We further commanded them, and every one of them, to give notice to some one of the council, at the least, if any mass, or other service than that set forth by the law, should hereafter be said in that house.

‘Finally, when we had said and done as is aforesaid, and were gone out of the house, tarrying there for one of her chaplains, who was not with the rest when we gave the charge aforesaid unto them, the Lady Mary’s Grace sent to us to speak with her one word at a window. When we were come into the court, notwithstanding that we offered to come up to her chamber, she would needs speak out of the window,

and prayed us to speak to the Lords of the Council that her controller might shortly return; for, said she, since his departing, I take the accounts myself of my expenses, and learned how many loaves of bread be made of a bushel of wheat; and I wis my father and my mother never brought me up with baking and brewing; and, to be plain with you, I am weary of my office, and, therefore, if my Lords will send mine officer home, they shall do me pleasure; otherwise, if they send him to prison, I beshrew him if he go not to it merrily and with a good will. And I pray God to send you well to do in your souls and bodies too, for some of you have but weak bodies.'

As the moment draws near when Mary will step forward to the front of the historical stage, it is time to give some distinct account of her. She was born in February 1515-16, and was therefore, in her thirty-sixth year. Her face was broad, but drawn and sallow; the forehead large, though projecting too much at the top, and indicating rather passion and determination than intellectual strength. Her eyes were dauntless, bright, steady, and apparently piercing; but she was short-sighted, and insight either into character or thing was not among her capabilities. She was short and ill-figured; above the waist, she was spare, from continued ill-health; below, it is enough to say that she had inherited her father's dropsical tendencies, which were beginning to show themselves. Her voice was deep like a man's, she had a man's appetite, especially for meat; and in times of danger, a man's promptness of action.

But she was not without a lady's accomplishments. She embroidered well, played on the lute well, she could speak English, Latin, French, and Spanish, and she could read Italian; as we have seen, she could be her own housekeeper; and if she had masculine energy, she had with it a woman's power of braving and enduring suffering.

By instinct, by temperament, by hereditary affection, she was an earnest Catholic; and whatever Mary believed she believed thoroughly, without mental reservation, without allowing her personal interests either to tint her convictions or to tempt her to disguise them. As long as Queen Catherine lived, she had braved Henry's anger, and clung to her and to her cause. On her mother's death she had agreed to the separation from the Papacy as a question of policy touching no point of faith or conscience. She had accepted the alterations introduced by her father; and, had nothing else intervened, she might have maintained as a sovereign what she had honestly admitted as a subject. Her own persecution only, and the violent changes enforced by the doctrinal Reformers, taught her to believe that, apart from Rome, there was no security for orthodoxy.

In her interview with the messengers, she had shown herself determined, downright, and unaffected, cutting through official insincerities, and fearless of consequences, standing out for the right as she understood it. The moral relations of good and evil were inverted; and between Mary, the defender of a dying superstition, and the Lords of the Council, the patrons of liberty and



right, the difference so far was as between the honest watch-dog and a crew of prowling wolves

The dominant faction had dragged on for two years, through mean tyranny and paltry peculation. The time had come when, no longer able to continue their ill ways unmolested, they were to venture into open crime.

The Duke of Somerset had neglected the debts of the realm till they were past retrieval. He had rushed into expensive and unsuccessful wars, crippled the revenue, and continued the debasement of the currency. He had brought the country into discredit abroad, and by forcing forward changes in religion for which the people were unprepared, he had thrown half England into insurrection. He had justly been deprived of the power which he had usurped and abused. <sup>September</sup>

Yet, for the most part, he had failed in attempts which in themselves were noble; and the Duke of Somerset might flatter himself that his own government showed brightly by the side of the scarcely less rash and more utterly ungenerous administration which had followed on his fall. Could he have recovered the Protectorate, it is not likely he would have profited by his past experience, a large vanity and a languid intellect incapacitated him for sovereign power; yet, in the face of the existing state of things, he need only be moderately blamed if he endeavoured to regain his power from the hands by which it had been wrested from him. In the past year he had provoked the jealousy and the suspicion of Warwick, by interfering in favour of Gardiner, he had

been exposed, as in the instance of his mother's funeral, to petty insults and mortifications; and early in the spring of 1551 he had begun to meditate the possibility of revenging himself. Whalley, the fraudulent receiver of Yorkshire, one of the least reputable of his friends, had felt the pulses of the peers with a view to his restoration;<sup>1</sup> he became privy to Catholic conspiracies without revealing them; and, after his arrest, the missing link in the evidence, the want of which had saved the Bishop of Durham from imprisonment a few months previously, was found in his desk. The council in their treatment of his friends provided him with unscrupulous partisans. Sir Ralph Vane, a distinguished soldier, had a right of pasturage by letters patent over lands which the Earl of Warwick claimed or coveted. Warwick sent his servants to drive Vane's cattle from the meadows; Vane defended his rights in arms, and was arrested and sent to the Tower,<sup>2</sup> as much, perhaps, because he was a follower of the Duke, as for any offence of his own.

The confinement was soon over; but the injury remained, and Vane became ready at any moment to rise in arms. Suspected before his intentions had assumed a definite form, Somerset, on the 23rd of April, had been on the point of flying, in a supposed fear of his life, with Lord Grey, to the northern counties, to call out the people and place himself at their head. He had

<sup>1</sup> On the 16th of February Parliament, and stood to the denial, Whalley was examined before the council 'for persuading divers nobles of the realm to make the Duke of Somerset Protector at the next the Earl of Rutland affirming it manifestly'—*EDWARD'S Journal*  
<sup>2</sup> *Privy Council Records, MS.* March 27, 1551.

been prevented only by Sir William Herbert, who assured him that he was in no danger,<sup>1</sup> and he had remained to oppose Warwick in the treatment of Mary. Unable to effect anything by legitimate opposition, he had listened to suggestions for a general toleration in religion,<sup>2</sup> he had consulted with Lord Arundel on calling a Parliament, and appealing to the country against Warwick by proclamation;<sup>3</sup> and as the design of doing something assumed form, the Duchess of Somerset brought into it her brother Sir Michael Stanhope, and her half-brother Sir Thomas Arundel. Lord Strange was set to work upon the King to induce him to break his engagements with France, and marry Lady Jane Seymour instead. A scheme was formed to arrest and imprison Warwick, Northampton, and Herbert, into which the Earl of Arundel entered eagerly and warmly, and in which Lord Paget was, at least, a silent accomplice. Sir John Yorke, the Master of the Mint, was to be

<sup>1</sup> The principal authorities for the story of Somerset's real or supposed conspiracy are the depositions and examinations in the 13th volume of the *Domestic MSS* of the reign of Edward VI. State Paper Office, and the entries in *EDWARD'S Journal*.

<sup>2</sup> 'Whether did Sir Miles Partridge or any other give you advice to promise the people their mass, holy water, with such other, rather than to remain so unquieted?'—Questions addressed to the Duke of Somerset. TYTLER, vol. II p. 48

<sup>3</sup> 'Did it proceed first from  
VOL. V

yourself or from the Earl of Arundel to have a Parliament? With how many have you conferred for the setting forth of the proclamation to persuade the people to mislike the Government, and specially the doings of the Duke of Northumberland, the Earl of Pembroke, and the Marquis of Northampton, doing them to understand that they went about to destroy the commonwealth, and also had caused the King to be displeased with the Lady Mary's Grace, the King's sister?'—TYTLER, vol. II p. 48

taken also, 'because he could tell many pretty things;' and as a violent arrest might perhaps be violently resisted, it was not impossible that lives might be taken in the scuffle. Somerset himself admitted that the deaths of Warwick and the other noblemen had been spoken of as a contingency which might occur an intention that they should be killed, if he ever formed such, he soon relinquished His plan, so long as it was entertained, was to treat the Lords as he had been treated himself, and to call Parliament immediately, 'lest peradventure of one evil might happen another' But his mind misgave him, and his purposes were vacillating First, there was a doubt whether Herbert should be included in the arrest, afterwards, according to one witness, the Duke changed his mind, 'and would meddle no further with the apprehension of any of the council, and said he was sorry he had gone so far with the Earl of Arundel'<sup>1</sup>

October So the matter stood in the beginning of October Among those who had been privy to the conspiracy was Sir Thomas Palmer, a soldier who had gained some credit by desperate service in the French wars, and had led the forlorn hope of cavalry who sacrificed themselves at Haddington to enable supplies to reach the blockaded garrison. a brave man, but, as it seemed, a most unscrupulous one, whose services in a dangerous enterprise might be as useful as his fidelity was uncertain

---

<sup>1</sup> Charges against the Duke of Somerset *MS Domestic*, Edward VI vol xiii State Paper Office, printed imperfectly by TYTLER.

Palmer, on the 7th of October, came to Lord Warwick's house, and 'in my Lord's garden,' writes Edward,<sup>1</sup> 'he declared how St George's day last past, my Lord of Somerset, who was then going to the north, if the Master of the Horse, Sir Wm Herbert, had not assured him of his honour he should have no hurt, went to raise the people, and the Lord Grey went before to know who were his friends. Afterwards a device was made to call the Earl of Warwick to a banquet with the Marquis of Northampton and divers others, and to cut off their heads. Also, he formed a base company about them by the way to set upon them. He declared also, that Sir Ralph Vane had two thousand men in readiness, Sir Thomas Arundel had assured my Lord that the Tower was safe, Mr Partridge should raise London, and take the Great Seal with the apprentices, Seymour<sup>2</sup> and Hammond should wait upon himself, and all the horses of the gensdarmes should be slain.'

Such was Palmer's story—truth and falsehood being mingled together; truth, because part of it was confirmed by other witnesses, and confessed by the Duke himself, falsehood, because Warwick (or Northumberland, as he was immediately to be) confessed before his own death that the Duke of Somerset had through his means been falsely accused, and Palmer, also, before his death, declared that the evidence to which he had sworn had been invented by Warwick, and had been

---

<sup>1</sup> EDWARD'S *Journal*, Oct 8

<sup>2</sup> David Seymour, some connection of Somerset's family.

maintained by himself at Warwick's request <sup>1</sup> Whether Palmer's treachery for the first time acquainted Warwick with Somerset's designs against him, or whether Warwick had watched their growth and sprang a counter-mine when the time was ripe, I am unable to determine.

<sup>1</sup> The Duke of Northumberland, before going to the scaffold, desired an interview with Somerset's sons — Au quels il crya mercy de l'injustice qu'il avoit faict à leur Père Protecteur de l'Angleterre, congnoissant avoir procuré sa mort à tort et faulsement Palmer avant sa mort a confessé que l'escripture et l'accusation qu'il advouche et maintint contie la feu Protecteur estoit fausse, fabriquée par le dict duc (de Northumberland) et advoué par luy à la requeste du dict duc Et y a d'estranges loix par de ça sur le faict d'accusation que ce peult faire par deux temoings, encores qu'ils deposent singulierement et diversement — Simon Renard to Charles V *MS Record Office* Transcribed from the archives at Brussels If Palmer and Northumberland really made these confessions, the question whether there was or was not foul play at the trial of the Duke of Somerset is set at rest, and by adopting Renard's story in the text, I show of course that I think it true, yet I have not adopted it without hesitation Although there was a general belief, in which Crammer and Ridley shared, that Somerset had been unfairly dealt with, it is strange that a foreign ambassador

should be the only authority for so important a feature in the evidence about it Palmer's story had nothing in it which in itself was incredible or even improbable, and unless Edward was imposed upon (which it is hard to suppose), as to the acknowledgments which were made by Somerset in open court at that time of his trial, those acknowledgments confirm in substance all that Palmer stated Renard's letter, too, was written when Northumberland had just failed in his attempt to alter the succession, and any charge against him, however monstrous, found ready hearing among the Queen's friends On the other hand, a distinct circumstantial statement of a competent witness is not to be lightly set aside, merely from circumstantial objections No English minister was better informed than Renard of everything which passed in London at the time of Mary's accession<sup>c</sup> He was writing from the spot, and he was not a person to report on hearsay the flying rumours of the hour.

I give the result of my own reflections upon the subject Readers who take an interest in the question will judge for themselves

"c"

Certain only it is that Somerset, and Somerset's party, were become dangerous to him. He felt, perhaps with reason, that, if once in their power, he would find as little mercy at their hands as he intended that they should receive at his own; and inasmuch as the truth, if only the truth was known, might not ensure a conviction, inasmuch as the mere attempt at the overthrow of a faction might seem, in the eyes of the Lords who must try Somerset, rather a virtue than a crime—some additional atrocity had to be invented—something on which the law spoke too plainly for evasion, and which might diminish a sympathy otherwise likely to be troublesome.

Palmer's revelations were kept profoundly secret, except, it may be, from Herbert and Northampton, and from Edward, who, duped by the plausible zeal of Warwick for the Protestant gospel, hearing only from the fanatic enthusiasts who surrounded him adulation of the Earl as a champion of the Lord, and suspicious of his uncle as a backslider and apostate, listened and believed with the simplicity of a boy.<sup>1</sup> Though nothing definite transpired, however, there were movements in the State which created in Somerset a vague feeling of uneasiness. A report reached him that Palmer had been closeted with Warwick in Parliament, which was to

---

<sup>1</sup> The frigid hardness with which Edward relates in his *Journal* and one of his letters the proceedings against Somerset has been commented on with some sharpness. His age—he was but fourteen—and the miserable influences around him might excuse a greater crime. He believed that Somerset was guilty, in the worst sense of the word, and with such a conviction the cold tone was natural and right.

have met on the 13th of October, was prorogued till January.<sup>1</sup> A muster of the gendarmerie was ordered for the 8th of November; and on the 11th of October there were significant and important changes in the peerage. Lord Dorset, Lady Jane Grey's father, was made Duke of Suffolk;<sup>2</sup> Warwick became Duke of Northumberland; Paulet, Earl of Wiltshire, Marquis of Winchester; and Sir William Herbert Earl of Pembroke.

The elevation of the men against whose power, if not life, the late Protector was conspiring, naturally alarmed him. He sent for Cecil (now Sir William Cecil, and Secretary of State), and inquired if he was in any danger. Cecil replied 'that, if he was not guilty, he might be of good courage, if he was, he had nothing to say but to lament him'. It was an answer calculated neither to soothe nor please. The Duke, says Edward, defied Cecil, and sent for and cross-questioned Palmer Palmer, of course, denied that he had said anything against him, true or false; and he remained anxious and uncertain till the 16th, when he appeared as usual at the meeting of the privy council.

By this time Warwick's preparations were complete. It is to be hoped that the full extent of his iniquity was kept secret between himself and his instrument, that the council, like Edward, were his dupes. In the afternoon of that day Somerset was arrested on a charge of treason, and sent to the Tower,

<sup>1</sup> *Lords' Journal*

<sup>2</sup> The title was vacant by the death, in the summer, of the two sons of Charles Brandon



whither he was followed immediately after by the Duchess, Lord Arundel, Sir Thomas Arundel, Paget, Grey, Stanhope, Partridge, and many more. Vane escaped across the river, and hid himself in a stable at Lambeth, but he was betrayed, or discovered, in a few hours.

Palmer now enlarged his evidence. The gendarmes, he said, were to have been assaulted on the muster-day by Somerset's retinue and Sir Ralph Vane's two thousand footmen; the cry of liberty was to have been raised in London; and, in case of failure, the conspirators were to have fallen back on Poole or the Isle of Wight. Another witness supported this part of the story, and here, it is likely enough, that it was true. The banquet, it was further said, where the Lords were to have been killed, was to have been held at the house of Lord Paget.<sup>1</sup>

The next step was to send the usual circulars to the magistrates, informing them of the near escape of the King and commonwealth from conspiracy; and letters to the same effect were sent to Pickering and Chamberlain, to lay before the Courts of Paris and Brussels. Henry affected to believe—Northumberland being in the interests of France,<sup>2</sup> the Regent Mary, perhaps for the same reason, scarcely cared to conceal her incredulity.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> It is to be remarked that, in the subsequent proceedings, although the banquet was alluded to, the intended scene of it was not again mentioned. Neither Paget nor Arundel was tried, although, if any

plot was really formed for the murder, Arundel was one of the principal persons concerned in it.

<sup>2</sup> Pickering to the Council. TYTLER, vol. II.

<sup>3</sup> Chamberlain told her of his

The prosecution was temporarily interrupted by the arrival and entertainment in London of Mary of Guise, on her route from France to Scotland, and, at the same time, by an invitation from Maurice and the other Protestant princes, to join in the great enterprise\* about to be attempted against the Emperor. But the pageant of a royal entertainment was soon over, and Warwick and his friends were too deeply disloyal to the cause of which they were so loud professors, to join in a religious confederacy. Their own idea of foreign policy was the balance of power, which no other object, divine or human, ought to derange,<sup>1</sup> and the Germans were put off with an evasive answer, and at last with an equivalent to a refusal.<sup>2</sup> Northumberland's attention was demanded for a more serious object.

Majesty's escape' 'She said she was sorry to hear of the Duke's so evil behaviour, yet was she glad and thanked God, who had so well preserved his Highness. But is it true, she said, that the Duke meant anything to the King's Majesty's person, demanding by what means he could be able to do the same, musing much at the matter why the Duke would shew himself so ingrate towards the King's Majesty. The thing, quoth she, is very strange, for that by all reason the Duke's whole wealth did depend upon the King's Majesty's prosperity and welfare'—*MS Flanders*, Edward VI vol 1. State Paper Office

<sup>1</sup> It is well explained in a despatch of Doctor Wotton, who, to do him justice, did not affect much

interest in the Reformation France, in spite of professions of friendship, he looked upon as a treacherous neighbour. 'From France,' he said, 'danger may, perhaps, be suspected, if the Protestants, plucking their heads out of the yoke, and labouring to recover their oppressed liberty, deliver the French from all fear and suspicion of the Emperor.' To sacrifice the Protestants, lest the Emperor should be too much weakened, to irritate the quarrels between the Emperor and France, lest either of them should meddle with England, was the ignoble policy of an English liberal Government—Wotton to Cecil *MS State Paper Office*

<sup>2</sup> *EDWARD'S Journal*, November, 1551, and March, 1552.

November was spent in a series of private <sup>November</sup> examinations of the prisoners in the Tower. Crane, the witness who had supported Palmer, declared, on being cross-questioned, that Somerset's intentions whatever "they were, had been abandoned. Lord Arundel admitted reluctantly, and after many denials a design formed by himself and the Duke to arrest Northumberland and Northampton at the council, and to compel a change in the mode of government.<sup>1</sup> Hammond, one of the Duke's servants, deposed to a guard which the Duke kept in his ante-room. A collection of questions remain which were addressed to the Duke himself, though his answers are lost, and these questions are important, as has been well observed,' since they contain no allusion to the intended assassination. Other evidence was obtained also, but of an immaterial kind. On the 30th the witnesses were examined severally before the peers who were to sit upon the trial, and they swore all of them that their confessions were true 'without compulsion, fear, envy, or displeasure. The next morning, the first of December, at five <sup>Dec 1</sup> o'clock, in the winter darkness, the Duke was brought in a barge from the Tower to Westminster Hall. In fear of a demonstration, which the popularity of Somerset made more than likely, an order of council had been sent out the day before, that every household should keep within-doors, and that in each house one

<sup>1</sup> Confession of Lord Arundel. *MS. Domestica*, Edward VI. vol. vi. printed partially by TYTLER

<sup>2</sup> By Mr TYTLER.

man at least should be ready with his arms, to be called out, if order should be disturbed. But the eagerness of the people defied the command to stay at home, and by daybreak Palace-yard and the court before the hall were thronged with a vast multitude, all passionately devoted to Somerset, all execrating his rival. The court was formed; Lord Winchester sitting as High Steward. Twenty-six peers, Northumberland, Northampton, and Pembroke among them, took their seats, and at nine o'clock the prisoner was led forward to the bar<sup>1</sup>

Under the Act of Unlawful Assemblies<sup>2</sup>  
 December the late Protector was charged, under various counts, with having treasonably collected men in his house for an ill intent, as to kill the Duke of Northumberland; with having devised the death of the Lords of the Council; with having intended to raise the city of London to assault the Lords of the Council; and, finally, with having purposed to resist his arrest. On the last three counts he was further indicted for felony. As usual in trials for treason, the principal witnesses

<sup>1</sup> For the particulars of Somerset's trial, see EDWARD'S *Journal*, STOW, HOLINSHED, the *Privy Council Register*, the papers in vol. xiii of the *Domestic MSS* of the reign of Edward VI, the *Grey Friars' Chronicle*, and the second volume of Mr TYTLER'S *Edward and Mary*

<sup>2</sup> 3 and 4 Edward VI cap 5: If any persons to the number of twelve or above, being assembled together, shall practise with force of arms unlawfully and of their own

authority to murder, kill, slay, take, or imprison any of the King's most honourable privy council, or unlawfully to alter or change any laws made or established by authority of Parliament, and being commanded by the Sheriff of the shire, or any justice of the peace, to retire to their own houses, shall remain together for one hour after such proclamation, or after that shall attempt or do any of the things above specified, every such act shall be judged high treason.

were not brought into court; their depositions, taken down, elsewhere, were read aloud. The Duke, when called on to answer, admitted that he had collected men, and that he had spoken of killing Northumberland and Northampton; but afterwards he said he 'determined the contrary.'<sup>1</sup> He denied an intention of raising the city of London, or the northern counties. The story of the banquet, he said, was altogether false. When Crane's evidence was read, he desired that Crane might be produced in court and confronted with him. Palmer, he said, was a worthless villain. Lord Strange was the only witness who came forward in person. Strange declared that Somerset had moved him to persuade the King to break with France, and marry Lady Seymour. This, too, Somerset denied; but Strange persisted. The peers withdrew. Northumberland, possibly in pretended moderation, but more likely to ensure a condemnation,<sup>2</sup> disclaimed a desire to press the treason charge, for a lighter verdict Somerset's own confession seemed sufficient. On the first count, therefore, the Lords returned a verdict of not guilty. Amidst a murmur of applause, the sergeant-at-arms left the hall with the axe of the Tower. The anxious crowd at the doors, mistaking his

<sup>1</sup> And yet, says Edward, 'he seemed to admit that he went about their deaths'—*Journal*, December, 1551.

<sup>2</sup> Lord Coke, commenting upon the trial, observes that, even admitting the truth of the evidence, the verdict was not justified, because there had been no proclamation call-

ing on the Duke and his confederates to disperse, and it was only by persisting, after such proclamation had been read, that his conduct came under the Treason Act. Northumberland probably anticipated the objection, and was contented with an ordinary verdict of felony under the common law.

appearance for a final acquittal, sent up a shout again, and again, and again, which pealed up to Charing Cross, and was heard in Long Acre. But congratulations were premature. Acquitted of treason, the Duke was found guilty of felony, which would answer equally to ensure his destruction,<sup>1</sup> Winchester pronounced sentence of death, and, amidst the awful silence which followed, the Duke fell on his knees, thanking the court for his trial, and, unless Edward was deceived by a purposely false report, asked Northumberland to pardon him, confessing that he had meant his destruction.<sup>2</sup> 'Duke of Somerset,' Northumberland answered from his seat, 'you see yourself a man in peril of life and sentenced to die. Once before I saved you in a like danger, nor will I desist to serve you now, though you may not believe me. Appeal to the mercy of the King's Majesty, which I doubt not he will extend to you. For myself, gladly I pardon all things which you have designed against me, and I will do my best that your life may be spared.'<sup>3</sup>

The truth is hard to read through such a maze of

<sup>1</sup> Edward, writing to his friend, Barnaby Fitzpatrick, says, 'After debating the matter till nine of the clock till three, the Lords went together, and there weighing that the matter seemed only to touch their lives, although afterwards more inconvenience might have followed, and that men might think they did it of malice, acquitted him of high treason, and condemned him of felony, which he seemed to have confessed' — Edward to Fitzpatrick.

printed in FULLER's *Church History*.

<sup>2</sup> Edward to Fitzpatrick. *Ibid* Edward adds, in his *Journal*, that two days after, 'Somerset confessed in the Tower that he had hired a man named Bertville to kill Northumberland and Northampton, that Bertville was arrested, and on being examined, confessed also

<sup>3</sup> John ab Ulmus to Bullinger *Epistolæ TIGURINÆ*, p. 291.

treachery If it be true that Somerset confessed, either in the court or the Tower, that he had really 'meditated murder, he was no better than Northumberland; interest or sympathy is alike wasted upon either, and Palmer's evidence may, in that case, have been exaggerated only because the intended crime was certain, though the proof was insufficient Yet, if Northumberland had but anticipated a blow which had been aimed against himself, his conduct would scarcely have sat so heavily on his conscience Scarcely, too, would Cranmer or Ridley, unlike the pious flatterers of the now all-powerful statesman, have risked his anger with 'shewing their consciences' in such a cause<sup>1</sup>

But if to the historical inquirer it seems doubtful whether the guilt was on both sides or but on one, the world at the time entertained no such uncertainty. So deep was the excitement, so general the suspicion of the verdict, that it was found necessary to overawe London two days after with a parade of the gendarmerie Arundel and Paget were examined in the Star Chamber with closed doors, but a second trial was a risk too great to be ventured

When Parliament was prorogued in October, there

---

<sup>1</sup> 'I have heard that Cranmer, and another, whom I will not name, were both in high displeasure, the one for shewing his conscience secretly, but plainly and fully, in the Duke of Somerset's cause, and both of late, but especially Cranmer, for repugning against the spoil of the Church goods taken away without law or order of justice, by commandment of the higher powers'—Ridley's Lamentation on the State of England FOXE, vol vii p 573. Ridley must be supposed to mean himself by the 'other' whom he will not name

had been an evident dread of the humour which might be shown by the Lower House, and measures had been taken to secure assistance there which might be depended upon<sup>1</sup> Meantime Northumberland's friends gave out that, on the trial, and since the trial, he had exerted himself in Somerset's interests with unparalleled generosity The execution was delayed perhaps to give colour to the story, and it was reported first that the King had granted a free pardon;<sup>2</sup> next it was said that a pardon had been offered, but that the Duke, counting on his own or his friends' power, would not accept it, and had flung back the generous overtures of the council with scorn and insolence<sup>3</sup> The death of his brother was brought back against him with ingenious misrepresentation<sup>4</sup> His arrogance, it was pretended, could no longer be endured, and, should he escape punishment, he would throw the whole realm into confusion to revenge himself<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'A letter to be written to the Lord Chancellor to cause search to be made how many of the Parliament House be dead since the last session, to the intent that grave and wise men might be elected to supply their place, for the avoiding of the misorder that hath been noted in sundry young men and others of small judgment — *Privy Council Register, MS* October 28, 1551 The Council had never ventured on a second trial of the disposition of the country The same Parliament continued to sit which was elected in 1547

<sup>2</sup> John ab Ulmis to Bullinger

*Epistolæ Tigurinæ*

<sup>3</sup> Burgoyne to Calvin Ibid

<sup>4</sup> 'It is notorious to every one that he was the occasion of his brother's death, who was beheaded on his information, instigated by I know not what hatred and rivalry' — Ibid Elizabeth, a better authority than Burgoyne, said that, so anxious was Somerset to save the admiral, that those who were determined on his death found it necessary to prevent an interview between the brothers — *Supra*.

<sup>5</sup> Burgoyne to Calvin



Calvin, more keen-sighted than the correspondent who furnished him with these stories, meditated a remonstrance to the King, with a caution against the advisers who were betraying him<sup>1</sup> In England the general indignation could not be concealed by the loud applauses of the revolutionists It was likely enough that, were Somerset free, there would be a convulsion ; but men could not be convinced that any change would be an evil which would deliver them from the hated Northumberland<sup>2</sup>

No alteration could be expected in the popular feeling, and the irritation would be inflamed by longer delay The execution was fixed at last for the morning of the 22nd of January. 1552  
January 22

As an attempt at rescue was anticipated, an order of council again commanded all inhabitants of the city or the suburbs to keep to their houses A thousand men-at-arms brought in from the country were drawn up on Tower Hill, and with the gendarmerie formed a ring round the scaffold, but the proclamation was not more effectual at the execution than at the trial As the day dawned, the great square and every avenue of

<sup>1</sup> Addebat ille te in animo habere de duci morte nescis quid adversus nostros homines scribere immo ad regem ipsum —Valerandus Pollanus Joanni Calvino *Epistole Tigv-  
rinæ*

<sup>2</sup> The new coinage, good as it was, could find no favour, from the dread and suspicion in which the

Duke of Northumberland was held

'December 16, there was a proclamation for the new coin, that no man should speak ill of it for because the people said divers that there was the ragged staff it . '—Imperfect Fragment in the *Geey Friars' Chronicle*

approach to it were thronged with spectators, pressing on all sides against the circle of armed men

A little before eight o'clock the Tower guard brought up their prisoner. Somerset's countenance was singularly handsome, and both his features and his person were marked with an habitual expression of noble melancholy. Amidst his many faults he was every inch a gentleman. He was dressed in the splendid costume which he had worn in receptions of state. As he stepped upon the scaffold, he knelt and said a short prayer, he then rose, and, bowing to the people, spoke bareheaded.<sup>1</sup>

'Masters and good fellows I am come hither to die, but a true and faithful man as any was unto the King's Majesty and to his realm. But I am condemned by a law whereunto I am subject, as we all, and therefore to show obedience I am content to die, wherewith I am well content, being a thing most heartily welcome to me, for the which I do thank God, taking it for a singular benefit as ever might have come to me otherwise. For, as I am a man, I have deserved at God's hand many deaths, and it has pleased his goodness, whereas He might have taken me suddenly, that I should neither have known Him nor myself, thus now to visit me and call me with this present death as you do see,

---

<sup>1</sup> There are several reports of Somerset's last words. That in the text is from an MS printed by Sir Henry Ellis, which is simpler and shorter than the version given by Foxe and Holmshed, and was most likely the nucleus out of which the latter accounts were expanded. I have added one sentence, that marked between brackets, from Burgoyne's letter to Calvin.

where I have had time to remember and acknowledge Him, and to know also myself, for the which I do thank Him most heartily. And, my friends, more I have to say to you concerning religion · I have been always, being in authority, a furtherer of it to the glory of God to the uttermost of my power ; whereof I am nothing sorry, but rather have cause and do rejoice most gladly that I have so done, for the greatest benefit of God that ever I had, or any man might have in this world, beseeching you all to take it so, and to follow it on still ; for, if not, there will follow and come a worse and great plague ’

He was still speaking, when the crowd began suddenly to wave and shift. Through the breathless silence a noise was heard like the trampling of the feet of a large number of men approaching · some thought it was a rescue, some one thing, some another, shouts rose, away ! away ! the packed multitude attempted to scatter, and as the sound had created the alarm, the alarm now increased the sound · Some cried that it thundered, some that an army was coming down from heaven, some felt the earth shake under their feet. The mystery was merely that a company of soldiers, who had been ordered to be at Tower Hill by eight o’clock, and had found themselves late, were coming at a run through an adjoining street ;<sup>1</sup> but no one thought of looking for a reasonable cause · ‘ There was a rumbling,’ says Machyn,<sup>2</sup> ‘ as it had been guns shooting, and great horses

<sup>1</sup> Stow was present, and ascertained carefully the origin of the alarm.

<sup>2</sup> MACHYN’S *Diary*, January 22

coming. A thousand fell to the ground for fear, for that they on the one side thought no other but that the one was killing the other, a hundred fell into the Tower ditch, and some ran away for fear'

In the midst of the confusion, Sir Anthoñy Browne was seen forcing his horse through the throng towards the scaffold, and above the clamour rose a shout of 'Pardon, pardon, a pardon from the King'

Had Somerset been deceived, it would have been a cruel aggravation of his suffering; but he knew North-  
umberland too well

He had stood in the front of the scaffold with his cap in his hand, waiting till the noise should cease. At the cry of a pardon he exclaimed. 'There is no such thing, good people; there is no such thing' His voice quieted them, and he went on with his address —

'It is the ordinance of God thus to die, wherewith we must be content; [I beseech you do not grieve for my fortunes, keep yourselves quiet and still, and make no disturbance, or attempt to save me, for I do not desire a longer life,] and let us now pray together for the King's Majesty, to whose Grace I have always been a faithful, true, and most loving subject, desirous always of his most prosperous success in all his affairs, and ever glad of the furtherance and helping forward of the commonwealth of his realm'

At the concluding words, voices answered, 'Yes, yes, yes.' Some one cried above the rest, 'This is found now too true'

The Duke then drew off his rings, and gave them to

the executioner Dropping his cloak, he unbuckled his sword, which he presented to the Lieutenant of the Tower, and, after a few words with the Dean of Christ Church, who had attended him, he loosened his shirt-collar, and knelt quietly before the block Three times he was heard to say, ' Lord Jesus, save me ' The headsman's arm rose, fell, and all was over

The English public, often wildly wrong on general questions, are good judges, for the most part, of personal character, and so passionately was Somerset loved, that those who were nearest the scaffold started forward to dip their handkerchiefs in his blood His errors were forgotten in the tragedy of his end, and the historian who in his life sees much to censure, who, had he recovered his Protectorate, would, perhaps, have been obliged to repeat the same story of authority unwisely caught at and unwisely used, can find but good words only for the victim of the treachery of Northumberland.

In revolutions the most excellent things are found ever in connection with the most base. The enthusiast for the improvement of mankind works side by side with the adventurer, to whom change is welcome, that he may better his fortune in the scramble. and thus it is that patriots and religious reformers show in fairest colours when their cause is ungained, when they are a struggling minority chiefly called upon to suffer Gold and silver will not answer for the purposes of a currency till they are hardened with some interfusion of coarser metal; and truth and justice, when they have forced

their way to power, make a compromise with the world, and accept some portion of the world's spirit as the price at which they may exercise their ever limited dominion. So it is at the best: too often, as the devil loves most to mar the fairest works, the good, when success is gained, are pushed aside as dreamers, or used only as a shield for the bad deeds of their confederates, they are happy if their own nature escape infection from the instruments which they use, and from the elements in which they are compelled to work.

While the lay ministers of Edward VI were 'sowing the wind,' where the harvest in due time would follow, Archbishop Cranmer, keeping aloof more and more from them and their doings, or meddling in them only to protest, was working silently at the English Prayer-book. No plunder of Church or Crown had touched the hands of Cranmer. No fibre of political, intrigue, or crime, or conspiracy could be traced to the palace at Lambeth. He had lent himself, it was true, in his too great eagerness to carry out the Reformation, to the persecution and deposition of Bonner and Gardiner, but his share<sup>1</sup> had been slight in the more recent acts

---

<sup>1</sup> Underhill, 'the hot gospeller,' tells in his *Narrative* how in the palmy days of Northumberland he arrested the Vicar of Stepney, 'Abbot quondam of Tower Hill,' and carried him to Croydon before the Archbishop. The vicar had disturbed the preachers in Stepney Church, caused the bells to be rung when they were at sermon, and challenged then doctrine in the pulpit. 'The Archbishop was too full of lenity,' a little he rebuked him, and bid him do no more so. The Puritan's zeal was kindled. 'My Lord,' said Underhill, 'methinks you are too gentle unto so stout a Papist.'—'We have no law to punish them,' said the Archbishop.—'No law?' my Lord, the gospeller ex-

of violence which recovered to the Catholics the hearts of the English people; and to the last he was considered by the ultras as timid and intellectually weak

Whether the charge of timidity was true, he had an opportunity of showing when Edward died and Northumberland recanted; when the noisy tongues of the gossellers were heard only at a safe distance, and the so-called timid ones remained to witness to their faith in suffering. Happily for his memory, and happily for the Church of England, the Archbishop was more nobly occupied than the 'gossellers' desired to see him

As the translation of the Bible bears upon it the imprint of the mind of Tyndal, so, while the Church of England remains, the image of Cranmer will be seen reflected on the calm surface of the Liturgy. The most beautiful portions of it are translations from the Breviary, yet the same prayers translated by others would not be those which chime like church bells in the ears of the English child. The translations, and the addresses which are original, have the same silvery melody of language, and breathe the same simplicity of spirit. So long as Cranmer trusted himself, and would not let himself be dragged beyond his convictions, he was the representative of the feelings of the best among

---

claimed, 'if I had your authority, I would be so bold to unvicar him, or minister some sharp punishment unto him. If ever it come to their turn, they will show you no such favour' — 'Well,' said the Archbishop, 'if God so provide, we must

abide it' — 'Surely,' said Underhill, 'God will never thank you for this, but rather take the sword from such as will not use it upon his enemies' — UNDERHILL'S *Narrative*, MS *Harleian*, 425

his countrymen. With the reverent love for the past, which could appropriate its excellencies, he could feel at the same time the necessity for change. While he could no longer regard the sacraments with a superstitious idolatry, he saw in them ordinances divinely appointed, and therefore especially, if inexplicably, sacred.

In this temper, for the most part, the English Church services had now, after patient labour, been at length completed by him, and were about to be laid before Parliament. They had grown slowly. First had come the primers of Henry VIII; then the Litany was added; and then the first Communion-book. The next step was the Prayer-book of 1549; and now at last the complete Liturgy, which survives after three hundred years. In a few sentences only, inserted apparently under the influence of Ridley, doctrinal theories were pressed beyond the point to which opinion was legitimately gravitating. The priest was converted absolutely into a minister, the altar into a table, the eucharist into a commemoration, and a commemoration only. But these peculiarities were uncongenial with the rest of the Liturgy, with which they refuse to harmonize; and on the final establishment of the Church of England, were dropped or modified.<sup>1</sup> They were, in

\* *Prayer-book of 1549*

*The priest shall first receive the communion in both kinds, and next deliver it to other ministers, if any be there*

*Prayer book of 1552*

*Then shall the minister first receive the communion in both kinds himself, and next deliver it to other minis-*

*Prayer-book of Elizabeth*

*Then shall the minister first receive the communion in both kinds himself, and then proceed to deliver the*



fact, the seed of vital alterations, for which the nation was unprepared, which, had Edward lived two years longer, would have produced, first, the destruction of the Church as a body politic, and then an after-fruit of re-action more inveterate than even the terrible one

*Prayer book of 1549*

present, that they may be ready to help the chief minister, and after to the people And when he delivereth the sacrament of the body of Christ, he shall say to every one—

*The body of our Lord Jesus Christ preserve thy body and soul to everlasting life*

And the minister delivering the sacrament of the blood, and giving every one to drink once, and no more, shall say—

*The blood of our Lord Jesus Christ, which was shed for thee, preserve thy body and soul to everlasting life*

*Prayer-book of 1552*

ters, if there be any present, that they may help the chief minister, and after to the people *in their hands, kneeling* And when he delivereth the bread, he shall say—

*Take and eat this in remembrance that Christ died for thee, and feed on him in thy heart by faith with thanksgiving*

And the minister that delivereth the cup shall say—

*Drink this in remembrance that Christ's blood was shed for thee, and be thankful*

*Prayer-book of Elizabeth*

same to the bishops, priests, and deacons in like manner, if any be present, and after that to the people also in their hands, all meekly kneeling And when he delivereth the bread to any one, he shall say—

*The body of our Lord Jesus Christ, which was given for thee, preserve thy body and soul to everlasting life. Take and eat this in remembrance that Christ died for thee, and feed on him in thy heart by faith with thanksgiving*

And the minister that delivereth the cup to any one shall say—

*The blood of our Lord Jesus Christ, which was shed for thee, preserve thy body and soul to everlasting life Drink this in remembrance that Christ's blood was shed for thee and be thankful*

Similarly in the consecration of the elements, the sign of the cross was directed to be used in 1549, and omitted in 1552 There were other changes The discerning reader will see the spirit of them in these comparisons

under Mary. But Edward died before the Liturgy could be further tampered with; and from amidst the foul weeds in which its roots were buried it stands up beautiful, the one admirable thing which the unhappy reign produced. Prematurely born, and too violently forced upon the country, it was, nevertheless, the right thing, the thing which essentially answered to the spiritual demands of the nation. They rebelled against it, because it was precipitately thrust upon them; but services which have overlived so many storms speak for their own excellence, and speak for the merit of the workman.

As the Liturgy was prepared for Parliament and people, so for the Convocation and the clergy there were drawn up a body of articles of religion, forty-two of them, as they were first devised; thirty-nine, as they are now known to the theological student. These also have survived, and, like other things in this country, have survived their utility, and the causes which gave them birth. Articles of belief they have been called; articles of teaching, articles of peace. Protestants who have restored the right of private judgment, who condemn so emphatically the articles added by the Council of Trent to the Christian creed, not for themselves only, but because human beings are not permitted to bind propositions of their own upon the consciences of believers, will scarcely pretend that they are the first. If it be unlawful for a Catholic council to enlarge the dogmatic system of Christianity, no more can it be permitted to a local Church to impose upon the judgment a series

of intricate assertions on theological subtleties which the most polemical divines will not call vital, or on questions of public and private morality, where the conscience should be the only guide.

The death of the Duke of Somerset was followed by the trial and execution of Vane, Partridge, Stanhope, and Sir Thomas Arundel. The condemnation of Arundel was effected with great difficulty. The jury were shut up on a day in January twenty-four hours, without fire, food, or drink, before they would agree <sup>Jan 28</sup> upon a verdict, and the four sufferers died protesting their innocence.

On the 30th of January Northumberland met Parliament

The Prayer-book passed without difficulty Cuthbert Tunstal, the last bishop who would have opposed it, had joined Gardiner in the Tower, the letter found among Somerset's papers having furnished an excuse to lay hands upon him; and a second Act was passed for uniformity of religious worship—persons who refused to come to church being liable to censure or excommunication, those who attended any other service to imprisonment

A zeal was affected also for the more practical parts of religion, the humour of the people becoming dangerous, and the more earnest among the Reformers insisting on being heard. In a sermon before the King, Ridley had spoken of the distress to which the spoliation of public charities had reduced the London poor. Edward sent for him afterwards, thanked him for what he

had said, and asked him what should be done. Too wise to refer such a question to the council, the Bishop said that the corporation of the city were the best persons to consult with, and Edward wrote a letter to February Sir Richard Dobbs, the mayor, with which Ridley charged himself. The corporation, in the last few years, had shown in favourable contrast with the Government. While the dependents of Somerset and Northumberland were appropriating and absorbing hospitals and schools, the Lord Mayor and aldermen had founded others at their own expense, and now, on the invitation of the King, they proceeded in the same direction with more effective energy. The House of the Grey Friars was repaired and refitted for the education of poor children, under the name of Christ's Hospital. St Thomas's Hospital, which had been suppressed, was purchased by the corporation for the reception of the impotent and diseased poor. St Bartholomew's was surrendered by the Crown into the mayor's hands, with fresh endowments, and the royal palace of Bridewell, a little later, with the estate which had belonged to the Hospital of the Savoy, was made over as a workhouse for able-bodied labourers out of employ.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> HOLINSHED, Stow's *Survey of London*. Bridewell was granted by the Crown at the particular entreaty of Ridley, whose characteristic letter to Cecil on the subject survives.

Good Mr Cecil,

I must be a suitor to you in our master Christ's cause. I beseech you be good unto him. The matter

is, sir, alas, he hath lyen too long abroad, as you do know, without lodging, in the streets of London, both hungry, naked, and cold. Now thanks be unto Almighty God, the citizens are willing to refresh him, and to give him both meat, drink, clothing, and firing. But alas, sir, they lack lodging for him, for in

Not to be left too far behind by the citizens, the Government exerted themselves in the same direction. An Act was passed in Parliament for the collection of alms for the poor in every parish. The contributions were nominally voluntary, but payment might be enforced by the reproofs of the clergy, the censures of the Church, and by punishment at the discretion of the Bishop.<sup>1</sup> The scandalous frauds in the manufacture of woollen cloth having injured the credit of the trade,<sup>2</sup> the sheep-farming no longer yielded its disproportionate profits; the tillage question could, therefore, be taken up again with a chance of success. Commissioners were appointed to hold district courts, to empanel juries, and compel the owners to bring their recent

some one house they say they are fain to lodge three families under one roof. Sir, there is a wide large house of the King's Majesty's called Bridewell that would wonderful well serve to lodge Christ in, if he might find such good friends in the Court as would procure in his cause. Surely, I have so good an opinion in the King's Majesty, that if Christ had such faithful and hearty friends that would heartily speak for him, he should undoubtedly speed at the King's Majesty's hands. Sir, I have promised my brethren the citizens in this matter to move you, because I take you for one that feareth God, and would not that Christ should lie no more abroad in the street. There is a rumour that one goeth about to buy that house of the King's Ma-

jesty, and to pull it down. If there be any such thing, for God's sake speak you in our Master's cause. I have written unto Mr Gates more at large in this matter. I join you with him and all that look for Christ's benediction in the latter day. If Mr Cheke was with you, in whose recovery God be blessed, I would surely make him in this behalf one of Christ's special advocates, or rather one of his principal procurtors, and surely I would not be said nay. And thus I wish you in Christ ever well to fare. From my house at Fulham this present Sunday.

Yours in Christ,

NIC LONDON

—*Lansdown MSS* 3

<sup>1</sup> 5 Edward VI. cap. 2

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* cap. 6

pastures under the plough<sup>1</sup> The Flanders Jews having made the Government susceptible on money questions, they passed a Statute of Usury, which formed a curious complement to their general administration of the finances. By the 9th of the 37th of Henry VIII, the legal interest of money was limited to ten per cent 'But this was not meant,' it was now declared,<sup>2</sup> 'as if to allow usury, which was a thing unlawful,' 'a vice most odious and detestable;' but only 'for the avoiding of more ill and inconvenience than before that time was used:' and since a sense of their duties in this matter 'could by no godly teaching and persuasion sink into the hearts of divers greedy, uncharitable, and covetous persons,' it was decreed that thenceforward no interest of any kind should be demanded or given upon any loan, under pain of forfeiture, imprisonment, and fine

So far all had gone smoothly On other matters the Commons were more suspicious and less tractable The forfeiture of the estates of the Duke of Somerset gave occasion to a sharp debate A Protestant heresy bill, introduced 'for the protection of the King's subjects from such heresies as might happen by strangers dwelling among them,' was referred to a committee of bishops, but fell through and was lost<sup>3</sup> Northumberland, intending to appropriate the estates of the bishopric of Durham, brought in a bill to deprive Tunstal, on a charge of treason, and succeeded, in spite of Cranmer's

<sup>1</sup> 5 Edward VI cap 5

<sup>2</sup> Ibid cap. 20

<sup>3</sup> *Lords Journals*, 5 and 6 Edward VI.

opposition, in carrying it through the Lords. The Lower House, however, required that Tunstal's accusers should be brought face to face with him, and that he should be heard in his defence, which for many reasons would be inconvenient. The Duke, therefore, withdrew his bill, and proceeded by commission, which did the work for him less scrupulously, but did not improve his reputation. Cranmer refused to sit, and the Bishop of Durham was deposed by a court composed of laymen.

Still more significant was the treatment which a new Statute of Treason received in the House of Commons. As the administration became more detested, incendiary pamphlets and handbills multiplied, and it was desired to restore in some degree the sharp discipline of the last reign. The Lords again complied<sup>1</sup> The Commons rejected the Government measure, and drew another of their own<sup>2</sup> In the absence of a copy of the rejected bill, it is impossible to say what it contained, it may be conjectured, however, with some certainty, that it did not contain a clause which appears in the Act as it was finally passed, a clause providing that no person should in future be attainted or convicted of treason under that or any other statute, unless the charges in

<sup>1</sup> It is easy to see why there were but forty-seven lay peers who had seats in this Parliament, thirty-one was the fullest attendance during this session, the Catholic lords systematically absenting themselves. The council and their friends, therefore, being punctually at their seats, and having bishops of their own creation at their backs, were certain in almost all cases of a majority

<sup>2</sup> *Commons Journals* 5 and 6 Edward VI

the indictment should have been first proved in the presence of the accused by two witnesses at least.<sup>1</sup>

Northumberland's endeavours to fill the vacant seats in the House with wise and discreet persons had been too successful. The composition did not please him,

and on the 15th of April the first Parliament  
 April 15 of Edward VI was dissolved

Outward events, however, continued to favour him, tempting him to believe himself irresistible, and leading him on to the fatal step which for the moment made shipwreck of the Reformation. The English council had refused the application of Duke Maurice and the princes of the League for assistance. They had declined to take part in a movement which was to break the power of Charles V in Germany for ever, and give peace for three quarters of a century to the Lutheran churches. Magdeburg still held out, but the secret of Maurice's intentions was so well kept that, although Charles suspected him of voluntary negligence, he seems to have entertained no serious misgivings about him.

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Provided always, and be it enacted by the authority aforesaid, that no person shall be indicted, arraigned, condemned, convicted, or attainted for any treasons that now be, or hereafter shall be, which shall hereafter be perpetrated, committed, or done, unless the same offender or offenders be thereof accused by two lawful accusers, which said accusers, at the time of the arraignment of the party accused, if they be then living, shall be brought in person

before the party so accused, and avow and maintain that that they have to say against the said party, to prove him guilty of the treason or offences contained in the bill of indictment laid against the party arraigned'—5 and 6 Edward, cap xi sec 9. The Act containing this salutary order was repealed by the 1st of Mary, or the reform of the English treason law would have been antedated by a century



He had spies in the Duke's camp; but his spies played him false, or were themselves deceived, and while Maurice was corresponding with England and France, and making preparations for a general revolt, the Emperor, in fancied security, had arranged to go to Innspruck, to be in the neighbourhood of the Council of Trent, when the Protestant representatives should present themselves there in the course of the winter.

On leaving Augsburg Charles ventured on a measure of imprudent intimidation. His inability to enforce the Interim there, even in his own presence, and under his own eyes, had exasperated him. On the 26th <sup>August 26</sup> of August the Bishop of Arras sent for the Protestant clergy, accused them briefly of disobedience to the Imperial rescripts; and requiring them to take an oath to depart out of Germany, he ordered them at once, and without an hour's delay, to leave their houses and the town. In vain they appealed to the law, and claimed the privileges of citizens. They were driven out, and Sir Richard Morryson, writing from the spot, describes the consequences of this high-handed tyranny. 'Men do much marvel,' he wrote to the council, 'that M. d'Arras durst venture to do this, more, that he durst do it at this time, more than all, that the Emperor would consent to a thing that so easily might have turned him, his Court, yea, his whole city, to trouble; but what doth greedy ambition stick at, or what doth not desperate desire force men to attempt? The Emperor's friends be flouting again, his enemies ready to do their worst, he must, therefore, make

friends of Julius III., his surety so long as it lasteth. He must do displeasure to as many as he may, so his friend Julius be thereby pleased. The wound is yet green, and not so felt as perhaps it will be when time and trouble shall lay open the multitude and greatness of these men's miseries. Men and women are at this present so astounded at the whole of their misery that they have no leisure to peruse the parts thereof. There be few shops but some men or women be seen weeping in them; few streets but there be men in plumps, that look as they had rather do worse than suffer their present thralldom. On Friday last there were about a hundred women at the Emperor's gates, howling, and asking in their outcries where they should christen their children, or whether their children not christened should be taken as heathen dogs. They would have gone to the Emperor's house, but our Catholic Spaniards kept them out, reviling them. The Papist churches have for all this no more customers than they had—not ten of the townsmen in some of their greatest synagogues. The churches are locked up; the people sit weeping at home, and do say they will beg among Protestants, rather than live in wealth where they must be Papists. Babes new born lie unchristened; they will have no Latin christening.<sup>1</sup>

The German troops mutinied, they were 'almost all wont to go to the Protestant service, and talked

---

<sup>1</sup> Morryson and Wotton to the Council *MS Cypher*, September 1, State Paper Office

madly of the banishment of their preachers.'<sup>1</sup> Fresh companies of Spaniards were brought into the town, and the Germans marched beyond the walls.

Having lighted the match with his own hands, the Emperor set out for Innspruck, leaving Maurice behind him to follow out his own plans at his leisure. The Italian quarrel had expanded, and war with France was now openly declared. The Turkish fleet, as in the old times of Francis, came down into the Mediterranean as the allies of France; a Turkish army again threatened Hungary; and in the same spirit and in the same policy the French Court concluded a secret league with the Protestant princes. Maurice undertook to keep Charles in play with fair words till the moment came to strike, and, with the spring, the French troops were to enter Germany.

Over the thin crust of the mine which was to burst under their feet the Council of Trent recommenced their sessions on the 1st of September. Sept. 1

The Italian and Spanish bishops were duly in their places; the German Catholics were reported as on the way, the Diet had undertaken for the appearance of the Lutherans; the French bishops had not come, and nothing was known of them. France was the point to which the eyes of the fathers were most anxiously turning. If France was true to the Church, her differences with the Emperor could be soon composed, and all would be well. But France, if the eldest child of the Church,

---

<sup>1</sup> Morryson and Wotton to the Council, September 1: *MS* State Paper Office

was also the prodigal child, forgetful of her duties to her parent. Instead of bishops, there came a letter from the King, addressed to the assembly—not as *concilium*, a holy council with authority; but as *conventus*, a convention of mere human individuals. With many doubts they turned the covering over before they would acknowledge the irreverent despatch with reading it.<sup>1</sup> When the seal was broken they found professions of the utmost devotion to the Church, but a regret that the Gallican prelates would not be able to attend.

The terms on which the Lutherans were to be admitted were still unsettled. To the Pope, Charles had promised that they should appear as criminals. To Maurice he had said ambiguously that the council should be free. On this point Maurice made his first open move. He now demanded that the Protestant theologians should speak and vote with the Catholic bishops, and that the Scriptures should be the one single rule of the controversy.<sup>2</sup> Further, although Charles had promised the Protestants that their persons should be in no danger, the burning of Huss by the Council of Constance showed that Catholic prelates

October

---

<sup>1</sup> The Spanish bishops were for refusing altogether. As a middle course, the French ambassador was invited to request as a favour that the letter might be received, but the ambassador, with the utmost politeness, said, that he had no commission. At last a learned prelate suggested that, if they refused a letter which was addressed to them

as a convention, they could not decently receive communications from the Germans, who called them *concilium malignantium*, and on the whole, therefore, it was decided to read —PALLAVICINO

<sup>2</sup> Mont to the Council MS. Germany, bundle 15, State Paper Office. Compare SLEIDAN.

held ordinary engagements lightly when they had a chance of destroying a heretic. Maurice had a copy taken, therefore, of the safe-conduct extorted by Huss's followers from the Synod of Bâle, and he forwarded a duplicate for the signature of the fathers at Trent.

The first step was followed instantly by a second. Unpermitted by the Emperor, he made terms with Magdeburg, conceding, under a show of fair words, every point for which the city was contending; and the garrison immediately took service in Maurice's own army.<sup>1</sup> Next, having so far thrown November. off the mask, he sent a formal demand for the liberation of the Landgrave of Hesse; the Elector Palatine, the Duke of Mecklenburg, the King of Denmark, Albert of Brandenburg, and Ferdinand of Austria, attaching their signatures to the petition.

The Emperor still affected to be blind to Maurice's attitude. It was his policy to avoid seeing what, if forced upon him, he would be obliged to resent, and, resenting, was for the moment unable to punish. About the Landgrave he answered vaguely neither yes nor no. On this and other matters he could speak best, he said, in person, and he desired that Maurice would follow him to Innspruck: meantime, the ambassadors of the

---

<sup>1</sup> The terms of submission were not generally made known, but the truth was felt before it was acknowledged. A letter from Hamburg to the English council, on the 4th of November, says. 'The city of Magdeburg hath taken good success in this treaty They have a joyful peace Duke Maurice is their defender, and hath taken all the soldiers of the city and camp to serve him'—John Brigantine to the Council *MS. Germany*, bundle 15, State Paper Office.

Lutheran States—among them Sleidan the historian—presented themselves at Trent to request the safe-conduct for the divines, and to settle the terms on which these divines were to be present. The differences between the intentions of one party and the expectations of the other became at once apparent. The ambassadors gave in a series of propositions on which their representatives expected to be heard. The Papal legates wondered at the indecency of a desire to argue where the only fit course was submission. The safe-conduct was drawn and signed; but it was altered from the Bohemian pattern, and the ambassadors would not receive it. The Archbishop of Toledo, who was acting for the Emperor, endeavoured to persuade them; but he could only prevail upon them to refer to Maurice, and Maurice ordered them to stand to their demands, and not to yield an inch. Fearful of provoking the Emperor, the fathers consented to grant the ambassadors a private audience, in which the Lutheran views could be generally stated.<sup>1</sup> The ambassador of Wurtemberg required a reconstitution of the council; the Pope, he said, was a party to the suit, and was no fit judge in his own cause. The ambassador of Saxe insisted most on the safe-conduct, with an express allusion to Constance and the declaration of the bishops there that faith need not be kept with heretics.<sup>2</sup> The so-called heretics, he said, further, must

<sup>1</sup> SLEIDAN.

<sup>2</sup> Pallavicino exclaims angrily that the bishops at Constance declared nothing of the kind. They ruled only that safe-conducts granted

by temporal princes did not bind ecclesiastical judges. The modern Romanist will, perhaps, decline all defence of a council which he regards as half heretical.

be admitted to vote ; the past resolutions of the council must be reconsidered where they were at variance with the Confession of Augsburg. Finally, he desired to know what was to be said of the other resolution of the Council of Constance, that a council was above a Pope. This last question, says Pallavicino, drove the fathers at once among the reefs and breakers, of which Clement VII. long before had warned the Emperor.

Thus the time wore away till March, when the match had burnt to the powder. Maurice moved on Augsburg, which opened its gates to him. A French army appeared on the Rhine, and Protestant Germany was once more openly in arms.

Panic-stricken a second time, the bishops at Trent melted like the snow before the returning sun. Maurice, after restoring the expelled preachers, summoned a Diet to meet at Passau in July ; and while the French took possession of Verdun and Metz, he himself, with the Duke of Mecklenburg, made his way by rapid marches into the Tyrol. Charles had invited him to Innspruck, and to Innspruck he would go. The mountain passes were fortified, but the hatred of the Tyrolese for the Spaniards was so intense, that they offered their services as guides, and betrayed the defences. The detachments which had been set to guard them April

were cut in pieces ; and so swift were the movements of the German army, that the first intimation which Charles received that they had left Augsburg was the sound of their guns but a few miles distant. It was said that a mutiny among the Lanzknechts delayed the

last advance of Maurice, or the Emperor would have been a prisoner. It was said, also, that Maurice, was unwilling to burden himself with so considerable a captive; 'he had no cage large enough for such a bird'

But Charles, to save himself, had to fly through  
May 20. a midnight storm. He himself weak with gout, in a litter, his Court with such comforts as they could carry on their backs and no more, made their way in the darkness through the mountain valleys and across the swollen streams to the Venetian frontier. Maurice did not follow. He gave his troops the plunder of the Imperial palace; for himself, it was enough to know

that he had broken the spell which threatened  
July. Germany with slavery. In July he dictated the terms of the pacification of Passau; and the Emperor, at war with France, with the Turks in the Mediterranean, and the council for which he had so long laboured scattered to all the winds, gave up the battle with the Reformation. The Landgrave and John Frederick were set free. The Confession of Augsburg was again acknowledged. The Imperial chamber was reorganized as the Protestants had so long demanded. These points, few but vital, satisfied the moderate desires of the Lutheran princes; and making up his mind to leave them thenceforward unmolested in their freedom, Charles directed his remaining strength upon France.

Broken as he was, England was now finally safe from the Emperor. In his present weakness, whatever party were dominant in England, Puritan, Anglican, or Papist, Charles V. would equally be compelled to re-



cognize them, so long as he had France upon his hands; he would not only have to treat with them with courtesy, but be glad to accept their support. The opportunity was inviting. It tempted the Duke of Northumberland into dreams which, so long as Charles was powerful, he would not have dared to contemplate.

But, before I pass to the last phase of the Protestant administration, I must say something of the fortunes which during all this time had befallen Ireland. The men who had run so strange a course at home, had produced results no less astonishing in the sister country.

The Celtic and Celto-Norman chiefs, with whom anarchy was chronic and peace the least endurable of calamities, had for the last five years of the reign of Henry VIII., under the mild rule of Sir Anthony St Leger, remained in comparative quiet. The isolation of England in the midst of enemies, the French invasion in 1545, the internecine war with the Scots, had given them excellent opportunities for insurrection. But the temptation left them unaffected. Companies of gallow-glass served in Henry's camp at Boulogne, and even in Leinster and Connaught there was a longer respite from murder and pillage than those provinces had experienced since the conquest.

Some part of his success St Leger owed to himself, but he owed more to fortune. The reins were placed in his hands, when, after a series of defeats, the Irish lords had gone to London, and had seen for the first time in their lives the wealth and resources of the coun-

try against which they had struggled ; when they had been rewarded with peerages for the trouble which they had occasioned, and had been permitted to appropriate, on easy terms, the estates of the Irish monasteries.

The spoliation for a time compromised their orthodoxy, and committed them to English interests. It was not till Henry was gone that Ireland resumed her natural appearance. The policy of St Leger had been 'to make things quiet ;'<sup>1</sup> to overlook small offences so long as the general order was unbroken, and to be contented if each year the forms of law could be pushed something deeper beyond the borders of the Pale. His greatest success had been in prevailing upon an O'Toole to accept the decent dignity of Sheriff of Wicklow. As a further merit, and a great one, he had governed economically. While the home exchequer was so heavily strained, the Deputy of Ireland had made but few applications for money—conciliation was cheaper than force, and he had been happy in having to deal with a set of circumstances which enabled him to conciliate. His maxim had been—Ireland for the Irish ; he had recommended Henry to return to the old plan of appointing an Irish deputy, and he had especially recommended the Earl of Ormond.<sup>2</sup> He had naturally not pleased every one. The all-censorious Chancellor Allen had occasionally found something to condemn, and even with Ormond the deputy had not always been on terms ; but so long

---

<sup>1</sup> Edward Walsh to the Duke of Northumberland. *Irish MSS* Edward VI. vol. 14 State Paper Office

<sup>2</sup> Correspondence of St Leger *State Papers*, vol. III.

as Henry lived, good management and good fortune combined on the whole in his favour, and his term of government was creditable and happy.

But the reform gusts which were borne across St George's Channel on the accession of the child King, swept the strings of the Irish harp, and woke the old music. 'If the Lords of the Council,' sighed a later deputy, 'had letten all things alone in the order King Henry left them, and meddled not to alter religion, the hurley-burleys had not happened.'<sup>1</sup> But the Protector's mission to regenerate the world, the pillaged cathedrals, the emptied niches, and the white-washed church walls, rapidly stirred the jealousies of a passionate and susceptible people, and gave the chiefs, who by this time had made themselves secure in their new properties, an opportunity for the display of their remaining devotion.

St Leger, the pilot of the calm, was unequal to the hurricane which instantly arose. He was recalled, and his place was taken by Sir Edward Bellingham

The tourist who has visited Athlone may remember, on the edge of the town, a half-ruined castle, on which the letters E. R. [Edwardus Rex] stand out in high and distinct relief. It is one of the few surviving memorials of the brief administration of a remarkable man.

Edward Bellingham, brought up originally by the Duke of Norfolk, attracted, in 1540, the notice of Henry VIII., and was employed by him from that time forward in various secondary services. He was in

---

<sup>1</sup> Sir James Crofts to the Council. *Irish MSS* Edward VI vol iv. State Paper Office.

Hungary with Sir Thomas Seymour when the Turks were at Pesth. He had been on a diplomatic mission at Brussels. He was in Wallop's army at Landrecy, and afterwards with the Earl of Surrey at Boulogne. His most distinguished achievement hitherto had been when, as Lieutenant of the Isle of Wight, he repulsed the attacks of the French in 1545.

When he arrived at Dublin the English Pale was fringed with a line of fire. The Irish harbours swarmed with pirates. Catholic refugees, disrobed monks, thieves, outlaws, vagabonds, had poured across the Channel, and, under the decent cloak of sufferers for religion, were dispersed among the castles of the Irish. French and Scottish agents had followed, with plans for a French invasion, for the restoration of Gerald Fitzgerald, for the fortification of the Skerries, and the maintenance there in permanence of a French fleet.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> *Irish MSS* Edward VI vols 1. and 11 State Paper Office. Among other French emissaries came John de Monluc, Bishop of Valence, accompanied by young James Melville, then a boy of fourteen. The editor of Melville's manuscript misprinted the date of the visit, representing it as having taken place in 1545; the real date is 1547-8. Melville represents Edward as being on the English throne, and the Bishop's arrival is spoken of in the State Correspondence. In spite of scandal, I must borrow a page from the story.

'John de Monluc, Bishop of

Orleans, was sent ambassador from France to the queen-mother of Scotland, sister of the Duke of Guise; and when the said ambassador was to return to France, it pleased the queen-mother to send me with him. But the said Bishop went first to Ireland, commanded thereto by the King his master's letter, to know more particularly the motion and likelihood of the offer made by O'Neil, O'Donnell, O'Dochart, and O'Carrell, willing to shake off the yoke of England, and become subject to the King of France. We shipped for Ireland in the month of January. We were storm-stayed by the way at

To repress the insurgents who were in the field, to prevent the spread of conspiracy, to maintain the authority of the Government, Bellingham had no more

a little isle for seventeen days, and after great danger of the ship and our lives, we entered Loch Foyle in Ireland, upon Shrove Tuesday Ere we landed we sent one George Paris, who had been sent to Scotland by the great O'Neil and his associates, who landed at the house of a gentleman who had married O'Dochart's daughter, dwelling at the side of a lake; who came to our ship and welcomed us, and conveyed us to his house, where we rested that night. The next morning O'Dochart came and conveyed us to his house, which was a great dark tower, where we had cold cheer, as herring and biscuit, for it was Lent. There finding two English grey friars who had fled out of England, the said friars perceiving the Bishop to look very kindly to O'Dochart's daughter, who fled from him continually, they brought with them a woman who spoke English to be with him, which harlot being kept quietly in his chamber, found a little glass within a case standing in a window, for the coffers were all wet with the sea waves that fell into the ship during the storm. She, believing it had been ordained to be eaten because it had an odouriferous smell, therefore she licked it clean out, which put the Bishop in such a rage, that he cried out for impatience, discovering his harlotry

and his cholera in such a sort as the friars fled and the woman followed. But the Irishmen and his own servants did laugh at the matter, for it was a vial of the most precious balm that grew in Egypt, which Solymán, the Great Turk, had given in a present to the said Bishop after he had been two years ambassador for the King of France in Turkey, and was esteemed worth 2000 crowns. In the time that we remained at O'Dochart's house, his young daughter, who fled from the Bishop, came and sought me wherever I was, and brought a priest with her who could speak English, and offered, if I would marry her, to go with me wherever I pleased. I gave her thanks, but told her I was but young, and had no estate, and was bound for France.

'Now the ambassador met in a secret part with O'Neil and his associates, and heard their offers and overtures. And the Patriarch of Ireland did meet him there, who was a Scotchman born, and was blind of both his eyes, and yet had been divers times at Rome by post. He did great honour to the ambassador, and conveyed him to see St Patrick's purgatory, which is like an old coal-pit which has taken fire by reason of the smoke that came out of the hole,' &c — *Memoirs of Sir James Melville*, p 15

than 900 English men-at-arms, and 500 light Irish horse; and it is enough to say for him, that with this small force he accomplished his task. The State Paper Office contains many of his letters, notes, and loose memoranda. The handwriting and the spelling are alike frightful; but the meaning, when at last arrived at, conveys an impression of resolute strength, unequalled in any other despatches of the time; and the respect becomes intelligible with which his name was ever mentioned even by the Irish themselves.

For two years he governed. In that time he cut roads through forests, and made bogs passable. Castles rose as if by magic in the dangerous districts. The harbours were cleared, the outlaws banished, the chiefs not driven by cruelty, but drawn with a hand which they could not resist, into peace. O'Connor and O'More, two of the most troublesome, were caught, tried for treason, and their lands taken from them. But when Bellingham had made them feel that he was stronger than they, he restored O'Connor to liberty and his estates. The laws which interfered with the marriages of English and Irish, and forbade the inheritance of half-breeds, were relaxed or abolished; while mere robbery, as distinct from political conspiracy, was inexorably punished. A party of high-born marauders, who had committed an outrage in the Pale, took refuge in Thomond. O'Brien applied for their pardon, and O'Brien was one of the strongest of the Irish nobles.

Bellingham answered him thus:

'Your assured friend warns you, if you list so to

take it. Of this one thing I will assure you, that those that will most entice you to take other men's causes in hand, will be the first that shall leave you if ye have need. As heretofore I have declared unto you, whatsoever he be that shall, with manifest invasion, enter, burn, and destroy the King's people, I will no more suffer it than to have my heart torn out of my body. When the King's subjects commit such offences, they are traitors and rebels, and so I will take them and use them. My Lord, this privilege I challenge, on the King my master's duty, that what of gentleness I require touching the King's affairs, it be taken and weighed as a commandment.'<sup>1</sup>

He advised that the offenders should be sent in upon the instant, and to advice so given it was prudent to submit

Lord Ormond had died, leaving his heir a minor in England. St Leger, or some one about the council who took the Irish view of things, thought the presence of a chief of a clan indispensable for their good behaviour, and sent him over. Bellingham protested. It would have been better, he said, to have kept him where he was, and brought him up with English habits. 'Authority, it was thought, would not take place without him. I pray God,' continued Bellingham, 'rather these eyes of mine should be shut up than it should be proved true; or that during the time of my deputation, I should not make a horse-boy sent from me to do as much as

---

<sup>1</sup> Bellingham to O'Brien; *Irish MSS.* Edward VI vol 1. State Paper

any should do that brought not good authority with him, how great soever they were in the land. I will not say it shall be the first day; but in small time, God willing, it shall be done with ease'<sup>1</sup>

There were few arrests; no hangings,\* except of thieves or murderers, no forays or terrible examples—only the resolutely expressed will of a man who intended to be obeyed, and whom men found it wiser to obey than to provoke. 'There was never deputy in the realm,' wrote an Irish gentleman to the Protector, 'that went the right way as he doth, both for the setting forth of God's word and his honour, and the honour of the King's Majesty to his Grace's commodity and the weal of his subjects'<sup>2</sup> One special point was noted of him: a friend of Cecil's, reporting afterwards on the state of the country, said—'For the short time Mr Bellingham had the charge here he did exceeding much good, as all men report. He was a perfect good justice, and departed hence with clean hands.'<sup>3</sup> With clean hands—the one man in public employment of whom perhaps such words could be used. His successes, so far as they can be seen, were chiefly due to the woodman, the roadmaker, and the mason. His universal system was to make the country passable, to build stout fortresses, and to place in them garrisons on whom he could depend; and, this done, everything was done. The castle at Athlone

---

<sup>1</sup> *Lish MSS* Edward VI vol 1 State Paper Office

<sup>2</sup> Richard Brasier to the Protector *Lish MSS* Ibid

<sup>3</sup> Wood to Cecil. *Lish MSS* Ibid



overawed the line of the Shannon ; Sir Andrew Brereton was set down at Lecale with a colony of settlers within view of the Earl of Tyrone ; another stronghold was built in Roscommon, another at Cork ; soldiers of Bellingham's own metal were placed in command, and that was enough.

The Irish Council, unused to the presence of such a man, were troubled with him, especially as he went his own way, careless of traditions, and not always respectful to objectors. Chancellor Allen, who had seen other deputies fall into misfortune through neglect of his advice, failed to understand that, while he had a right to guide those who were less wise than himself, his business was to obey Sir Edward Bellingham ; still less could Allen comprehend why Sir Edward, when he obtruded his opinion, should 'vilpend him.'

'My Lord Deputy,' he said, 'is the best man of war that ever I saw in Ireland, having since his coming luther done more service to the King than was done—after the repressing of the Geraldines—in all the King's father's lifetime, notwithstanding all his charges' 'Nevertheless,' the Chancellor complained, 'it is as well to have no council. He doth all himself. They be but a shadow, as a corpse without life or spirit. He doth all himself, and no man dare say the contrary, except sometimes little I, and that seldom. Nay, he saith at times that the King hath not so great an enemy in Ireland as the council is ; and if they were hanged, it were a good turn. Sometimes, when he committeth a man

in anger to ward, he will say, 'Content thyself, for I do no worse to thee than I will do to the best of the council if he displease me.''<sup>1</sup>

Yet Allen had a true eye for merit; he had seen others in Bellingham's place filling their own coffers—making parties among the Irish, and lending themselves to the worst vices of the country. But Bellingham was pure. The Chancellor admitted that he could see but one fault in him—that he sought 'to rule alone.'<sup>2</sup>

In the change of religion—since a change there was to be—the deputy proceeded with the same firmness; and although wilder task was never imposed on any man than the introduction of Protestantism with a high hand among the Irish, even here he was not wholly unsuccessful. Fitzwilliam, a priest of St Patrick's, and a personal friend of the deputy, said mass there after it was prohibited. 'Mr Fitzwilliam,' he wrote, 'where I am informed that you have gone about to infringe the King's Majesty's injunctions, being moved of charity, I require you to omit so to do, and by authority I command you, as a thing that may not be suffered, you incite nor stir no such schism amongst the King's faithful and Christian subjects; for, if you do, as by likelihood you are incited to do it, thinking, through friendship, it shall be overpassed in your behalf, trust me, as they say commonly, it shall not go with you.'<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Allen to the Council in London. *Irish MSS.* Edward VI vol i. State Paper Office.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid*

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

Sir Edward was obeyed, being a man to whom disobedience was difficult; only it seems he gave no encouragement to the preachers. It was enough if the literal injunctions of the home Government were observed, without consigning the pulpits to voluble rhetoricians who turned their congregations into swarms of exasperated hornets.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> St Leger, at the end of 1549, informed the council 'that there had been but one sermon made in the country for three years, and that by the Bishop of Meath'—*MS.* Ibid.—That one experiment was enough to deter Bellingham from encouraging a second. The Bishop, after the first venture had been made, wrote a piteous account of the prospects of Protestantism, and of his own prospects, if he persisted.

'After most hearty commendation, in like manner I thank you for your letter, and where by the same ye wished me to be defended from ill tongues—*res est potius optabilis quam speranda*. Ye have not heard such rumours as is here all the country over against me, as my friends doth shew me. One gentlewoman, unto whom I did christen a man child which beareth my name, came in great council to a friend of mine, desiring how she might find means to change her child's name. And he asked her why? and she said, because I would not have him bear the name of an heretic. A gentleman dwelling nigh unto me forbade his wife, which would have sent her child to be confirmed by me, so

to do, saying, his child should not be confirmed by him that denied the sacrament of the altar. A friend of mine rehearsing at the market that I would preach the next Sunday, divers answered they would not come thereat, lest they should learn to be heretics. One of the lawyers declared to a multitude that it was great pity that I was not burned for I preached heresy, so was I worthy, therefore, and if I preached right, yet was I worthy, for that I kept the truth from knowledge. This gentleman loveth no sodden meat, nor can sail but only of roasting. One of our judges said to myself that it should be proved in my face that I preached against learning. A beneficed man of mine own promotion came unto me weeping, and desired that he might declare his mind unto me without my displeasure. I said, I was well content. My Lord said he, before ye went last to Dublin, ye were the best beloved man in your diocese that ever came into it and now ye are the worst beloved that ever came here. I asked wherefore. Why, said he, for ye have taken open part with the heretics, and preached against the sacrament of

Thus, after he had been in Ireland a year and a half, Walter Cowley, the Clerk of the Crown, was able to congratulate Bellingham on having doubled 'the King's possessions, power, obedience, and subjects in the realm, in respect as it was at his arrival.' 'The King having a force in each quarter of the country, will they or nill they,' Cowley said, 'the people must obey;' and if only 'they could now be also put from idleness,' 'if they could be compelled to inhabit and fall to husbandry, to put away their assemblies in harness, and take delight in wealth and quiet, Ireland in a little time would be as obedient and quiet as Wales.'

Unhappily for Ireland, perhaps fortunately for his own reputation, Sir Edward Bellingham, in the height of his success, was called away, it would seem by illness

1549. In the summer of 1549 his name disappears

from among the State Papers. In the autumn he was dead. The effect was immediate. The chiefs felt the rein drop loose upon their necks; French agents were again busy; and in the interregnum which followed, the Irish Council found themselves less able to do without their master than their master had been able

the altar, and deny saints, and will make us worse than Jews. If the county wist how, they would eat you. He besought me to take heed of myself, for he feared more than he durst tell me. He said, Ye have more curses than ye have hairs in your head, and I advisè you, for Chrst's sake, not to preach as I hear ye will do. Hereby ye may

perceive what case I am in, but put all to God. And now, as mine especial friend, and a man to whom my heart beareth earnest affection, I beseech you give me your advice, nCt writing ygur name for chaunce — The Bishop of Meath to Sir Edward Bellingham. *Irish MSS* Edward VI. vol. 1. State Paper Office.

to dispense with them. Allen having with great difficulty induced the Earl of Desmond to come to him, learnt that the country was in full relapse into disorder. 'The rough handling of the late deputy,' so Desmond said, had placed the chiefs 'in despair' of being able to continue their old habits. The natural hatred to the dominion of an alien race, the peril of religion, the promises of assistance from France and Scotland, with the opportunity created by the disorders in England, had led to a general combination through the whole island.<sup>1</sup>

The garrisons in the castles fell into loose habits when the master's eye was off them. <sup>1550.</sup> January. Their wages had fallen into arrear, and they became mutinous and profligate. There was 'neither service nor communion within any of the walls, and there were as many women, it was said, as there were men.'<sup>2</sup> Even such of the Irish as professed to be loyal began to be

<sup>1</sup> 'I asked the Earl what should be the cause of so great a combination of the wild Irish, and how long since the same had commenced. Whereunto he said the same conspiracy was concluded amongst them above a year past, only in the dread of the late deputy, which, with his rough handling of them, put them in such despair as they all conspired to join against him. To some others of council which I heard not he added the matter of religion. But, for my part, beside these causes, I judge they will the rather take the

opportunity to execute their malice, hearing not only of the continuance of the outward wars and loss of our forts, and specially of the late civil displeasures in England, but also hope and comfort and aid of the Scots, promised, as it is said, by the blind bishop that came from Scotland out of Rome'—Sir John Allen to his brother; January, 1550 *Irish MSS.* Edward VI vol. II. State Paper Office

<sup>2</sup> St Leger to the Council, September, 1550. *MS Ibid.*

‘haughty and strange.’ A ‘huge army’ of French was expected to land in the spring of 1550; and, unless the home Government could make peace with France, their rule in Ireland was once more likely to be near its end. But the peace, as has been related, was made. The intrigues ceased, the Irish had no longer hopes from abroad, and Bellingham had done his work so effectually, that without help they durst not stir.

August.

In August, St Leger, the peace-maker, was restored to his place, and a new chapter in the administration of the country was about to commence. Ireland had long been a drain upon the English finances. The stream was now to flow the other way, and, with an enchanter’s wand waving over the mint, it was to become an abundant fountain of revenue. The Irish standard had been always lower than the English. When the English silver was eleven ounces fine to one of alloy, the Irish had been eight ounces fine to four of alloy. The mines in Wicklow and Arklow having been brought again into working in the late reign, Henry VIII. had hoped that with the silver raised out of them, and with a mint upon the spot, the Irish Government might at least pay their own expenses. But the plan had not yet come into operation; the Irish money had latterly been coined in England; and in the depreciation in the last three years of the reign, the Irish standard had followed the English, the harp-groats, like the latest issues in England, being half pure and half alloy.<sup>1</sup> On

---

<sup>1</sup> *State Papers*, vol. III, p. 534.

the conclusion of the peace with France, the experiment was to be tried on a grander scale

By a resolution of the English council, on the 8th of July, 1550, it was determined that July 8  
a mint should be forthwith established in Ireland, and that it should be let out to farm for twelve months on the following conditions —

1. That the King should be at no manner of charge, great or small.

2. That the King should have thirteen shillings and fourpence clear out of every pound weight that should be coined.

3 That the bullion to be coined should be provided from other countries, and not from England or Ireland.

4. That by this means the sum of 24,000*l* at the least should be advanced to the King's Majesty within twelve months.

5 That the King should appoint a master of assays and a controller <sup>1</sup>

An indenture was drawn on the 9th of August.  
August, between the council and Martin Perry, granting to Perry the management of the establishment on these terms; the money to be made was to be four ounces fine with eight of alloy The pound weight of silver, if coined at a pure standard, yielded forty-eight shillings, with two-thirds of alloy, therefore, it would produce one hundred and forty-four; <sup>2</sup> and if the King

<sup>1</sup> *Privy Council Register MS.* | Ruding, describing the indenture

<sup>2</sup> See RUDING, vol II p 105. | and the proportions of alloy, says

was to make twenty-four thousand pounds by receiving thirteen shillings and fourpence on every seven pounds four shillings that were issued, three hundred thousand pounds' worth of base coin would be let out over the Irish people in a single year.

Sir Edward Bellingham had shown the Irish one aspect of English administration. The home Government were preparing to show them another. The seed was sown, the harvest would be certain, and not distant. It would not, however, be gathered in by Sir Anthony St Leger, whose footing in the now swollen waters was almost instantly lost. The Lords of the Council, more anxious for the purity of the gospel than of the currency, charged St Leger especially to keep pace with the movements in England. Vainly he protested that 'he would sooner be sent to Spain.' They told him that he must go to Ireland, there to follow his vocation of making rough things smooth.

He went, and proceeded at once to follow his old course of attempting to rule the Irish by pleasing them. Among his first acts he permitted high mass to be said at Christ's Church, in Dublin, and was himself present at the service.<sup>1</sup> 'To make a face of conformity he put

---

that the pound weight was to be made into a hundred and forty-four *groats*, in which statement, it seems, he must have mistaken the word. The pound weight of pure silver would produce a hundred and forty-four pure *groats*, but the two pounds of alloy, which he admits

were added to it, must have produced twice as many more

<sup>1</sup> Sir Anthony, upon his arrival, went to the chief church of this nation, and there, after the old sort, offered to the altar of stone, to the great comfort of his too many like Papists and the discouragement of



out proclamations' for the use of the Prayer-book ; but the Prayer-book was not used, and the disobedience was not noticed. The Archbishop of Dublin expostulated St Leger put him off with a ' Go to, go to, your matters of religion' will mar all ; ' and placed in his hands ' a little book to read,' which he found ' so poisoned as he had never seen to maintain the mass, with transubstantiation and other naughtiness.'<sup>1</sup>

Bellingham's captains, too, troubled the new deputy with acting out their old instructions Sir Andrew Brereton, one of the best of them, had been a thorn in the side of the Earl of Tyrone. No Bishop of Monluc, or other doubtful ecclesiastic, could land in Ulster but what Brereton had his eye on him ; no French emissary could leave Tyrone's castle but what Brereton would attempt to waylay him and relieve him of his despatches ; and he had succeeded in intercepting one letter in which the Earl invited a French invasion,<sup>2</sup> and undertook especially to betray Brereton and destroy the Lecale colony.<sup>3</sup>

---

the professors of the gospel —The Archbishop of Dublin to the English Council *Irish MSS.* Edward VI vol. iii State Paper Office.

<sup>1</sup> Ibid

<sup>2</sup> ' Tyrone desired the French King to come with his power, and if he would so prepare to do, to help him to drive out the Jewish Englishmen out of Ireland, who were such as did nothing to the country but cumber the same and live upon the

flesh that was in it, nether observing fast-days nor regarding the solemn devotion of the blessed mass or other ceremony of the Church, the French King should find him, the Earl, ready to help him with his men and all the friends he could make.'—Complaints of Sir Andrew Brereton *Irish MSS* vol iii State Paper Office

<sup>3</sup> Ibid.

September. When the expectations from France came to nothing, the Earl, unable to endure longer so insulting a surveillance, laid a claim to Brereton's lands, and sent a troop of kernes to drive his cattle. The English commander, waiting till they had commenced work, set upon them, and cut half of them to pieces, two brothers of Tyrone being among the slain.

St Leger's system could not prosper with a Brereton in command of troops. The Irish lords, who appreciated the merits of a deputy who allowed them their own way, waited on him at Dublin with congratulations on his appointment, and Tyrone took the opportunity of pressing his complaints. Brereton being called on for explanations, drew out a statement of the Earl's misdoings. He came to Dublin, and being told before the Irish Council that he was accused by Tyrone of murder, 'he said he would make answer to no traitor, threw his book upon the board, and desired that the same might be openly read.' The council—they shall relate their own behaviour—'considering the same Earl to be a frail man, and not yet all of the perfectest subject, and thinking, should he know the talk of the same Mr Brereton, having of his friends and servants standing by—for it was in the open council-house—it might be a means to cause him and others of his sort and small knowledge to revolt from their duties and refuse to come to councils'—recommended moderation. It was better to answer Tyrone's complaint meekly. 'Such handling of wild men had done much harm in Ireland.' 'They would

read the book, and do therein as should stand with their duties.'

Presently the Earl, foaming with indignation, appeared in person. 'He took the name of traitor very unkindly,' and demanded justice; and the end of it was that Brereton was reprimanded and deprived of his rank; the council apologized for his indiscretion; and a young St Leger of more convenient humour was sent to govern the northern colony.<sup>1</sup>

The humouring an Irish chief at the expense of an honest man might have been forgiven; but St Leger was less successful than before in keeping down the expenditure, and the home Government, trusting to the supplies from the mint, sent no remittances. His applications for money were in consequence vexatiously frequent. 'Religion' did not prosper with him; and the reviving uncertainty of the relations between England and France, in the winter of 1550-51, made the presence of a stronger hand desirable. Lord Cobham was first thought of as a fit person. On second thoughts, however, it was determined not immediately to supersede St Leger. Sir James Crofts was sent over with troops and ships under his separate command, and brought instructions to survey the southern harbours, and, wherever possible, to fortify them. Crofts arrived in March, 1551. In April he went, as he was directed, into Munster, and with him went a certain John Wood,

---

<sup>1</sup> The Deputy and Council to Cecil. *Irish MSS.* Edward VI. vol. ii. State Paper Office

who sent an account of the journey to Sir Wilham Cecil, with maps and plans.

1551. 'In this voyage,' said Wood, 'I have seen,  
April amongst others, two goodly havens at Cork and Kinsale, as by the plots thereof shall presently appear unto you, and also a large and fruitful country of itself; but the most thereof uninhabited, and the land wasted by evil dissensions, that it is pity to behold: which disorder hath continued of a long time by want of justice, insomuch that the most part of the gentlemen, yea, I might say all, be thieves or maintainers of thieves, which thing themselves will not let to confess, as I have presently heard; and have no other way to excuse their faults but that lack of justice forceth them to keep such people as may resist their neighbours, and revenge wrong with wrong, without which they are not able to live. Thus the poor be continually overrun, bereft of their lives, and spoiled of their goods; and no marvel, for neither is God's law nor the King's known nor obeyed. The father is at war with the son, the son with the father, brother with brother, and so forth. Wedlock is not had in any price; whoredom is counted as no offence; and so throughout the realm in effect vice hath the upper hand, and virtue is nothing at all regarded. The noblemen—at the least sundry of them—hang or pardon at their pleasure, whether it be upon a privilege granted unto them, or upon an usurped power, I know not; but, undoubtedly, it is needful to be reformed. There is no cause why these people should be out of order more than others. They have shape and

understanding, and are meet to be framed to as good purpose as any other the King's subjects, if the like order were taken and executed as in England and other commonwealths.'<sup>1</sup>

Such was Ireland in 1551. But English order was not for the moment likely to improve it. In the early summer St Leger was finally recalled. Sir James Crofts was appointed his successor, and entered office when the industry of Martin Perry was about to produce its fruits

In July the rise of prices commenced. Crofts, surrounded by theorists, who assured him that the remedy for this and all other inconveniences was abundance of money, at first was simply perplexed. By Nov. 1 November the truth was so far breaking upon him, that he protested against a continuance of the debasement, and entreated that the standard might be restored. The mischief had only commenced; yet even then he represented that the soldiers could no longer live upon their wages. The countrymen so suspected the money, that they would not take it upon any terms. The fortifications in the south were at a stand-still; the workmen demanded to be paid in silver, not in silvered brass. 'The town of Dublin and the whole English army would be destroyed for want of victuals if a remedy were not provided.'<sup>2</sup>

The remedy would be to cry down the money to its true value, as had been done at home, and to issue no

---

<sup>1</sup> Wood to Cecil: *Irish MSS.* Edward VI vol ii

<sup>2</sup> Crofts to the English Council, November 1, 1551. *Irish MSS.* vol. iii.

more of it—the last thing which the home Government intended. The Irish mint was to indemnify them for the loss of the sluices which they had been forced to close in England. They replied to Crofts' remonstrances, therefore, with a letter of advice.

'The beginnings of all things in which we are to prosper,' wrote Northumberland or one of his satellites, 'must have their foundation upon God; and, therefore, principally, the Christian religion must, as far forth as may, be planted and restored, the favourers and promoters thereof esteemed and cherished, and the hinderers dismayed.' This was the first point to which Crofts was to attend. Next he was to see that the laws of the realm should be better obeyed; and especially that 'the King's revenue' should be more diligently looked to, his rents be properly collected, his woods and forests attended to, and the accounts of his bailiffs duly audited. The money was a secondary question; the reformation of the coin was impossible, and the calling down objectionable. The deputy might consult the principal people in the country about it; and in the mean time there were the jewels and plate in the churches. He might take those; and if he could not pay the soldiers, he might send them away.<sup>1</sup>

Sir James Crofts was well inclined to the Reformation, and under Mary almost lost his life for it. Yet, to answer the clamours of defrauded tradesmen and labourers, and soldiers too justly mutinous, with a text

---

<sup>1</sup> The English Council to Sir James Crofts: *Irish MSS* vol. III.

or a homily, was a task for which he had no disposition. He was 'a man not learned,' he replied; and they had divines for such purposes.<sup>1</sup> 'The matter of the currency, in his simple opinion, was so apparent, it needed not to be consulted upon, as a proof of which he stated that to keep the army from starving, he had been driven, as the council at home had been driven, to purveying. 'We have forced the people for the time,' he said, 'to take seven shillings for that measure of corn which they sell for a mark, and twelve shillings for the beef which they sell for fifty-three shillings and fourpence. These things cannot be borne without grudge, neither is it possible it should continue.'

In obedience to his orders, however, the <sup>1552.</sup> deputy invited representatives of the indus- <sup>January.</sup> trious classes in Ireland to Dublin, to discuss the first principles of commercial economy.

'I sent,' he reported after the meeting, 'for inhabitants of Dublin, Cork, Limerick, Waterford, and Drogheda, to know the causes of the dearth of corn and cattle, and how the same might be remedied. I declared unto them how the merchants were content to sell iron, salt, coal, and other necessities, if they might buy wine and corn as they were wont to do. And thereof grew a confusion in argument, that when the merchant should need for his house not past two or three bushels of corn, he could not upon so small an exchange live; and likewise the farmer that should have need of salts, shoes, cloth,

---

<sup>1</sup> Crofts to Cecil: *Irish MSS.* *Ibid.*

iron, hops, and such others, could not make so many divisions of his grain, neither should he at all times need that which the merchants of necessity must sell. So it was that money must serve for the common exchange.'

But why, the question then rose, must money be only of gold and silver? why not of leather or of brass? Was it for the 'sovereign virtue' of the precious metals? was it for their cleanliness in handling? Plain only it was that when the coin was pure, all men sought for it; when it was corrupt, all men detested it. It might have been thought 'that, when the King's stamp was on the coin, it should be received of every man as it was proclaimed.' But experience showed that it was not so; and experience showed further, that good and bad money, though stamped alike, could not exist together; the bad consumed the good. One of the party then observed keenly, 'that among merchants, when cloth, silk, and other wares are sold, the owners do set on their marks, and upon proof made of the goodness of the wares and the making, with the true weight and measure, it cometh to pass that after such credit won there needeth no more but shew the mark, and sell with the best; and if the makers of such wares do after make them worse, their trade is lost, insomuch as if after they would reform the same fault, it will ask time before credit be won again.'

The Government was the merchant, the coin was the ware, the King's head was the mark. Prices had risen with bad money. Whether it was better that



money should be scarce or plenty the meeting would not venture to say, only it must be pure. 'By the whole consent of the world gold and silver had gotten the estimation above other metals as meetest to make money of, and that estimation could not be altered by one little corner of the world, though it had risen but upon a fantastical opinion, when indeed it was grounded upon reason, according to the gifts that nature had wrought in those metals.'

The meeting concluded, therefore, that if the currency could not honestly be restored, they preferred the least of two evils, and desired that it should be immediately called down to its market valuation<sup>1</sup>

The opinion of the country had been taken, as the English council recommended, and the result was before them; but either it was conveyed in too abstract a language, or the mint had not yet yielded the full sum which they intended to take from it. They waited for an increase of suffering, and prices continued to rise and rise.

'The measure of corn that was wont to be at two or three shillings,' and when Crofts landed in March, 1551, was 'at six shillings and eightpence,' was sold in March, 1552, for 'thirty shillings' 'A cow that had been worth six shillings and eightpence sold for forty shillings; six herrings for a groat; a cow-hide for ten or twelve shillings; a tonne of Gas-

<sup>1</sup> Memoranda of the Irish Council—Sir James Crofts to the Duke of Northumberland, December, 1551. *Irish MSS.* Edward VI. vol. in State Paper Office.

con wine for twelve pounds, of Spanish wine for twenty-four pounds.’<sup>1</sup> The Irish beyond the Pale suffered the least. ‘Every lord caused his people to keep their victuals within the country,’ and the Irishman proper had little use for money—‘he cared only for his belly, and that not delicately.’<sup>2</sup> In Dublin, Meath, and Kildare schools were shut up; servants were turned away, from the cost of maintaining them; artisans and tradesmen would take no more apprentices: at last the markets were closed. Those who before had bought little at high prices could now buy nothing at any price; and fever followed in the rear of famine. ‘All sorts of people,’ Crofts passionately expostulated, ‘cry for redress at my hands.’ The actual cause of their misery they did not know; ‘and no marvel,’ ‘when the wisest were blinded;’ but they understood that it came from England and from English rule; ‘and now,’ Crofts said, ‘they do collect all the enormities that have grown in so many years, so that there is among them such hatred, such disquietures of mind, such wretchedness upon the poor men and artificers, that all the crafts must decay, and towns turn to ruin, and all things either be in common, or each live by others’ spoil; and thereof must needs follow slaughter, famine, and all kinds of misery.’<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Before the depreciation of the currency in England Gascon wine was sold for 4*l* 13*s* 4*d* a tun, Spanish wine for 7*l* 8*s*—34 and 35 Henry VIII. cap 7.

<sup>2</sup> Crofts to Cecil *Irish MSS.* vol 14

<sup>3</sup> Crofts to Cecil, March 14  
Ibid

The people had been tried far, yet still it was not enough. The reply which the home Government now vouchsafed was a cargo of German Protestants, whom they sent over to work the silver mines in Wicklow. When a sufficient mass of bullion had been raised, the complaints of the Irish might be considered. The Germans, the distracted deputy reported in return, were idle vagabonds, not worth their keep; the currency would run foul till the day of judgment if he was to wait till it was purified through labour of theirs; and then the council said that they were sorry, and would hope and would see about things, but the King's Government must be carried on, and money they had none. But the wail of the injured people rose at last in tones too piteous to be neglected; and in June, Northumberland made up his mind that he June. could persist no longer.

Three thousand pounds' weight of bullion were sent from the Tower to Dublin, with orders to Perry to call down the coin, buy it in at the reduced valuation, and make a new issue at the old standard;<sup>1</sup> while, to turn

<sup>1</sup> Such I endeavour in charity to believe to be the meaning of a vaguely-expressed entry in the *Privy Council Register*. Edward, however, in his *Journal*, with the date of June 10, 1552, says —

'Whereas it was agreed that there should be a pay now made to Ireland of 5000*l*, and then the money to be cried down; it was ap-

pointed that 3000 lbs weight which I had in the Tower should be carried thither and coined at 3 denar fine, and that incontinent, the coin should be cried down.' The question rises what Edward meant by 3 denar fine. Was it three-pence in the shilling, or 3 oz fine to 9 oz of alloy? or was it three-pence in the groat? a coin more

the current of Irish feeling, the council passed a resolution to restore Gerald Fitzgerald, the hero of Celtic romance, to his estates and country.

---

honest than Ireland had seen for a		such matters would lead one to
century Experience of the general		choose the worst interpretation.
proceedings of the Government in		

## CHAPTER XXIX.

### NORTHUMBERLAND'S CONSPIRACY.

**A** MIDST the wreck of ancient institutions, the misery of the people, and the moral and social anarchy by which the nation was disintegrated, thoughtful persons in England could not fail by this time to be asking themselves what they had gained by the Reformation.

A national reformation, if the name is more than a mockery, implies the transfer of power, power spiritual, power political, from the ignoble to the noble, from the incapable to the capable, from the ignorant to the wise. It implies a recovered perception in all classes, from highest to lowest, of the infinite excellence of right, the infinite hatefulness of wrong.

The movement commenced by Henry VIII., judged by its present results, had brought the country at last into the hands of mere adventurers. The people had exchanged a superstition which, in its grossest abuses, prescribed some shadow of respect for obedience, for a superstition which merged obedience in speculative belief; and under that baneful influence, not only the

higher virtues of self-sacrifice, but the commonest duties of probity and morality, were disappearing. Private life was infected with impurity to which the licentiousness of the Catholic clergy appeared like innocence. The Government was corrupt, the courts of law were venal. The trading classes cared only to grow rich. The multitude were mutinous from oppression. Among the good who remained unpolluted, the best were still to be found on the Reforming side. Lever, Latimer, Ridley, Cranmer, held on unflinching to their convictions, although with hearts aching and intellects perplexed; but their influence was slight and their numbers small; and Protestants who were worthy of the name which they bore were fewer far, in these their days of prosperity, than when the bishops were hunting them out for the stake. The better order of commonplace men, who had a conscience, but no especial depth of insight—who had small sense of spiritual things, but a strong perception of human rascality—looked on in a stern and growing indignation, and, judging the tree by its fruits, waited their opportunity for reaction.

‘Alas, poor child,’ said a Hampshire gentleman, of Edward, ‘unknown it is to him what Acts are made now-a-days; when he comes of age he will see another rule and hang up an hundred heretic knaves.’ John Bale replied to ‘the frantic Papist’ with interested indignation; he wrote a pamphlet with a dedication to Northumberland, whom he compared to Moses,<sup>1</sup> and

---

<sup>1</sup> ‘Considering in your noble religious zeal in God’s cause which Grace the same mighty, fervent, and I have diligently marked in Moses,

earned a bishopric for his reward.<sup>1</sup> But the words expressed a deep and general feeling; and, had the coming of age taken place, might not impossibly have proved true. Edward showed no symptoms of wavering in religion; but he was gaining an insight beyond his years into the diseases of the realm, which threatened danger to those who had abused his childhood. He had followed and noted down the successive tamperings with the currency. He was aware of his debts, and of the scandal of them; and we have seen him seeking political information without the knowledge of the council. He understood the necessity of economizing the expenditure, of scrutinizing the administration of the revenues, and of punishing fraud.<sup>2</sup> He could actively interfere but little, but the little was in the right direction. The excessive table allowances for the household were reduced. Irregular claims for fees, which had grown up in the minority, were disallowed; the wardrobe charges were cut down; the garrisons of the forts and the Irish army were diminished, according to a schedule which Edward himself had the reputation of devising.<sup>3</sup> Further, he

---

the servant of God.'—STRYPE, vol iv p 39

<sup>1</sup> Ossory in Ireland.

<sup>2</sup> See especially a remarkable Discourse on the Reformation of Abuses, printed by Burnet, and a draft of provisions which Edward intended for insertion in his will.—STRYPE, vol iv p 120 If Edward really wrote or dictated those two papers, the 'Miracle of Nature'

was no exaggerated description of him I am bound to add, however, that his *Essays and Exercises*, a volume of which remains in MS in the British Museum, show nothing beyond the ordinary ability of a clever boy

<sup>3</sup> Device for the payment of the King's Debts. STRYPE's *Memorials*, vol iii p 594 Compare EDWARD'S *Journal*, 1552

began to inquire into the daily transactions of the council. He required notice beforehand of the business, with which the council was to be occupied, and an account was given in to him each Saturday of the proceedings of the week: while in a rough draft of his will which he dictated to Sir William Petre in the year which preceded his death, he showed the silent thought with which he had marked the events of his boyhood. Should his successor, like himself, be a minor, his executors, unlike his father's, should meddle with no wars unless the country was invaded. They should alter no part of 'religion;' they should observe his 'device' for the payment of his debts, and use all means for their early settlement; and there should be no return of extravagance in the household.<sup>1</sup> More remarkable is an imperfect fragment on the condition of England

Following, boylike, the Platonic analogy between the body of the individual and the body politic, Edward saw in all men the members of a common organization, where each was to work, and each ought to be contented with the moderate gratification of his own desires. The country required an order of gentlemen, but gentlemen should not have so much as they had in France, where the peasantry was of no value. In a well-ordered commonwealth no one should have more than the proportion of the general stock would bear. In the body no member had too much or too little; in the commonwealth every man should have enough for healthy support, not

---

<sup>1</sup> STYKE, vol. IV. p. 120.



enough for indulgence. Again, as every member of the body was obliged 'to work and take pains,' so there should be no unit in the commonwealth which was not 'laboursome in his vocation.' 'The gentleman should do service in his country, the serving-man should wait diligently on his master, the artisan should work at his trade, the husbandman at his tillage, the merchant in passing the tempests;' the vagabond should be banished as 'the superfluous humour of the body,' 'the spittle and filth which is put out by the strength of nature.'

Looking at England, however, as England was, the young King saw 'all things out of order.' 'Farming gentlemen and clerking knights,' neglecting their duties as overseers of the people, 'were exercising the gain of living.' 'They would have their twenty miles square of their own land or of their own farms.' Artificers and clothiers no longer worked honestly; the necessities of life had risen in price, and the labourers had raised their wages, 'whereby to recompense the loss of things they bought.' The country swarmed with vagabonds; and those who broke the laws escaped punishment by bribery or through foolish pity. The lawyers, and even the judges, were corrupt. Peace and order were violated by religious dissensions and universal neglect of the law. Offices of trust were bought and sold; benefices impropriated, tillage-ground turned to pasture, 'not considering the sustaining of men.' The poor were robbed by the enclosures; and extravagance in dress and idle luxury of living were eating like ulcers into the State. These were the vices of the age: nor

were they likely, as Edward thought, to yield in any way to the most correct formula of justification. 'The 'medicines to cure these sores' were to be looked for in good education, good laws, and 'just execution of the laws without respect of persons, in the example of rulers, the punishment of misdoers, and the encouragement of the good.' Corrupt magistrates should be deposed, seeing that those who were themselves guilty would not enforce the laws against their own faults; and all gentlemen and noblemen should be compelled to reside on their estates, and fulfil the duties of their place<sup>1</sup>

A king who at fifteen could sketch the work which was before him so distinctly, would in a few years have demanded a sharp account of the stewardship of the Duke of Northumberland. Unfortunately for the country, those who would have assisted him in commencing his intended improvements, Lord Derby, Lord Oxford, Lord Huntingdon, Lord Sussex, or Lord Paget, were far away in the country, sitting gloomily inactive till a change of times. Ridley was working manfully, as we have seen, in restoring the London hospitals; but Cranmer, after the destruction of Somerset, shrunk from confronting Northumberland; and, the Liturgy being completed, he was now spending his strength in the pursuit of objects which were either unattainable or would have been mischievous if attained. In the spring of 1552 he was endeavouring to take away the reproach of Protestantism by bringing the Reformed Churches

---

<sup>1</sup> Discourse on the Reformation of Abuses. BURNET'S *Collectanea*.

to an agreement. Edward offered his kingdom as an asylum for a Protestant synod, which might meet at Oxford or Cambridge; and the Archbishop wrote to Calvin and Melancthon, entreating their support. But oil and water would combine before Zuinglian and Lutheran would acquiesce in common formulas. Protestants, as Calvin assured him, hated each other far too heartily.<sup>1</sup> In another direction his exertions were equally unprofitable; and he was acting here under Calvin's advice.

The interference of the Church officials in the private concerns of the people had been among the chief provoking causes of the original revolt under Henry. The laity had flung off the yoke of the clergy. The ministers of the new order, mistaking the character of the change, imagined that the privileges and powers of the Catholic priesthood would be transferred to themselves. As teachers of 'the truth,' they were the exponents, in their own eyes, of the divine law, and they demanded the right to punish sin by spiritual censures—spiritual censures enforced by secular penalties.

Mankind, notwithstanding their frailties, are theoretically loyal to goodness; and, could there have been any security that the clergy would have confined their prosecutions to acts of immorality, that desire might perhaps have to some extent been indulged. But to the Church of Calvin, as well as to the Church of Rome, the darkest breach of the moral law was venial in com-

---

<sup>1</sup> Correspondence between Cranmer, Calvin, and Melancthon · *Epistolæ Tigurinæ*.

parison with errors of opinion; and the consequence which England had to expect from a restoration of clerical authority might be seen in the language of one who was loudest in the demand for it. John Knox, the shrewdest and one of the noblest of the Reformers, did not conceal his opinion that Gardiner, Bonner, and Cuthbert Tunstal might have been justly put to death for nonconformity.<sup>1</sup> But Parliament had not refused absolutely to entertain the question. The Lords rejected, as we have seen, a scheme which would simply replace the bishops in the position which they had forfeited; but the old mixed commission of thirty-two had been re-established for the revision of the canon law; and in March, 1552, the commissioners would have made some progress, it was said, had not Ridley, and Goodrich, Bishop of Ely, who had succeeded Lord Rich as Chancellor, 'stood in the way with their worldly policy.'<sup>2</sup> The thirty-two were afterwards reduced to eight, and in the following November a fresh commission was appointed, consisting of Cranmer, Goodrich, Coxe, and Peter Martyr, with four lawyers and civilians. The

<sup>1</sup> 'God's justice,' says Knox, in his *Admonition to the Faithful in England*, 'is not wont to cut off wicked men till their iniquity is so manifest that their very flatterers cannot excuse it. If Stephen Gardiner, Cuthbert Tunstal, and butcherly Bonner, false bishops of Winchester, Durham, and London, had, for their false doctrines and traitorous acts, suffered death when they

justly deserved the same, then would Papists have alleged that they were men reformatable,' &c. In the Constitution of the Church of Scotland, which was drawn under Knox's influence, to say mass, or to hear it, was made a capital crime—under the authority of the text, 'The idolator shall die the death.'

<sup>2</sup> Micronius to Bullinger *Epistolæ Tigurinæ*.

work was allowed to devolve on the Archbishop, who, with the assistance of Foxe the Martyrologist, produced the still-born volume,<sup>1</sup> in which, as I have already mentioned, he claimed the continued privilege of sending obstinate heretics to the stake; and which remains to show to posterity the inability of the wisest of the clergy to comprehend their altered position. The King was already more clear-sighted than the Archbishop of Canterbury. He admitted the desirableness of discipline; 'so,' however, 'that those that should be executors of that discipline were men of tried honesty, wisdom, and judgment.' 'But because,' he said, 'those bishops who should execute it, some for Papistry, some for ignorance, some for age, some for their ill names, some for all those causes, were men unable to execute discipline, it was, therefore, a thing unmeet for such men.'<sup>2</sup>

Meanwhile, amidst discussions on the remedies of evils, the evils themselves for the most part continued. Discipline could not be restored. The King's abilities did not anticipate his majority; the revenues were still misapplied, the debts of the Crown still unpaid. Officials indeed in the interests of Northumberland were permitted to indemnify themselves for their services. Bishop Ponet, for instance, composed a catechism, which was ordered for general use, and was allowed a 'monopoly of the printing.'<sup>3</sup> But ordinary persons, servants,

---

<sup>1</sup> *The Reformatio Legum*

<sup>2</sup> Discourse on the Reformation of Abuses BURNET

<sup>3</sup> Northumberland to Cecil. *MS. Domestic*, Edward VI. vol. xv. State Paper Office.

artisans, tradesmen in public employment, 'fed upon the chameleon's dish,' and still cried in vain for their wages—it might be from prison.<sup>1</sup> Prices of provisions would not abate. Vainly the Duke of Northumberland reprimanded the Lord Mayor in the Guildhall—vainly butchers' carts were seized, and the meat was forfeited—vainly the dealers were threatened with the loss of their freedom and expulsion from the towns and cities;<sup>2</sup> the distrust and hatred of the administration were too strong for menace.

The churches, the lead having been torn from the roofs, crumbled into ruins. Parishes were still left without incumbents, or still provided with curates who were incapable or useless. 'A thousand pulpits in England were covered with dust.' In some, four sermons had

---

<sup>1</sup> The state of the ordnance department was but a specimen of the state of all the departments. On the 31d of August, 1552, the Master of the Ordnance wrote to Cecil —

'These be to beseech you for God's sake, charity's sake, yea, at this my contemplation, to help the miseries that be in the office of the ordnance for lack of money, as it is high time, being daily sundry and many poor men crying and calling for the same, to my no little grief, amongst the which is one named Charles Wolmar, gunpowder maker, now in very pitiful case, who is presently in the Counter, for that the rent of the house he dwelleth in is unpaid for a year and a half, which amounteth to 13 pounds and

odd money, which cometh by reason there hath been no money paid in this office a long time. The King's Majesty is charged with the rent thereof, being put there by the King's appointment, both for the making of gunpowder, when there is money to set him a work, and also to look to certain things of his Highness's there under his charge. I heartily pray you, seeing that the said poor man, as is great pity, is nevertheless troubled for this the King's Majesty's care, to move my Lords of the Council in that behalf. Sir, I pray you that I may have an answer hereof'—*MS Domestic*, Edward VI vol. xiv State Paper Office.

<sup>2</sup> STYKE'S *Memorials*

not been heard since the Preaching Friars were suppressed. 'If,' said Bernard Gilpin before the Court, 'if such a monster as Darvel Gatheren, the idol of Wales, could have set his hand to a bill to let the patron take the greater part of the profits, he might have had a benefice.'<sup>1</sup> In October, 1552, there was a menace of rebellion.<sup>2</sup> In December, the Government was threatened with some further unknown but imminent danger, which called out from Northumberland the most seeming admirable sentiments, which he knew so well how to affect, and could, perhaps, persuade himself that he felt.<sup>3</sup> In March, so general was the disaffection, that

<sup>1</sup> STRYPE'S *Memorials*.

<sup>2</sup> Northumberland to Cecil, *MS Domestic*, vol. xiv Edward VI State Paper Office

<sup>3</sup> He may have the benefit of his words so far as it will extend. He 'instantly and earnestly required the Lords of the Council to be vigilant for the preventing of these treasons so far as in them was possible to be foreseen,' 'that thereby,' he said, 'we may to our master and the world discharge ourselves like honest men, which, if we do not, having the warning that we have which cometh more of the goodness of God than of our search or care, the shame, the blame, the dishonour, the lack and reproach should, and may justly, be laid upon us to the world's end. The old saying which ever among wise men hath been holden for true, seemeth by our proceedings to be had either in derision or in small

memory, being comprehended in these words—*morā trahit periculum*—beseeching your Lordships, for the love of God and the love which we ought to have to our master and country, let us be careful, as becometh men of honour, truth, and honesty to be. For we be called in the time of trial and trouble; and therefore let us show ourselves to be as we ought to be; that is, to be ready, not only to spend our goods, but our lands and lives, for our master and our country, and to despise the flattering of ourselves with heaping riches upon riches, house upon house, building upon building, and all through the infection of *singulare commodum*. And let us not only ourselves beware and fly from it as the greatest pestilence in the commonwealth, let us also be of that fortitude and courage that we be not blinded and abused by those that be infected with these infirm-

martial law was proclaimed in many parts of the country.<sup>1</sup>

The periodic sore of bankruptcy was again running. The revenue still clung to the hands by which it was collected. Fines, confiscations, church plate, church lands, mint plunder, vanished like fairy gold. The languid efforts of the council to extricate themselves availed only to show how helpless was their embarrassment. In August, 1552, a bill fell due in Antwerp for 56,000*l*. Sir Thomas Gresham had been in the Low Countries in July; and as there was no money to meet the bill, he brought back with him a proposal for a further postponement on the usual terms; with a condition to which also the home Government was accustomed, that certain wares, fustians and diamonds, should be purchased of the lenders. Such transactions, however disguised, could have but one meaning: the bankers sold their jewels at their own prices; the English Government had to dispose of them for such prices as they would fetch in the market.

Northumberland was absent on the Scottish Border, and the council, freed from his authority, refused to submit to the imposition. They instructed Gresham to return to Antwerp and to say that the King would pay as soon as he could, but the times were troublesome, and he had other employment for his money: the bankers must be reasonable, and wait.

The trader sympathized with his order.<sup>2</sup> Gresham

---

ties' — Northumberland to the Council *MS Domestic*, Edward

VI. vol. xv State Paper Office.

<sup>1</sup> STREYKE'S *Memorials*



pledged his own credit for payment, and he wrote earnestly to Northumberland, through whom bargains of this kind could be best conducted, to save the country from shame. It was 'neither honourable nor profitable,' he said, to put off money-lenders with a high hand. The credit of England would 'fall as low as the credit of the Emperor,' who was at that moment 'offering 16 per cent. for money, and could not obtain it.' 'The King's father, who first began to take up money upon interest, did use to take his fee penny in jewels, copper, gunpowder, or fustian, and wares had been taken ever since, when the King had made any prolongation.' So long as the loans could not be repaid the system must be continued. Thus much, however, Gresham undertook to do. Lead was fetching a high price in Antwerp. If the export of lead from England was forbidden, the price would rise still higher, while at home it would fall. The Government might take possession of the trade and make its own profits; while he would himself remain on the Continent, and would watch the exchanges, and if he could be supplied with 1200*l.* a week he would clear the Crown of its foreign debts in two years.<sup>1</sup>

Northumberland listened to the advice upon the lead trade. He stopped the exports, and in two months learnt to his sorrow that 'princes' affairs in the Government of realms and merchants' trades were of two natures.'<sup>2</sup> The City of London extricated the Crown

---

<sup>1</sup> Gresham to Northumberland. | require you, to have in remembrance  
STEELE'S *Memoirs*, vol. iv. | the restraint lately taken for the

<sup>2</sup> 'I pray you, and most heartily | stay of lead through the realm, that

from its embarrassments by an advance of 40,000*l*. The bills were renewed, but only with a slight increase. In August, the entire debts at Antwerp were 108,000*l*. On the 3rd of October, after the renewal, they were something under 111,000*l*; while the home debts 'certainly known to be due' were, on the same 3rd of October, 125,000*l*.<sup>1</sup> The loan from the City of London partially satisfied the foreign creditors, partially it was applied for the payment of wages, and other obligations at home. The home debts by November were reduced to 109,000*l*.<sup>2</sup> At last, therefore, there was an attempt to do something, though the something was but small.

But these petty difficulties were not absolutely the results of carelessness and fraud. In this autumn of 1552, England narrowly escaped being again drawn into the European whirlpool.

The Peace of Passau left Charles at war with France; and by the revised treaty of 1543, as has been often

it may be substantially considered, for I put you out of doubt the clamour and exclamation grow great, and may breed more dangers than can now be seen. I have, since my being in the council chamber, heard of that matter, which maketh me sorry that ever it was my hap to be a meddler in it, but shall teach me to beware of the vayne of a dry spring while I live, for princes' affairs specially touching the government of realms and 'merchants' trades are of two natures, therefore, though they be full of devices with

appearance of profit, yet must they be weighted with other consequences, as in this case as much requisite as any matter that was in use a great while, for such reasons as this day were rehearsed, as knoweth the Lord'—Northumberland to Cecil, November, 1552 *MS Domestica*, Edward VI. vol xiv State Paper Office

<sup>1</sup> Note in Cecil's hand *MS Domestica*, Edward VI. vol xiv State Paper Office

<sup>2</sup> Second Note in Cecil's hand : *Ibid.*

said, England was bound to assist the Emperor if the Low Countries or the Rhine provinces were invaded. A French army had entered Luxembourg in July, and Charles, whose misfortunes had rendered him less scrupulous in connecting himself with heretics, applied through his ambassador for the stipulated support. The abandonment of Henry VIII. in the late war might have exonerated Edward from compliance. The treaty had been renewed since the Peace of Crêpy; but Charles had left England, notwithstanding, to work its way out of its difficulties alone;<sup>1</sup> in the place of sending help, he had himself assumed an attitude September of hostility. But either Northumberland was uncertain of his prospects and projects at home, and desired to conciliate the Emperor and Mary, or he was doubtful of the intentions of France, or he was possessed by the traditionary belief that the safety of England depended on the maintenance of the balance of power. The Emperor, without money and without friends, was contending with difficulty against an alliance between the Turks and the French. Ugly misunderstandings had sprung up between the Courts of London and Paris. The French had avenged their sup-

<sup>1</sup> Chancellor Granville's defence of the Peace of Crêpy was probably unknown in England, or it would have spared the council all difficulty. 'De dire,' he wrote to the Emperor, 'que le Roy d'Angleterre par la dicte paix pourra se malcontenter et pretendre que votre Majesté a contrevenu à traité—il y a, Sire, une

maxime en matières d'estat comme en toutes choses, qu'il faut regarder plus à la réalité des choses que se traictent, en y conjoignant ce qu'est possible et favorable, selon Dieu et raison, que de avanturer et hazarder pour crainte de scrupules non fondez'—Granville to Charles V. *Papiers d'Etat*, vol. II. p. 27

posed wrongs in the usual way, by seizing English merchant ships; and Charles's request for assistance came at the moment when the council were besieged with the complaints of the owners.<sup>1</sup> From the uncertain conduct of the council, it would seem that either there were conflicting opinions which balanced each other, or that one and all were perplexed and irresolute. The ambassador was first answered evasively. He was next told that the demand should be taken into consideration. Then suddenly, on the 2nd of September, the council made up their minds definitely to declare war against France.<sup>2</sup> But the resolution was taken only to be abandoned immediately, and the ambassador was informed that the King could not, in his present

---

<sup>1</sup> 'It is an old saying that we should not laugh at our neighbour when his house is on fire. I do every day hear more and more of the cruel dealings of the French against the subjects and merchants of this realm, in such lamentable sort that a number almost is ready to be desperate wherein the honour of the prince, his council, and realm, is vehemently touched'—Northumberland to Cecil, September, 1552 *MS. Domestic*, Edward VI vol. xiv State Paper Office.

<sup>2</sup> 'Which things considered, we have more regarded our faith in our religion, our old amity and alliance with our good brother the Emperor, and the ancient natural friendship that hath, in all times and adversities, continued betwixt the two no-

ble houses of England and Burgundy, than other worldly perils and lacks that might, in appearance of reason, move us to be quiet and sit still, and be content to declare the French King's countries and subjects common enemies to us and our good brother the Emperor—no wise doubting but our said good brother will naturally, like a brother, consider this our well-tryed constancy and natural love towards him And herein you shall declare to our said good brother, that our desire is to have his advice for our best means of entry to this demonstration.'—Minute of Instructions to Sir R. Morryson, September 2, 1552 *MS. Germany*, Edward VI bundle 15, State Paper Office.

embarrassments, hold himself bound by his father's treaties. Again in a few days the scale wavered. Sir Thomas Stukeley, a west-country gentleman, and a dependent of Somerset, had escaped abroad on the arrest of his master, and now returned with a story by which he hoped to purchase his pardon. Being believed to be a disaffected subject, he had been admitted, as he said, into the French counsels, and he was able to affirm as a certainty that Calais was about to be attacked. The King of France himself had spoken to him of the weak points in the defences, had pointed out the very plan of assault, by which, six years later, Calais was actually taken. Although, however, Henry said, 'he would in short space recover Calais, yet to adventure the same was in vain, otherwise than to seek the whole realm.' The Scots, therefore, were to enter Northumberland; he himself would land with troops at Falmouth, while the Duke of Guise would land at Dartmouth, which he knew to be undefended. That done 'he intended to proclaim and restore the mass.' Stukeley told him that 'he would be twice or thrice fought withal.' Henry said that 'he esteemed that but a peasant's fight;' at all events, he would fortify both Falmouth and Dartmouth, and hold them in gage for Calais.<sup>1</sup>

The French were confident in themselves, in their fortunes, in the especial graces which attended the consecration of their sovereign.<sup>2</sup> Neither promises nor

<sup>1</sup> Stukeley's Deposition: *MS* France, Edward VI bundle 10, State Paper Office

showed Sir William Pickering the Holy Ampulla [St Ampull, Pickering calls it, like St Cross or St Sepulchre,] 'wherewith the King

alliances would stand in their way when opportunity of aggrandizement should offer itself. If either France or the Empire became dominant in Europe, England would equally find an enemy in either; and if Stukeley's story was true, the Empire must be supported.

Again, therefore, the question of peace or war was anxiously discussed, and, according to the official habit of the time, the arguments on either side were drawn out in form. Should the King join the Emperor? it was asked. For the affirmative it was urged that he was bound by treaty. The Emperor might be ruined, or would lose Burgundy, and in that case England would lose Calais; the French were bringing the Turks into Christendom, and again some redress must be obtained for the English merchants; the attitude of France was suspicious and menacing, and 'enter into war alone the King might not well;' finally, the Emperor might make peace with France exasperated by desertion, and the Catholic powers might unite against England.<sup>1</sup> For the negative; the exchequer was

of France was sacred, which he said was sent from Heaven above a thousand years ago, and since by miracle preserved, through whose virtue also the King healed *les escrouelles*—Pickering to the Council  
*MS* Ibid

<sup>1</sup> While the preservation of the holy ointment assured France of the continued favour of Heaven, the French preachers informed their congregations, on analogous grounds, that England had been forsaken

'No wonder,' said a Jacobin monk in a sermon at Angiers, 'that the King of England has broken faith with France, seeing that he had broken faith with God, disant qu'il estoit hérétique et mèschant, et que le peuple de France debvroit bien louer Dieu et luy rendre grâces, et que nostre Roy avoit tounu sa robe et estoit ennemy des François. Depuys continuant sa mèschante affection, il a dict en publique que nostre Roy d'angleterre estoit iuh-

empty: should the Emperor die, as was not unlikely, England would be left again to fight the battle alone. The German Protestants would be offended, and France, after all, might not have the intentions which were attributed to her. It might be possible so to help the Emperor as to induce the Protestant princes to unite also; to make the Turks the ground of quarrel, and to declare France an enemy of Christendom. A war on such terms would be inexpensive, and England would be strengthened by taking part in a general league. On the other hand, such a league could not be formed either rapidly or secretly; and if the attempt should be made, and fail, France would be inexpiably offended.

The ultimate resolution was to reply with a general assurance of sympathy; to offer active assistance against the Turks, and so to feel the way towards a larger combination. The Lutheran powers, having secured their own liberties, were known to be looking suspiciously on the French movements. If the Emperor would consent to act with them, England might then go further. Meantime she would recruit her finances, and prepare for all contingencies.<sup>1</sup>

Charles was unable to quarrel with so meagre an answer. He had deserved no better; nor could Eng-

dèle, ce qu'il disoit estre notoire par ce que le don de faire miracles luy estoit ostée, disant que ses prédécesseurs Roys d'Angleterre avoient de coustume de guérir du mal caduc, mais que ceste vertu luy avoit este ostée, et n'en guérissoit, plus à cause de son infidélité.' — *MS.*

*France*, Edward VI. bundle 10, State Paper Office

<sup>1</sup> *EDWARD'S Journal*, September, 1552 — Discussion on the War with France, with the Instructions to Sir Richard Morryson: *Cotton. MSS Galba*, 12.

land afford more. He was at the moment on the Rhine, just recovering from a severe attack of gout, and collecting an army to wrest Metz from the Duke of Guise. Fortune at that time seemed again turning in his favour. The French invading force had been compelled to retreat out of Lorraine, decimated by fever, Guise himself remaining with a few picked troops. De Roulx, the Imperialist general in Flanders, had carried fire and sword to the banks of the Somme, and penetrated France to within fifty miles of Paris, sacking houses, and burning towns, villages, and farms. A company of English volunteers from the Calais Pale had joined him in an attack, which all but succeeded, upon Ambletue; while Albert of Brandenburg, who had quarrelled with Maurice, and was now in the Emperor's camp, had taken the Duke of Aumale in a skirmish.

Accounts, by competent persons, of interviews with Charles V. are always interesting. When Sir Richard Morryson waited upon him with the reply of the English Government to his request for assistance, 'the Emperor,' he said, 'was at a bare table, without carpet or anything else upon it, saving his cloke, his brush, his spectacles, and his picktooth.' His lower lip had broken out during his illness, and he kept 'a green leaf' upon it, which, adding to his 'accustomed softness in speaking,' 'made his words hard to be understood.' He listened to the message kindly, but coldly, 'thinking, as Morryson might perceive, to have heard somewhat of joining force against another enemy of his' beside the Turk: but he spoke warmly of England; he talked of



Henry VIII., and of the regard which they had ever entertained for each other; and it seemed as if he was speaking sincerely. 'But he hath a face,' said Morryson, 'unwont to discover any hid affection of his heart, as any face that ever I met with in all my life. White colours, which, in changing themselves, are wont in others to bring a man word how his errand is liked, have no place in his countenance. His eyes only do betray as much as can be picked out of him. He maketh me often think of Solomon's saying, Heaven is high, the earth is deep, a King's heart is unsearchable. There is in him almost nothing that speaks besides his tongue.'<sup>1</sup>

Meantime the French King assured Sir William Pickering that in Stukeley's story October there was no word of truth. He had never thought of attacking England since the conclusion of the peace, far less had he spoken of it. How these foreign difficulties might turn out was quite uncertain. Nevertheless, for domestic purposes or for war purposes, one thing was steadily necessary, *i. e.*, money. Northumberland, following the steps of his father, who filled the treasury of Henry VII., and brought his own head to the block, set himself to the work with heart and goodwill. In the autumn and winter of 1552-3, no less than nine commissions were appointed with this one object, four of which were to go again over the often-trodden ground, and glean the last spoils which could be gathered from the churches. In the business of plunder the rapacity

---

<sup>1</sup> Morryson to the Council TITLER, vol. II

of the Crown officials had been distanced hitherto by private peculation. The halls of country-houses were hung with altar-cloths; tables and beds were quilted with copes; the knights and squires drank their claret out of chalices, and watered their horses in marble coffins. Pious clergy, gentlemen, or churchwardens had in many places secreted plate, images, or candlesticks, which force might bring to light. Bells, rich in silver, still hung silent in remote church-towers, or were buried in the vaults. Organs still pealed through the aisles in notes unsuited to a regenerate worship, and damask napkins, rich robes, consecrated banners, pious offerings of men of another faith, remained in the chests in the vestries. All these were valuable, and might be secured, and the Protestants could be persuaded into applause at the spoiling of the house of Baal. Ridley in London lent his hand. On the 4th of September the organ at St Paul's was ordered into silence preparatory to removal. On the 25th of October 'was the plucking down of all the altars and chapels in Paul's church, with all the tombs, at the commandment of the Bishop, and all the goodly stone-work that stood behind the high altar.'<sup>1</sup> The monument of John of Gaunt himself would have gone down, had not the council stepped in to save it. Vestments, copes, plate, even the coin in the poor-boxes, were taken from the churches in the city.<sup>2</sup> Some few peals of bells were spared for a time, but only under

---

<sup>1</sup> *Grey Friars' Chronicle*

<sup>2</sup> It is to be said for Ridley that he begged and obtained the linen surplices, &c., for the use of the hospitals.

condition of silence. A sweep as complete cleared the parish churches throughout the country. There was one special commission for bells, vestments, and ornaments; two for plate and jewels; a fourth to search private houses for church property, and, should any such be found, to make a further profit by the fine of the offenders. A commission, again, was to examine into the rents of the Crown estates; <sup>November.</sup> another to sell chantry lands. The accounts of the disposition of all estates which had fallen to the Crown by confiscation or Act of Parliament since the suppression of the monasteries were to be produced and examined. The armorial bearings of families residing south of the Trent were to be investigated by the College of Heralds, and illegal quarterings to be paid for by fine or forfeit. Lastly, Northumberland himself, assisted by others on whose discretion he could rely, undertook to examine the accounts of the treasurer and receiver of the Court of Augmentations and the Court of Exchequer; of the collectors of firstfruits and of the officers of the Duchy of Lancaster; and, finally, in one frightful sweep, to call on every one who had received money in behalf of the Crown since the year 1532 to produce his books and submit them to an audit. Paymasters, purveyors, victuallers, engineers, architects, every one to whom money had been paid from the treasury for the army and navy, for the household, or for any other purpose, were included under the same schedule. If the account-books of twenty years of confusion, during the latter portion of which almost all public persons, from the council

downwards, had vied with each other in the race of rapacity, were not forthcoming and in order, they were to be proceeded against without mercy.

The sale of chantry lands was expected to yield 40,000*l.*; the surrendered lands of the bishopric of Worcester would produce 5000*l.* more; the church plate and linen 20,000*l.*; the confiscated estates of the late fraudulent Master of the Rolls, and of Sir Thomas Arundel, who had been executed as an accomplice in Somerset's conspiracy, with a fine inflicted on Lord Paget for the same cause, were estimated at 25,000*l.*, 'or thereabouts;'<sup>1</sup> from 90,000*l.* to 100,000*l.* might be expected from the remaining commissions,<sup>1</sup> could those commissions be enforced. But setting aside the injustice of calling suddenly for the accounts of twenty years, when the disorders had been so universal and the example of the ruling powers so flagrantly bad, the conduct of Northumberland and Northumberland's friends could bear inspection as little as any man's. Another large sum of 40,000*l.* might be looked for from the sale of the estates of the See of Durham, which was about to be suppressed; but these estates Northumberland designed for himself, and obtained a grant of them; and as he now really intended to pay off the Crown debts<sup>2</sup>—as, in fact, he was supplying, and intended to continue to supply, the 1200*l.* weekly for which Gresham

---

<sup>1</sup> Further Calculations of the King's Debts and of the Means of paying them *MS. Domestic*, Edward VI vol. xiv.

<sup>2</sup> From a report presented in the first year of Queen Mary, it appeared that in the last year of Edward he cleared off 60,000*l.*

had applied for that purpose, he was obliged to look to other resources. A Parliament had become a necessity, unwelcome but inevitable. A Par-<sup>December</sup>liament must meet. The blame of the public embarrassment could be cast upon Somerset; and in a letter to the council the Duke explained the arguments on which he intended to apply for a subsidy.<sup>1</sup> As the subsidy, however, could not be collected till after the next harvest, the meeting, he at first thought, might be postponed till the following Michaelmas.<sup>2</sup>

Circumstances, or the influence of others, or the necessity of pacifying the people, forbade the anticipated delay. The writs were sent out in January,<sup>1553</sup> and as Parliament would not grant money <sup>January.</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'There is none other remedy,' he said, 'to bring his Majesty out of the great debts wherein, for one great part, he was left by his Highness's father, and augmented by the wilful government of the late Duke of Somerset, who took upon him the Protectorship and government of his own authority. His Highness, by the prudence of his father, left in peace with all princes, suddenly by that man's unskilful Protectorship, was plunged in wars, whereby his expenses were increased unto the point of six or seven score thousand pounds a year over and above the charges for the keeping of Boulogne. These things being now so onerous and weighty to the King's Majesty, and having all this while been put off by the best means we have been able to

devise, although but slender shifts, the same is grown to such an extremity, as without it speedily be holpen by your wise heads, both dishonour and peril may follow; and seeing there is none other honourable means to reduce these evils, I think there be no man that beareth his obedient duty to his sovereign lord and country but must conform himself to think this way [of a Parliament] most honourable. The sale of lands ye have proved, the seeking of every man's doings in office ye munde to try, and yet you perceive all this cannot help to salve the sore that hath been so long suffered to fester for lack of looking unto' — Northumberland to the Council. *MS Domestic*, Edward VI vol xv.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

without inquiry, and inquiry could only be faced before interested or otherwise favourable judges, the best security was to fill the Lower House with men who could be depended upon. It has been maintained or assumed, by some writers, that the election of members of Parliament under the Tudor princes had but the form of freedom; that the constituencies were treated with no more respect than if they had been deans and chapters of cathedrals, who, though permitted to pray to Heaven to be guided in the selection of their bishop, must nevertheless receive that guidance through the nomination of the Crown. The account of the election of 1552-3 will enable us to form a more discriminating judgment. Northumberland's House of Commons was, in fact, chosen, like the bishops, by a *congé d'élire*; it was a 'convention of notables,' such as Northumberland was pleased to direct to be elected; but such a mode of election is expressly stated to have been introduced on this occasion, and if freshly introduced, did not exist before.<sup>1</sup> How the voting was conducted does not appear; and it is plain that the constituencies possessed no recognized means of enforcing their own choice; but it is plain, also, that the experiment of nomination was tried

---

<sup>1</sup> On the 16th of August, 1553, Simon Renard, the Flemish Ambassador, writing to Charles V of the Parliament about to be called by Mary, consulted him in Mary's name, 'si le diet parlement se doit faire général, ou y appeller particuliers et notables du pays par repré-

senter le parlement selon que le Duc de Northumberland l'a introduit'—Despatches of Renard, copied from the Archives at Brussels MS. *Rolls House* Charles advised Mary to trust the people as completely as possible.

as the general rule of an election for the first time.

A nomination Parliament, however, was on this occasion actually assembled. Either a circular<sup>1</sup> was ad-

<sup>1</sup> A first draft of the circular is in the British Museum *Lansdowne MSS* 3

'Trusty and well-beloved, we greet you well Forasmuch as we have, for divers good considerations, caused a summonition of a Parliament to be made, as we doubt not ye understand the same, by our writs sent in that behalf to you, we have thought it meet, for the furtherance of such causes as are to be propounded in the same Parliament for the commonweil of our realm, that in the election of such persons as shall be sent to our Parliament, either from our counties as knights of the shire, or from our cities and boroughs, there be good regard had that the choice be made of men of gravity and knowledge in their own counties and towns, fit for their understanding and qualities to be in such a great council And, therefore, since some part of the proceeding herein shall rest in you by virtue of your office, we do, for the great desire we have that this our Parliament may be assembled with personages out of every county of wisdom and experience, at this present recommend two gentlemen of the same county, being well furnished with all good qualities, to be knights of that shire, that is to say, — and —, to whom we would ye should signify this our meaning, to the intent they

may prepare themselves to enter into this office, being for the weal of their country, and likewise our pleasure is that ye shall, at or before the day of the election, communicate this our purpose to the gentlemen and such other our subjects of the same, being freeholders of that county, as shall seem requisite, so as they may both see our consideration and care for the weal of the same shire, and our good memory of those two personages whom we have named unto you'

Transversely written on the same page, in the handwriting of Northumberland's secretary, is a second form, more general

'I will and command you that ye shall give notice, as well to the freeholders of your county as to the citizens or burgesses of any city or borough which shall have any of our writs for the election of citizens or burgesses, that they shall choose and appoint, as nigh as they possibly may, men of knowledge and experience within their counties, cities, or boroughs, so as, by the assembly of such, we may, by God's goodness, provide for the redress of the lacks in our commonwealth more effectually than hitherto hath been

'And, yet, nevertheless, our pleasure is, that when our privy council or any of them, with their instructions in our behalf, shall re-

dressed to the sheriffs of counties or mayors of towns, simply naming the persons who were to be chosen, or the electors were instructed to accept their directions from some member of the privy council. In some instances the orders of the Crown were sent direct to the candidate himself,<sup>1</sup> and the language in which the communications were conveyed implied the most entire assurance on the part of the Government that the disposition of the seats was under their control.

But for especial interference Northumberland's position especially called. The writs with the letters and

Jan. 14. circulars were sent out on the 19th of January

On the 14th, Northumberland held in his hands a document which avowedly caused him uneasiness. The threatened inquiry into the distribution of the Church lands under Henry VIII. had not, perhaps, been pursued; but 'a book' had been drawn, 'of the charges of the present King and of his debts,' to the production of which, without considerable modifications, the Duke felt that he could not consent. This particu-

commend men of learning and wisdom, in such cases their direction be regarded and followed'

<sup>1</sup> 'Ye shall understand that his Majesty is right desirous to have the Parliament now coming to be assembled of the chiefest men of wisdom and good counsel for the better consideration of things for the commonwealth of this realm; and, therefore, amongst divers others, hath willed us to signify unto you this his pleasure, to have you

one of the Commons House, which thing we also require you to foresee, that either for the county where ye abide ye be chosen knight, or else otherwise to have some place in the House like as all others of your degree be appointed. And herein, if either his Majesty or we knew where to recommend you, according to your own desires, we would not fail but provide the same'.—The Council to Sir P. Hoby, January 19. *Harleian MSS.* 523.



lar book I have been unable to discover : but it contained, among other things, an account of the various grants professing to have been made by Edward to his ministers, or, in truer language, appropriated by these ministers to their own use during Edward's reign. On the 14th of January the Duke had the report in his hands ; he sent it to the Marquis of Northampton, with side-notes and reflections, the occasion and meaning of which he expressed very frankly in a letter which has fortunately survived.

'The causes,' he said, 'why I have scribbled the book so much, is that I am of opinion that we need not to be so ceremonious as to imagine the objections of every froward person, but rather to burden their minds and hearts with the King's Majesty's extreme debts and necessities, grown and risen by such occasion and means as can be denied by no man, and that we need not to seem to make account to the Commons of his Majesty's liberality and bountifulness in augmenting of his nobles, or his benevolence shewed to any his good servants, lest you might thereby make them wanton and give them occasion to take hold of your own arguments. But as it shall become no subject to argue the matter so far, so, if any should be so far out of reason, the matter will always answer itself with honour and reason to their confuting and shame'<sup>1</sup>

Although the 'scribbled' document has disappeared, the substance of it remains in a separate table of reports,

---

<sup>1</sup> Northumberland to the Lord Chamberlain. MS. *Domestic*, Edward VI. vol. xvi.

which were submitted, eventually, to a subsequent Parliament,<sup>1</sup> and it explains the Duke's anxiety.

The total value of the lands which had passed from the Crown, in the reign of Edward VI., by gift, sale, or exchange, had been something over a million and a half.<sup>2</sup> Four hundred and thirty-five thousand pounds had professedly been paid into the treasury as purchase-money. The lands exchanged were worth 350,000*l*. The value of the lands given away was 730,000*l*. Of these given lands, estates to the extent of 1200*l*. a year, worth perhaps, 25,000*l*., went to endowments of schools and hospitals; 3600*l*. a year was reserved to the Crown upon the rents of the rest; and 9000*l*. had been paid in money to the Crown by the recipients of the royal bounty. On the exchanged land there was a reservation also of 1900*l*. a year.

After liberal deductions on these and all other imaginable grounds, after reasonable allowances for grants legitimately made as a reward for services, there will remain, on a computation most favourable to the council, estates worth half a million—in the modern currency about five millions—which the ministers of the Minority with their friends had appropriated—I suppose I must not say stolen—and divided among themselves. In the different lists the names of the council

<sup>1</sup> *MS. Domestic*, Edward VI  
vol xix

<sup>2</sup> The annual proceeds of the land sold were 21,304*l* 14*s* 4*d*, the money paid for them, 435,277*l* 12*s* 1*d*. The average value, therefore,

was a fraction over twenty years' purchase. The annual proceeds of the lands given were 36,746*l* 15*s* 8*d* which, on the same calculation, would give something over 730,000*l*

appear nowhere as purchasers. They exchanged occasionally, being nearest to the fountain, and having the privilege of the first draught: but, in general, when any minister of the Crown is mentioned, it is as an object merely of unmixed liberality. The literal entries are an imperfect guide, since it appeared, in the inquiries which followed the deposition of Somerset from the Protectorate, that conveyances had been made out in other names, to cover the extent of the appropriations. From the report as it stands the Lord Paget and Sir William Petre would seem to have made the smallest use of their opportunities; Lord Pembroke to have made the best.<sup>1</sup>

With the danger of these revelations impending, Northumberland must have doubtless felt the meeting of Parliament an anxious occasion, notwithstanding his care of the elections. The session opened on the 1st of March; and, to neutralize opposition, he had attempted to gain over, by a promise of long-coveted concessions, the support of the old-established guilds and corporations of the city of London.

The sixteenth century had seen the shipwreck of more than one time-honoured institution. The foreign trade from the port of London had been carried on from the time of the Norman sovereigns, down to a recent

<sup>1</sup> *MS Domestic, Edward VI.* stated to have been drawn up for  
vol. xix The summary at the close of the report is made up to the death of Edward, who is there described as the late King. The report itself is  
Parliament, and was probably, therefore, presented in the first year of Mary.

period, under the jurisdiction of a close body of monopolists, representatives of the various guilds and companies, entitled the Fellowship of the London Merchants. An organization which arises spontaneously has in its origin right upon its side. It springs into being as the answer to an acknowledged want which, in some degree, more satisfactory or less, it contrives to satisfy. It may be believed that so long as the desire to do right among them was stronger than the desire to grow rich, a close corporation conducted the trade of the country with more inherent equity, and with greater honour to the English name, than would have resulted from general competition. But exclusive privileges had ended, as usual, in the abuse of those privileges. In the twelfth year of Henry VII the Merchant Adventurers, or unattached traders, petitioned for the right which belonged to them as freeborn Englishmen of carrying their goods into foreign countries, and selling them as they pleased, on their own terms. 'The Fellowship of London Merchants,' they said, 'for their own singular lucre, contrary to every Englishman's liberty,' had made an ordinance among themselves that no Englishman should buy or sell in the markets of the Low Countries without paying a fine to the Fellowship; and the fine had been gradually raised, till at last a demand of forty pounds was made upon every young merchant who was entering life before he could be permitted to trade.

The petition of the Adventurers was heard by Parliament. The conduct of the corporation was held

to be 'contrary to all law, reason, charity, right, and conscience.' Their jurisdiction was closed, and the foreign trade was declared free.<sup>1</sup>

In the first half of the century the old-established London houses had suffered from the competition; and they took advantage of the necessities of an embarrassed Government to make an effort to recover their privileges.

The reputation of English goods had unquestionably suffered in the foreign markets; and the fraudulent manufactures, which were in reality the natural growth of an age of infidelity, they represented as the effect of a disorganized intrusion of unauthorized persons into 'the feat and mystery' of merchandise.

The fall of the exchange, notoriously due to the debasement of the currency, they attributed with equal injustice to the same cause; and Northumberland, to gain the support of so strong a body, and too happy to rest on others the consequences of his own misdoings, undertook, if possible, to gratify them.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 12 Henry VII cap 6

<sup>2</sup> When the House of Commons petitioned Henry VIII against the abuses of the spiritual courts, the bishops replied to the special charges of misconduct with a defence of the principle on which their authority was founded. It is amusing to find Sir Thomas Gresham addressing Northumberland with precisely similar arguments. All that was urged, either by prelate or merchant, was most excellent, provided only

that the wisdom and honesty of the jurisdiction which they defended was equal to its claims and professions. 'The exchange,' wrote Gresham, 'is one of the chiefest points in the commonweal that your Grace and the King's Majesty's Council hath to look unto, for, as the exchange riseth, so all the commodities in England falleth, and as the exchange falleth, so all the commodities in England riseth, as, also, if the exchange riseth it will be the

An Act was prepared in compliance with the request of Sir Thomas Gresham, to limit the number of the Ad-

right occasion that all our gold and silver shall remain within our realm And, to be plain with your Grace, you shall never be able to bring this to pass except you take away one of the greatest occasions of the let and stay thereof, that there shall be no more made free of this company of Merchant Adventurers from this day forward For verily they have been and are one of the chiefest occasions of the falling of the exchange, as also, for lack of experience they have brought the commodities of our realm clean out of reputation, as also the merchants of the same, which times past hath been most in estimation of all the merchants of the world. In the few years since the Act was made for the new Hanse the merchants and our commodities hath fallen in decay, and like to fall daily more and more, except the matter be prevented in time For, as your Grace doth right well know, where there is no order kept, all things at length falleth to confusion So, an it please your Grace, how it is possible that either a minstrel player, or a shoemaker, or any crafty man, or any other that hath not been brought up in the science, to have the present understanding of the feat of the Merchant Adventurers, to the which science I myself was bound prentice eight years, to come by the experience and knowledge that I have, nevertheless, I need not have

been prentice, for that I was free by my father's copy Albeit my father, Sir Richard Gresham, being a wise man, knew, although I was free by his copy, it was to no purpose except I was bound prentice to the same. So that by this it may appear to your Grace that these men that be made free by this new Hanse, for lack of knowledge, hath been and is one of the chiefest occasions of the fall of the exchange, as also hath brought our commodities out of reputation.

‘As a further example to your Grace, it is not passing twenty or thirty years ago since we had for every twenty shillings sterling thirty-two shillings Flemish. and the notable number that hath from time to time run in headlong into the feat of merchandise, and so entered into credit, when they had overshot themselves and had bound themselves with more than their substance would bear, then, for saving of their names, were fain to run upon the exchange and rechange, and the merchants, knowing that they had need thereof, would not from time to time deliver their money, but at their prices So that in these few years the plenty of these new merchants, for lack of experience, substance, and credit, hath been only the occasion that the exchange fell from thirty-two shillings to 26s. 8d, which was done afore any fall of money passed in England.

venturers, and to interfere with and hamper their trade

‘To make an end of this matter, it may please you to understand till that the King’s Majesty and you, with the rest of his Most Honourable Council, have wholly set an order in the premises, that you shall never be able to bring the commodities of this realm to such purpose as heretofore hath been, for plenty of merchants without experience is the uttermost destruction of any realm that hath the like commodities that we have to transport, which must be kept in reputation by merchants, or else in process of time things will grow to small estimation.

‘Also there is another matter which is most convenient to be looked unto in time. And this is to make a general stay that there may be no retailer occupy the feat of Merchant Adventurers, but only to keep him, and to live upon his retail: and likewise the Merchant Adventurer to occupy his feat only, and to touch no retail, for divers considerations of damage, as doth daily ensue thereof; and, for an example, the retailer comes over with the commodities of our realm, which, if a cannot sell them at his price, then a falls to bartering of them for silks and such like merchandise, and careth not to win by his cloth, for that a is sure to win by the retail of his silks. Now, the Merchant Adventurer that occupieth no retail cometh over with our commodities to have his gains and his living thereby, and for that the retailer

doth sell the self commodities better cheap than he is able to afford them, a doth not only take away the living of the Merchant Adventurer, but in process of time the few numbers of forty or fifty retailers in London will eat out all the merchants within our realm.’

Gresham seemed unconscious of the practical commentary which he was making upon his doctrine that only men who understood their business should be allowed to trade. His complaint against the retailers was merely that they were more skilful than their competitors.

‘For your Grace’s better instruction in the matter,’ he continued, ‘it may please you to understand that this last March there was one Rowland Haywood and Richard Foulkes, both retailers, as also this last year they both came in by the Hanse; which parties sold here in barter 1500 cloths of the best sort in England and took half silks for them; and the said cloths so sold here was offered by the party that bought them to sell in this town for four pounds better cheap than any Merchant Adventurer was able to afford them; which is a matter in the commonweal to be looked upon. In consideration whereof, the merchants here with one assent have made an Act to take effect at Midsummer next coming, with a proviso so far forth as the King’s Majesty and his Most Honourable Council be agreeable to the same, that the

with restrictions and disqualifications.<sup>1</sup> Having thus conciliated at least one powerful party, the Duke, on the 6th of March, introduced his Subsidy Bill in the House of Commons.<sup>2</sup> The preamble was drawn by himself or under his immediate direction. It repeated, as the occasion for the required grant, the words of his own letter; and the exhaustion of the exchequer was attributed exclusively to the recklessness of the Duke of Somerset, and the wars into which he had plunged the country. To relieve the country of the debt which had been thus increased, two fifteenths and tenths were demanded of the laity, to be paid in two years; with an income-tax of five per cent. on the rents of their lands for an equal period. The clergy were required to give ten per cent. for three years on their benefices or other promotions.<sup>3</sup> The debates are lost. It is known only that the bill was long argued, notwithstanding Northumberland's precaution, and was carried with difficulty.<sup>4</sup> Carried it was at last; but the House of Commons was far from complaisant. The retrospective examination of the public accounts had been abandoned, or if not the examination, yet the prosecution of defaulters. A measure, however, was introduced for an annual audit

retailer shall occupy only his retail, and the Merchant Adventurer his feat accordingly, to be at their liberty betwixt this and then to take to one of them which they shall seem most to their profit, which in my poor opinion seems to me a thing most reasonable.—Gresham to the Duke of Northumberland: *Flanders*

*MSS* Edward VI State Paper Office

<sup>1</sup> Note for an Act be prepared for the Parliament *MS Domestica*, Edward VI vol xvi *Ibid*

<sup>2</sup> *Commons' Journals*, 7 Edward VI.

<sup>3</sup> 7 Edward VI 12, 13

<sup>4</sup> BURNET.



of the books of all collectors and receivers, with precautions to prevent peculation for the future; and so jealously was the wording of the Act examined and sifted, that it was twice drawn and redrawn before it was finally passed.<sup>1</sup>

A creditable bill had been designed for the protection of the poor tenants of small cottages 'against the severing of land from houses;' and another to prevent the bishops and cathedral chapters from granting long leases on the Church lands, to be renewed upon fines. Both these measures were, unfortunately, dropped, as leading up to inconvenient questions. Again, to pacify the clergy after the late spoliations, a measure was brought forward that 'no person not a deacon should hold ecclesiastical promotions.' The Lords passed it, but the Commons declined. The country gentlemen refused to unclothe their grasp upon the impropriated benefices, and the bill was lost upon the third reading.

A defeat on this last point Northumberland perhaps endured with patience. It was of more consequence to him that he was compelled to disappoint Sir Thomas Gresham and the merchants of the city. The bill which had been prepared in their favour was never introduced. A bill to repeal the Act of Henry VII. was carried in

---

<sup>1</sup> It is remarkable that in an official list of measures intended to be introduced during the session there is no mention of this Act. It was probably forced upon the Government by the debates on the subsidy.—Compare 7 Edward VI. cap. 1, with the Preparatory List *MS Domestic*, Edward VI. vol. xvi. State Paper Office.

the Upper House, but the Commons were again obstinate, and the monopoly could not be restored.<sup>1</sup>

Nor was it only in Parliament that the Duke encountered awkward opposition.

John Knox, who since his dismissal from France had held a commission as a preacher in Durham and Northumberland, was looked upon as a desirable person to be promoted to a bishopric. The See of Rochester was vacated in the autumn of 1552 by the translation of Ponet to Winchester, and the Duke thought of nominating Knox to it; partly, he said, 'as a whetstone to quicken the Archbishop of Canterbury, whereof he had need,' and partly—a more singular reason—to put an end to Knox's ministrations in the north, where he had habitually disobeyed the Act of Uniformity, and had not cared to conceal his objections to the Prayer-book.<sup>2</sup> Northumberland communicated his intentions in a personal interview, and was not gratified at the manner in which the intimation was received. Under no temptation would Knox have accepted an office which he believed to be antichristian; but with his hard grey eyes he looked through and through into the heart of the second Moses of John Bale, and he could not tell, he said, whether he were not 'a dissembler in religion.'<sup>3</sup> In fact, he thought he could tell; and, not contented with refusing to take a favour at his hands, he held it to be his duty to make known his opinions to

---

<sup>1</sup> *Lords' Journals, Commons' Journals*, 7 Edward VI.

<sup>2</sup> Northumberland to Cecil, October 28, 1552 TYTLER, vol. ii

<sup>3</sup> Northumberland to Cecil, December 7, 1552 TYTLER, vol. ii

the world. Preaching before the Court in the spring, while Parliament was sitting, in the presence of the King, Northumberland, and the council, he asked how it was that the most godly princes had officers and chief councillors the most ungodly, enemies to religion, and traitors to their princes; and quoting the characters of Ahithophel, Shebnah, and Judas, he fastened the first with a transparent allusion on Northumberland; the second he gave to Paulet, Marquis of Winchester. Judas was present also, though he pointed less certainly to the person whom he regarded as the counterpart of the treacherous apostle.<sup>1</sup> He vituperated from the

<sup>1</sup> 'Who, I pray you, ruled the roast in the Court all this time by stout courage and p[ro]udness of stomach? who, I pray you, ruled all by counsel and wit? Shall I name the man? I will write no more plainly than my tongue spake even to the face of such as of whom I meant. I recited the histories of Ahithophel, Shebnah, and Judas, of whom the two former had high offices and promotions, with great authority, under David and Hezekiah, and Judas was purse-bearer unto Christ Jesus.' 'Was David, said I, and Hezekiah abused by crafty councillors and dissembling hypocrites? What wonder is it that a young and innocent king be deceived by crafty, covetous, wicked, and ungodly councillors? I am greatly afraid that Ahithophel is councillor, that Judas bears the purse, and that Shebnah is scribe, controller, and treasurer.'

And yet Knox afterwards accused himself for want of boldness 'I did speak of men's faults,' he says, 'so that all men might know whom I meant; but, alas! this day my conscience accuseth me that I spoke not as my duty was to have done—for I ought to have said to the wicked man expressly by his name, thou shalt die the death Jeremiah the prophet, Elijah, Elisha, Micah, Amos, Daniel, Christ Jesus himself, and after him his apostles, expressly warned the bloodthirsty tyrants and dissembling hypocrites of their danger. Why withheld we the salt? I accuse none but myself. The blind love that I did bear to this wicked carcass was the chief cause why I was not fervent and faithful enough. I had no will to provoke the hatred of men against me. So touched I the vices of men in the presence of the greatest that they

pulpit the vices of the Court, and the worldliness of the faction who were misgoverning the country. Since discipline could not be restored, he, and those who felt with him the enormity of the times, established by their own authority this second form of excommunication.<sup>1</sup>

Northumberland, who had witnessed the fall of the old clergy, had no intention of enduring the insolence of the new. At the end of March Cranmer produced in the House of Lords his reformed code of canon law. Northumberland rose, and, turning fiercely on the Archbishop, bade him attend to the duties of his office. The clergy were going beyond their province, presuming in their sermons to touch the doings of their superiors. 'You bishops,' he said, 'look to it at your peril. Take heed that the like happen not again, or, you and your preachers shall suffer for it together.' The Archbishop ventured a mild protest. He had heard no complaints of the preachers, he said; they might have spoken of vices and abuses; he did not know. 'There were vices

---

might see themselves to be offenders, but yet, nevertheless, I would not be seen to proclaim manifest war against the manifest wicked, whereof unfeignedly I ask God mercy'—*Admonition to the Faithful in England.*

<sup>1</sup> Knox was not always just. He afterwards accused the Marquis of Winchester of having been the first contriver of the conspiracy to set aside Mary, whereas, he was among the most consistent opponents of that conspiracy. He charged Gar-

diner with having advised the Spanish marriage, although there was nothing which Gardiner so much dreaded. Nevertheless, the power of passing censures on the conduct of public men, in the name of right and wrong, is one which, in some form or other, has existed, and ought to exist, in every well-ordered community. The most effective and the least objectionable instrument of such criticism is the public press as it is conducted at the present day in this country.

enough,' Northumberland answered violently, 'no doubt of that;' 'the fruits of the Gospel in this life were sufficiently meagre.'<sup>1</sup> Assailed in the pulpit, thwarted in the Commons, hated by the people, the haughty minister found his temper failing him, and the smooth exterior less easy to maintain. 'Those about me,' he complained to Cecil, 'are so slack as I can evil bear it; indeed, of late, but for my duty to the State, my heart could scarce endure the manner of it'<sup>2</sup> He had secured the subsidy; the continued sitting of a Parliament was inconvenient when his own nominees had opposed him; on the last of March, within a month of the meeting, it was dissolved.

It is a question on which much depends, yet one which, nevertheless, there is little chance of adequately answering, whether the fortunes of Northumberland were not now bringing him to a point where he must either rise higher or fall utterly, irrespective of the life or death of the young King. The enthusiastic correspondents of Bullinger assured him that Edward regarded the Duke as a father, and Edward by his conduct at the close of his life proved that his own confidence was not yet shaken; but the <sup>April.</sup> power of English ministers rarely survived intense unpopularity. By the accidents of the revolution, by 'stout courage and proudness of stomach,' by dexterity, perhaps by crime, Northumberland was become almost

<sup>1</sup> Scheyfne to Charles V : *MS Rolls House*, transcribed from the Brussels Archives

<sup>2</sup> Northumberland to Cecil : *Lansdowne MSS* 3

absolute—absolute as the able man can always make himself in times of disorder, if he is untroubled with moral scruples, when his competitors for power are as unprincipled as himself, and only his inferiors in capacity. But, as it was only a temporary convulsion which placed a person of so poor a type of character at the head of the Government, so Northumberland was detested while he was obeyed. Those who, like Cecil, were treated by him with apparent cordiality, those whom he had addressed as his friends, whom he seemed to intrust with his most secret thoughts, felt his influence like a nightmare.<sup>1</sup> The growing discernment, the earnest interest in public affairs, and the consciousness of the disorganization of the State, which Edward exhibited more and more as he grew older, would have sooner or later brought forward other ministers; in two years he would be of age, when inquiry could not have been avoided; and Northumberland's influence would scarcely have survived the revelations which Arundel, whom he had imprisoned, Paget, whom he had stripped of his estates and expelled from the Order of the Garter,<sup>2</sup> with the friends of Somerset, would have brought to

---

<sup>1</sup> Northumberland's Correspondence with Cecil in the *State Paper Office* flows over with confidence, public spirit, and zeal for religion, with all those studied graces of expression, which charmed and deceived the eager Protestants. Yet, on his release from the Court, when Edward was dead, and the spell was broken, Cecil entered in his Journal '7

Julu libertatem adeptus sum morte regis, ex misero aulico factus liber et mei juris'—*Life of Burghley*, by NARES

<sup>2</sup> 'Chiefly,' says Edward, in his *Journal*, 'because he was no gentleman born neither by the father's nor the mother's side.' Revolutionary Governments are not generally so scrupulous about high birth.

light when opportunity permitted. His unpopularity in the country was a present fact, which every day became more embarrassing; and he had no friends except among the incapable or the dreamers. Wolsey, Cromwell, Somerset, had fallen successively from the same height to which Northumberland had climbed; and the Nemesis which haunts political supremacy irregularly obtained, would not have failed to overtake one whose administration had been scandalous to the empire, whose errors had arisen, not from generous weakness, not from large purposes too unscrupulously followed, but from a littleness of mind rarely combined with talents and with courage so considerable as those with which the Duke must be credited. His overthrow could not but at times have seemed likely to him, unless he could by some means rest his power on a harder foundation; and therefore it was that, as Sir Richard Morryson said, he never moved forward directly upon any subject without looking to the possible consequences to himself. He had played a double game with the Emperor. After risking the peace of the kingdom on the question of Mary's mass, he had contrived that in private she should not further be interfered with. He affected extreme Protestant opinions to keep his place with the Reformers. He was Imperialist, he was French, he had an anchor thrown out in all quarters from which a wind might blow. However events might turn, he had done something, or he had affected something, which would provide him a resource should he be driven to shift his colours.

But this uncertain attitude could not be maintained for ever. A crisis came which compelled him to choose his course.

Edward with varying health had arrived at the age fatal to the male Tudors, the age at which Prince Arthur had died, at which his brother the Duke of Richmond had died. The cough to which he was always subject had increased in the late winter. He dissolved Parliament in person, but immediately after he was removed to Greenwich in a state of marked debility, and by the end of April the gravest alarms were entertained for his life. Philosophers, who believe that great events are enveloped in great causes, that the future is evolved out of the present by laws unerring as those which regulate the processes of nature, can see in the grandest of individual men but instruments which might easily have been dispensed with; and in the cracking of the thread of a human soul but a melting raindrop, or a leaf fluttering from a bough. Centuries, it may be, take their complexion from these large influences; and broad laws of progress may shape the moulds for the casting of eras; but the living Englishman of the sixteenth century would have seen in these closet speculations but the shadow of a dream compared with the interests which depended on the result of the illness of a boy who was not yet sixteen. The eyes of England, of the Emperor, of the Pope, of the King of France, of all the civilized world, were turned with almost equal agitation to the sick-bed at Greenwich.

The reverses of France in the autumn of 1552 had



produced a return of civility to England. Stukeley's stories, as we have seen, were denied or explained away. The complaints of the merchants were disposed of peaceably by commissioners, and the efforts and the anxieties of the Court of Paris were directed wholly towards Metz, where Charles in person, with the Duke of Alva and 45,000 men, had sat down to wrench his conquest from the Duke of Guise. A winter siege was an enterprise at which the Emperor in his better days would have hesitated; but since the flight from Innspruck he had been observed to be unequal to himself; and illness and bad fortune had made him obstinate. On the 24th of November the siege was opened. The Spaniards pushed their trenches towards the walls; the French pushed trenches forwards from the walls to meet them; and the works were so close, that besiegers and besieged were in shot of each other's hand-guns. The batteries played incessantly on the city, and breaches were opened; but fresh walls rose behind the ruins, midnight sallies carried off the Imperial guns, fever and dysentery wasted the Imperial troops. In December there came a frost harder than any living man remembered, and the gout came back to Charles, so violently, that Morryson 'supposed the Emperor should not much longer need any ambassador; there were few that could better digest Fortune's foul play than he; yet good-nature might be provoked too far.'<sup>1</sup> The Spaniards might shiver to death in their tents, but Metz could not

---

<sup>1</sup> Morryson to Cecil, *MS. Germany*, bundle 15, State Paper Office

be taken ; and Charles was carried back to Luxemburg, as he believed, to die.

1553  
January. As soon as the failure was known in England, Northumberland, either thinking the opportunity a good one to increase his own influence, or to recover for the country its weight in the councils of Europe, offered to mediate. Sir William Pickering was instructed to make overtures for a peace at Paris. Sir Andrew Dudley, the Duke's brother, was sent to Luxemburg.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Dudley and Morryson were admitted into the Emperor's bed-room 'We found there,' wrote the latter, 'the Prince of Piedmont, the Duke of Alva, the Bishop of Arras, Don Diego, M. de Vaux, the Count of Egmont, with all those of his chamber, it being better furnished with hangings than ever I found it before. Mr Dudley, after reverence done to him at our entry, being almost come to his Majesty, did press to kiss his hand, but he, putting his hand to his cap, not being able, as it should seem, to put it so high as to take it off, would not suffer him to kiss it. Mr Dudley declared his instructions. The Emperor took them in very thankful part; and not being able to speak loud, and Mr Dudley, by reason of his extreme cold, not being able to hear him, did with signs will me to mark. Whereupon the Emperor, somewhat perceiving the matter, I said that Mr Dudley was so stuffed and stopped in his head, that he could not well hear

unless his Majesty did speak louder, nor I well understand, unless it would please his Majesty to speak Italian. Whereupon, being willing-er to speak Italian than able to speak louder, he said to me in Italian—I thank my good brother the King for his friendly sending and for his noble and princely offers, and for my part will leave nothing undone that may by any means either maintain or increase the amity. I, for my part, will at all times bear the King my good brother the affection of a father, and not fail him when my friendship may do him profit. It is much to his honour, and no small praise to him, that he, so young, hath this zeal and this care for the quietness and concord of Christendom, and such a desire to see it conserved from the Turk's tyranny.

'And where my good brother doth offer his travail with the spending of his treasure for the atoning of the French King and me, I do give him my hearty thanks for it.

The Emperor was in extremity of sickness; so ill that Morryson, who accompanied Dudley to his bedroom, said that he had often seen him suffering, but 'never so nigh gone, never so dead in the face, his hand never so lean and pale and wan.' 'His eyes, that were wont to be full of life when all the rest had yielded to sickness, were now, heavy and dull, as nigh death in their looks,' 'as ever' Morryson 'saw any.' The cunning Arras, the iron Alva, the chivalrous Egmont, were standing mournfully at the bed-side. The Prince of Savoy forced a smile as the ambassadors entered, but talked like 'a man amazed.'<sup>1</sup>

Charles roused himself with an effort. He spoke with extreme difficulty, but with courtesy and clearness. He thanked the English Government for their kindness, which he said he would ever remember. But as for the peace, he did not begin the war, and he could not with honour be the first to propose terms on which to end it. His 'enemy' must speak first, and as he spoke of his enemy his fiery nature kindled up, and the faint voice sounded out clear and stern.

The same spirit was shown at Paris. Henry, too, was ready for peace; he would accept the advances of the Emperor, but he would not commence; and for the

---

Marry, as I did not begin the wars, so I cannot with mine honour make any answer to this my good brother's request till I understand what mine enemy would do

'And here, though in very deed his Majesty was hoarse at the begin-

ning, yet, when he came to name his enemy, he spake so loud as Mr Dudley might hear easily what he said.—Morryson to the Council MS Germany, Edward VI State Paper Office

<sup>1</sup> Ibid

first few weeks of the year, while the season caused a compulsory armistice, the arbitration could not advance over the first preliminaries

Yet, if peace there was to be, both parties appeared anxious to arrive at it through the mediation of England. A nuncio came in February from Rome, with an offer of the Pope's services, but he could not obtain admission into the Emperor's presence<sup>1</sup> The King of France assured Pickering that, so far as he was concerned, he desired nothing better than to place himself in English hands Yet Pickering, who was a shrewd, clear-sighted man, at the close of a long and smooth interview, came to a conclusion 'that England would do well to trust neither of those princes' They would regard no promise, no duty, no obligation, which might interfere with 'their own convenience'<sup>2</sup> He might have added that England also was only consulting her

convenience; but, from the correspondence of the three Courts, there appear to have been in each of them, as usual, separate parties with separate policies whose views crossed and intercepted one another

On the 2nd of April, the Bishop of Norwich and Sir Philip Hoby went to Brussels, whither Charles had

<sup>1</sup> 'And because it will not be,' said Morryson, 'he is in such a chafe that there are few here that can get leave from him to eat eggs this Lent If men were as wise as he is stubborn, they might perhaps drive him to be the suitor, and to pray them to take his licenses, not only to eat

eggs, but to eat eggs' sons and daughters, if they come in their way'—Morryson to the Council MS *Germany*, Edward VI State Paper Office

<sup>2</sup> Pickering to the Council MS *France*, bundle 10, State Paper Office

removed, to repeat the proposals which had been made through Dudley.<sup>1</sup> Morison was recalled, but his recall was immediately countermanded, and in May, Northumberland was corresponding with him on the feasibility of the league which had been spoken of before between England, the Empire, and the German States against France.<sup>2</sup> At the same time he was assuring Boisdaulphin, the French ambassador in England, 'that he would never bear arms unless in the service of his own sovereign, or of his Most Christian Majesty.' And again, simultaneously, an agent of the English Government in the Netherlands was privately betraying the secrets, so far as he knew them, of Northumberland's party to Charles.<sup>4</sup>

It is at once useless and unnecessary to trace the complicated involutions of a general distrust. It is clear only that so long as they were at war, both France and the Empire desired really the support of England. The Emperor was exhausted.<sup>5</sup>

May

<sup>1</sup> Their commission was signed somewhat singularly by all the Council except Northumberland—*MS Germany*, Edward VI State Paper Office.

<sup>2</sup> *MS. Ibid*

<sup>3</sup> Boisdaulphin to the King of France. *Ambassades de Noailles*, vol. II.

<sup>4</sup> *MS Germany*, Edward VI State Paper Office.

<sup>5</sup> Sir Philip Hoby sent a second sad picture of Charles's condition to Cecil: 'The Prince here is very feeble and weak of body, and every day decayeth more and more in the

same. So doth his credit in like manner decay, both in Germany, Italy, and all other places—nothing beloved, but disobeyed in a manner of all. Also out of soldiers' estimation Yea, and his proceedings in every place go very ill forward. So as it seemeth unto me good fortune hath forsaken him, and he is like every day faster and faster to diminish in love, estimation, and power, than presently he doth in strength of body, all be so earnestly bent against him so far as I can perceive.'—Hoby to Cecil. *Burleigh Papers*, vol. I.

France had its eye on Calais, but was in no condition, as yet, to strike for it. Northumberland, professing to be an impartial friend to both, was making secret and separate overtures to each, unknown to the other. Up to the time that Edward's illness showed a likelihood of terminating fatally, the Duke was uncertain in which direction it would be most for the advantage of England to incline the balance, while his own interests had no special bias either way. And again, aware of the disposition of the man with whom they had to deal, both Charles and Henry felt the necessity of watching the Duke, under the ostensible pretext of meeting the English offer of mediation, the ablest of their diplomatists were despatched to London to intrigue, to watch events, to obtain information by fair means, by foul means, by any means.

Simon Renard, the minister of the Emperor, had been governor of a district in Franche Comté. Unknown, as yet, to European fame, Renard was known to Sir Philip Hoby, who, writing to Cecil of the probability of Edward's death, and of the influence which he might exercise over Mary, should Mary succeed, exclaimed, 'If England should be ruled by such a councillor, woe, woe to England, for then it would come to ruin and destruction, and them that favour God's Word would be in worse case than those that were in the time of Sodom and Gomorrah.'<sup>1</sup> Antoine de Noailles, one of three distinguished brothers, of old and noble family

---

<sup>1</sup> Hoby to Cecil *Bailegh Papers*, vol 1.

had served with honour in the wars of Francis I. He was present at the defeat of the Emperor in Provence in 1536. Succeeding d'Annebault, as admiral of the French fleet, it was he who despatched Villegaignon to Scotland with the ships which brought Mary Stuart into France; and he was governor of Bordeaux at the time when he was chosen by the King for the delicate mission to England. Noailles reached London in the middle of May. Renard not till six weeks later. From the despatches of these two, and before their arrival, from those of Scheyfne and Boisdaulphin, the ambassadors in ordinary, is to be gathered so much as can be ascertained of the secret history of the attempt of Northumberland to alter the succession to the Crown.

No sooner was Edward known to have been removed to Greenwich in consequence of illness, than his death was instinctively anticipated. Only once, after his arrival there, he was seen in the garden; after that he was confined entirely to his room. By the end of April he was spitting blood, his disorder presenting the same symptoms which had preceded the death of his brother the Duke of Richmond, and the country was felt to be on the eve of a new reign. Vast as, at such a prospect, the excitement must have been, the accession of Mary, should the King die, was looked forward to as a matter of course. The long agitation of the subject, the anxieties and the scandals which the uncertainty had occasioned in the last reign, and the deliberate settlement of the Crown by Act of Parliament as well as by her father's will, in Mary's favour, had familiarized the

minds of all men with the name of the Princess as their future sovereign, should Edward leave no children. The question had been mooted, had been discussed, had been decided; and on grounds of public safety there was no disposition to raise further doubt on a subject of so much magnitude. Although a queen was a novelty in the constitution, the people would rather submit to a queen, and to a queen of ambiguous legitimacy, than risk the chance of another War of the Roses.

Personally Mary was popular. She had lived in retirement, and her objections to the later developments of the Reformation were well known; but on this point she had the support of a powerful party. The sufferings of her mother, and the religious persecution which she had herself undergone, had secured her the affection of the people, which as yet she had done nothing to forfeit. A return to communion with the See of Rome was unthought of. Mary herself was not supposed to desire what, in common with the rest of the country, she had renounced under her father. A return to the constitution of religion as her father left it, was probably the wish of three quarters of the English nation. The orthodox Catholics were outraged by the imprisonment of the bishops, and the establishment by law of opinions which they execrated as heresy. The moderate English party had no sympathy with a tyranny which had thrust the views of foreign Reformers by force upon the people. Even the citizens of London, where Protestantism had the strongest hold, had been exasperated by the offensive combination of sacrilege and spoliation with a pe-



dantry which could not bear the sound of the church-bells, and regarded an organ as impious. The clergy at the moment when the King's illness became serious were being subjected to a compulsory subscription to the Forty-two Articles, under pain of ejection from their benefices; while the universal corruption of public functionaries, the sufferings of the poor, the ruin of the currency, and the embarrassment of the finances, reflected double discredit on the opinions of which these were considered the results. It was assumed that Mary was English, that she would govern only through an English Parliament and with English ministers. The tyranny of Rome had not been broken that it might be followed by a more intolerable tyranny of Protestantism.

Northumberland bowed outwardly to the general feeling. He supplied the Princess, who was then at Hunsdon in Hertfordshire, with regular bulletins of the King's health, and he restored to her the arms and quarterings which she had borne as heir-presumptive before the divorce of her mother.<sup>1</sup> Yet it was observed that he was collecting money with unusual eagerness. There were rumours of disagreement at the council-board. It was said that Lord Pembroke had desired to leave London, and had been forcibly compelled to remain;<sup>2</sup> and at the end of April a marriage was announced as about to take place between Lord Guilford Dudley, the Duke's fourth son, a boy of seventeen, and Lady Jane Grey.<sup>3</sup> Whatever may have been

<sup>1</sup> Scheyfne to the Emperor: Scheyfne's Despatches. *MS Rolls House*. Transcript from the Brussels Archives

<sup>2</sup> Scheyfne.

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid*

his internal speculations, however, Northumberland had so far given no hints of intending a change to the privy council. Mary's friends among the Lords were in constant communication with Scheyfne, and through Scheyfne with the Princess. Not a word was spoken, not a move of importance was made, but the ambassador had instant notice. In fact, Northumberland himself

was still hesitating. Three times in the month of May his instructions to Sir Richard Morryson were altered. At the beginning there was to be a league between England, the Empire, and the Germans. A few days later Morryson was told to go no further with it.<sup>1</sup> On the 24th he was informed doubtfully that he might feel his way towards it with the Emperor again. Had the Duke intended merely to throw the Emperor off his guard, vacillation would have been unnatural and out of place. Deliberate hypocrisy cannot afford to be inconsistent.

It is needless to credit Northumberland with anxiety for the public interest. He must first have endeavoured to satisfy himself of the effects which Mary's accession would produce upon his own fortunes. Could he have hoped to retain his present authority, ambition for his family would not have tempted him into an effort to set her aside; and he may have believed that his underhand manœuvring had given him a hold on the Princess's gratitude. But he must soon have convinced himself that any such expectation would be disappointed. On

---

<sup>1</sup> Instructions to Sir Richard Morryson. *Cotton. MSS. Galba*, 12.

the day that Mary set her foot upon the throne the gates of the Tower would open; Norfolk and Gardiner would return to the council, and the conservative lords to the Court. The lips of those that he had oppressed would be opened. Somerset's murder would rise in judgment against him. He knew too well 'the dead men's bones and all uncleanness' which lay concealed behind the fair surface of his godly professions. Was there, then, any hope that the succession could be changed? The fanatics dreaded Mary as much as Northumberland dreaded her. However moderate might be her policy, the best which they could look for would be toleration. They would lose their supremacy, and the privilege of forcing their opinions upon others. The Duke might rely, therefore, on them and on their leaders among the bishops. But the ultra-faction was numerically small; and unless he could strengthen his hands with more influential support, his chances were nothing. It was possible for him, however, to work upon many of the laity with the phantom of reaction, which, under the mildest form, had its terrors for those to whom, by grant or purchase, the estates of the Church had fallen. It was possible to work upon the superstition of the King, who had been made bitter against his sister by the collusion into which he had been forced with her. The weak Duke of Suffolk could be led away by the prospect of a crown for his daughter; and there were others among the new-made lords whose influence, if not fortune, depended on the continuance in power of the revolutionary party. Above all Northumberland had

possession of the situation. He had the organized military force of the kingdom at his disposal, which was at this time considerable. The fleet, the arsenals, the fortresses, the treasury were all in his hands; and he might count with certainty on the support of France, which would be only too happy to prevent the Crown of England from falling to so close a connection of the Emperor.

These considerations (and there were others, perhaps, which we do not know) might have seemed to the most calculating statesman to offer a reasonable chance of success. A desperate man, with ruin staring him in the face if he left events to take their course—with power for himself and the kingdom for his family if he tried fortune and found her favourable—would have thrown the hazard with far lighter grounds of hope. The Duke waited, however, before he moved—before, probably, he took his own final resolution—till it became quite certain that Edward could not recover.

The prospect of Mary becoming Queen was naturally raising the spirits of the Imperialists. Boisdaulphin, with Noailles, who had just arrived, was correspondingly anxious; Scheyfne, they saw, was 'not asleep;' and on

May 4. the 4th of May they pressed for a private interview with the Duke. They had been long

anxious, they said, to be admitted to the King's presence. They had been answered that his illness made it impossible for him to receive them; but up the mean time the longer they were kept from the Court, the more significant of the approaching attitude of England their

absence would appear. They suggested that, if they could not see the King, the world might be made to suppose that they had seen him. A plan was arranged. The next day they were invited to dine at Greenwich, and as they were rising from the table, Northampton brought a message into the room that Edward was expecting them. They followed into a private apartment; and while the Court believed that they were by the sick-bed, they were joined by Northumberland and others of the council, who entered at large with them on the great question of the moment. The Duke declared that he was wholly French, and as the conversation went forward, he at last asked them what they would do, were they in his (the Duke's) position. Noailles, cautious of what he committed to paper, informed his master that he did not fail to suggest what would be most to the advantage of France<sup>1</sup>.

The same day, Edward being reported worse, and his attendants requiring further advice, the family physician of Northumberland was called in, with a professor of medicine from Oxford, to these a woman was afterwards added, who professed to be in possession of some mysterious specific; and before they were admitted to the sick-room they were sworn, in the presence of Northumberland, Northampton, and Suffolk, to reveal to no one the

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Il est venu, jusques à nous demander ce que nous fissions si nous estions en sa place, à quoi nous n'avons obmis, sire, de luy respondre et proposer tout ce que nous avons

<p>peu juger tendre au bien faveure et          avantage de vos affaires — Bois-          dauphin and Noailles to the King          of France <i>Ambassad</i> 3, 11 11 pp          6, 7.</p>
--

King's condition.<sup>1</sup> The guard at the Tower was doubled, and a rumour spread in London that Elizabeth had been sent for to be married to Lord Warwick, whose wife was to be divorced to make room for her. A few days later Scheyfne reported that something (he knew not what) was going forward. Five hundred men had been quietly introduced into Windsor Castle by Northampton. He had been privately informed that the same nobleman, with Suffolk and two or three others, was going down into Hertfordshire, to form a cordon silently round Hunsdon, to take possession of Mary's person, when the signal should be given them from London. With evident alarm, he added that Pembroke was one of the

May 25 conspirators,<sup>2</sup> which, on the 25th of May, received a further and a strange confirmation

On that day London was startled with three extraordinary marriages — extraordinary, and, considering the King's illness, and the rank of the ladies concerned, in the highest degree indecent. Lady Catherine Dudley was married to Lord Hastings. The two elder daughters of the Duke of Suffolk, princesses of the blood, and possible heirs of the crown, were disposed of together; Lady Jane Grey to Lord Guilford Dudley; and Lady Catherine to Pembroke's son, Lord Herbert. There had been an alarm lest Mary or Elizabeth might make some objectionable alliance with a foreigner. Care was taken that there should be

<sup>1</sup> Scheyfne.

<sup>2</sup> Northumberland said afterwards that Pembroke was the first

originator of the plot. This is not likely, but the evidence does not warrant a certain conclusion.

no such fear on account of those who were next to them in the order of succession. That some project was concealed behind these precipitate unions, and that the Duke had secured a powerful supporter in the Earl of Pembroke, was no longer doubted.

Yet what the project was continued a mystery. On the 30th Scheyfne wrote again May 30 that the King was sinking slowly but surely. His head and legs were swelling, and he could only sleep with the assistance of opiates; he might perhaps live two months, but that was the longest; while an attempt, it was now certain, would be made to exclude Mary from the throne. Religion would be one pretext, and others could be made or found. France would assist—bribed, so Scheyfne had been told, by the promise of Ireland. Elizabeth could be got rid of or married to Warwick, or Northumberland would take her, and seize the crown for himself<sup>1</sup>

Through the first days of June the ambassador's reports acquired more and more June consistency. As each step was taken he had instant and accurate information. There had been a difficulty in arranging the plans for the seizure of Mary. The Lords, who were to have been her captors, had either disagreed among themselves, or their fidelity was doubtful. Northumberland and his friends were buying up or securing all the arms in London; ships in the river were preparing for sea. The plan was now to wait for

---

<sup>1</sup> Scheyfne to Charles V, May 30. *Rolls II n. MSS*

the King's death, and then at once to seize the noblemen who were expected to take Mary's side. Mary herself was to be invited to the Tower to receive the Crown, and then to be secured. The Duke was keeping up an appearance of studied respect towards her. He flattered himself that his secret had been kept, and that she would fall without difficulty into the snare. The Tower gates safely locked behind her, the ports were to be closed, and the evangelical preachers were to inform the people from the pulpits that, being illegitimate, she was incapable of sovereignty; that religion would be in danger; that the holders of Church property would be deprived of their estates; that the Papal jurisdiction would be restored, and that, on constitutional grounds, England could not be ruled over by a woman. Elizabeth's person would be secured with Mary's, but she would be treated with more respect, since the Duke might find it necessary to make use of her.

So stood the plot as it was communicated to Scheyfne in the first week in June. But, although Northumberland was confident of success, he was assured privately that the opposition would be more considerable than was anticipated. Mary was as generally popular as the Duke was detested; all the peers but a few, Reformers as well as Catholics, would take her side, they might appear to be swimming with the stream, but they would strike clear from it when the time came for action. The supposed secrecy was a delusion. The conspiracy was in every one's mouth, and the people were furious. The Duke was accused of having sold the country to



France; but the King of France, men said, should never set foot in England. The jealousy with which Edward was guarded only stimulated suspicion. Some said that he was already dead, others that the Duke had poisoned him; to which the Protestants had their answering accusation that his sister Mary had 'overlooked' him; that his illness became mortal from the day when she was last in his presence.<sup>1</sup>

In other times the popular discontent would have expressed itself in a violent form, but London was overawed by the 'gendarmerie,' who could have extinguished in blood any merely popular tumult. The council had not been formally consulted, and no opinions on either side had been officially expressed. Yet none of those who were suspected of being unfavourable to the Duke felt their lives secure; Cecil, walking with a friend in Greenwich Park, whispered his own misgivings, for himself, he said, he would be no party to treason, and he had resigned his office of secretary; but he went about ever after armed, in dread, he avowed, of assassination; he secreted his money and papers and prepared to fly.<sup>2</sup>

Meantime Northumberland had made important progress, he had persuaded Edward. Edward had consented by a strained imitation of the precedent of Henry VIII. to name his successor by letters patent, or by will; and the council and the Lords could thus be forced into an appearance of acquiescence which they

<sup>1</sup> Scheyne to Charles V, May 30: *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Alford to Cecil. *Tytler*, vol. II

would find it difficult to refuse to the entreaties of a dying prince. When Edward's mind was first set working upon the subject, the extremity of his danger was concealed from him, and Scheyfne was informed rightly, that one of the points pressed upon his consideration was the objection to a female sovereign. The plot was altogether precipitate and inconsistent: the Duke had resolved on nothing beyond setting Mary aside. Some time in the beginning of June Edward wrote with his own hand what he called 'his device for the succession' <sup>1</sup>

For lack of issue *male* of my body to the ~~issue male coming of the issue female,~~ as I have after declared: to the Lady Frances's <sup>2</sup> heirs males, ~~for lack of if she have any such issue before my death:~~ to the Lady Jane's *and her* heirs males To the Lady Catherine's heirs males To the Lady Mary's heirs males To the heirs males of the daughters which she [*i. e.* the Duchess of Suffolk] shall have hereafter Then to the Lady Margaret's heirs males <sup>3</sup> For lack of such issue, to the heirs males of the Lady Jane's

<sup>1</sup> It was altered by him in the interval between the first draft and his death, and the omissions and insertions mark the progress of the design. The reader will observe that the words which have a pen-stroke through them were in the original device, and were subsequently crossed out. The words in italics were insertions, but, like the original, were written by Edward

himself. I transcribe from the careful copy printed for the Camden Society by Mr John Gough Nichols.—*Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, Appendix

<sup>2</sup> Frances, Duchess of Suffolk, daughter of Mary, sister of Henry VIII and Charles Brandon

<sup>3</sup> Margaret Clifford, daughter of Eleanour, Countess of Cumberland

daughters To the heirs males of the Lady Catherine's daughters; and so forth, till you come to the Lady Margaret's daughters' heirs males'<sup>1</sup>

The 'device' tells its own story; a female sovereign was not contemplated, nor was Edward, when he drew it, aware of the near approach of his death. He evidently expected to live till one or both of the recent marriages had proved fruitful; he considered the possibility of his having children of his own; and the male offspring of his cousins was preferred to his own daughters, should daughters be born to him. But such an arrangement would not have answered Northumberland's intention. The King was now made to feel that he was dying 'The Lady Jane's heirs males' were

<sup>1</sup> The remaining clauses refer to the Government during the Regency, should Edward die before the heir should be of age

'If, after my death, the heir male be entered into 18 years old, then he to have the whole rule and governance thereof

'But if he be under 18, then his mother to be governess till he enters 18 years old but to do nothing without the advice and agreement of 6 parcel of a council to be appointed by my last will to the number of 20

'If the mother die before the heir enter into 18, the realm to be governed by the council, provided that after he be 14 years all great matters of importance be opened to him

... If I died without issue, and

there were none heirs male, then the Lady Frances to be governess. Lament. For lack of her, then her eldest daughters, and for lack of them, the Lady Margaret to be governess, after as is aforesaid, till some heir male be born, and then the mother of that child to be governess

'And if during the rule of the governess there die four of the council, then shall she by her letters call an assembly of the council within one month following, and choose four more, whom she shall have 5 voices, but after her death, the 10 shall choose among themselves till the heir come to 14 years old, and then he by their advice shall choose them.'

converted, by erasure and an insertion, into 'the Lady Jane and her heirs male.' Her mother, Lady Frances, was but thirty-seven years old and might still bear a son. This contingency was anticipated by a provision that the son, to succeed, must be born while Edward was alive. Thus altered, the weak, incoherent, impracticable arrangement was submitted to the Lords as the King's desire.

The reception of it was not favourable. The Marquis of Winchester, Lord Bedford, Sir Thomas Cheyne, Lord Shrewsbury, and Lord Arundel made the obvious objections that the power of bequeathing the crown had been granted exceptionally to Henry VIII., for peculiar reasons; that the disposition which had been made by Henry had been confirmed by statute; and that it was grotesque to suppose that a prince under age, and unauthorized, could set aside an Act of Parliament at his own pleasure:<sup>1</sup> the French, too, whatever present face they might please to wear, would be as little satisfied as the Emperor, if the late King's daughter were to be set aside in favour of another queen, they would, sooner or later, insist on the prior claims of Mary Stuart. The resistance was so decided that, on the 15th of June, it was believed that Northumberland would be driven after all to take possession of Elizabeth and try his fortune thus<sup>2</sup>

But the indispensable consent of Elizabeth herself, perhaps, could not be obtained; or else among the many

---

<sup>1</sup> Scheyfne MS.

<sup>2</sup> Scheyfne to the Emperor. MS

difficulties of a hazardous enterprise those attending the substitution of Jane Grey were the least. Northumberland could not retreat, the King was eager, and force could compensate for illegality. The Lives of the opposition were in Northumberland's power and they hesitated or they could not on the instant resolve on the course which they should pursue. A promise was made to them that Parliament should be called immediately, and that any steps which might be taken, should be subject to parliamentary revision.<sup>1</sup> They bent, therefore, before the immediate danger, and waited till they could have the support of the country in taking further measures.

The question of legality was referred to the judges.

On the 11th of June Chief Justice Montague received a letter, bearing the council's signatures, requiring him to present himself at Greenwich the following day with Sir Thomas Bromley, Sir John Baker and the Attorney- and Solicitor-General. The learned body were admitted into the King's apartment, and the King, in the last stage of exhaustion, in- June 12  
formed them that during his illness he had reflected on the condition and prospects of the country, the Lady Mary might marry a stranger, the laws and liberties of England might be sacrificed, and religion might be changed, he desired, therefore, that the succession might be altered. The scheme, in the corrected form, was read aloud in the room, and Edward required the

---

<sup>1</sup> Schutzfine to the Emperor MS

judges to draw out letters patent embodying his directions

The judges listened, and declared unanimously that the King demanded an impossibility. Letters patent would have no force against an Act of Parliament. But Edward would hear of no objections. He would have the letters patent drawn, and drawn immediately. The judges retired, requesting time

The two next days the council were in close session, the clerks and secretaries being excluded. Noailles, since the Queen of Scots had been named as a difficulty, had been admitted no further into confidence, and could learn nothing of what was going forward, only on all sides there were notes of preparation; the equipment of the fleet was hastened; a body of troops were reviewed in the Isle of Dogs, and forty pieces of cannon were shipped for Guisnes and Calais, at last an order appeared commanding all peers and great men in England to repair at once to London <sup>1</sup>

Meanwhile the judges were studying the Act of Succession, and had discovered, beyond all doubt, that, if they obeyed the King, they would lay themselves open

to prosecution as traitors <sup>2</sup> They returned to  
 June 15 Greenwich, and repeated to the council their inability to comply. Northumberland was absent when they entered; but, hearing of their arrival and of their

<sup>1</sup> Noailles to the King of France  
*Ambassades*, vol. II p. 34

<sup>2</sup> The tenth section of the Act  
 declares that any person going about

to undo the Act of interfere with  
 the succession as therein ordered,  
 should be guilty of high treason \*

answer, 'he came into the council chamber, being in great rage and fury, trembling for anger; and amongst his outrageous talk he called Sir Edward Montague traitor, and said that he would fight in his shirt with any man in the quarrel'<sup>1</sup> He was so savage, that the judges thought he would strike them, if they remained in the room. They escaped in haste, but the next day they were again sent for. They <sup>June 16</sup> were introduced in the midst of dead silence. 'The Lords looked on them with earnest countenance, as though they had not known them'<sup>2</sup> Not a word was spoken till they were called to the King's bed-side.

Edward, dying as he was, 'with sharp words and angry countenance, asked where were the letters patent? Why had they not been drawn?' Montague said that they would be useless without an Act of Parliament. and when Edward answered that he would call a Parliament, the Chief Justice begged that the question might be deferred till the meeting. But Edward would not hear of delay. The ratification might follow, for the present, he chose to be obeyed. A voice at Montague's back exclaimed, if the judges still refused, they were traitors. No lips were opened to support them; partly, perhaps, because the King's death-bed was not a fit place for an altercation, partly because opposition at that time might have led to instant bloodshed.

---

<sup>1</sup> Montague's Narrative printed in FULLER'S *Church History* | time the Duke had gained over his  
<sup>2</sup> Ibid | opponents. On the 17th June,  
<sup>3</sup> Noailles thought that at this | he says, he found the council in  
better spirits than he had seen them

Bromley was timid, Baker would go with Sir Edward, and Sir Edward was 'an old man without comfort' They reflected that they could not be committing treason by obeying the King as long as the King was alive, and they satisfied their consciences by resolving to meddle no further after he was gone. They demanded for their greater security special instructions in writing, and a pardon if their consent should prove to have been a crime. This being granted, they complied. The remaining judges, who were next called in, agreed to the same terms, Sir James Hales, a Protestant, alone holding out to the last. The Solicitor-General Gosnold resisted long. 'How the Duke and the Earl of Shrewsbury handled him,' says Montague, 'he can tell himself.'<sup>1</sup> Gosnold, too, yielded at last, and the letters patent were drawn out, engrossed, and passed under the Great Seal. The King's sisters were declared incapable of succeeding to the Crown, as being both of them illegitimate With a strange inconsequence of reasoning, it was added that, even had their birth been pure, being but of half-

since his arrival Their own explanation was that the King's health had improved Noailles believed, however, that their satisfaction 'provenoit plus du contentement en quoy les milords se trouvent pour s'estre resolus tous en une opinion, ou pour y parvenir ont tenu beaucoup de journées, estant resseriez et ne se pouvant accorder pour raison de ce que le milord trésorier et aucuns autres estoient de contraire

volunté à celle du Duc de Northumberland, lequel les avoit depuis unis et fait condescendre à la sienne' —NOAILLES, vol. ii p. 40 Scheyfne on the contrary, was assured, and believed, that the complaisance was throughout assumed

<sup>1</sup> It were curious to know—Shrewsbury had been active in opposition to the Duke, and, after Edward's death, was among the first to declare against him.



blood to the King, they would not be his heirs,<sup>1</sup> and, further, they might compromise the country by undesirable marriages. The succession was therefore disposed in the altered order which Edward had prescribed; and the document being prepared, it remained only that Northumberland should compel every one whose rank or influence made him formidable, to commit himself to the substitution by his signature.

On the 21st of June he collected at Greenwich the Archbishop of Canterbury, the Lord Chancellor, twenty-two peers, eight eldest sons of peers, ministers, secretaries of State, judges, officers of the household. Of all whose support would be useful, of all whose opposition had to be dreaded, Lord William Howard and Lord Derby alone were absent, and Lord Derby was represented by his son. The rest came together at the Duke's bidding, and, willingly or unwillingly, gave their names to his design.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'As also for that the said Lady Mary and Lady Elizabeth be unto us but of the half-blood, and, therefore, by the ancient laws, statutes, and customs of this realm, be not inheritable unto us, although they were legitimate, as they be not indeed.'—Letters Patent for the Limitation of the Crown *Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, p 93

<sup>2</sup> I transcribe Mr Nichols's excellent analysis of the signatures —

Great officers of State and  
Peers  
The Archbishop of Canterbury,

Goodrich, Bishop of Ely, Lord Chancellor, Marquis of Winchester, Lord Treasurer. Duke of Northumberland, Grand Master of the Household, Earl of Bedford, Lord Privy Seal, Duke of Suffolk, Marquis of Northampton, Earls of Arundel, Oxford, Westmoreland, Shrewsbury, Worcester, Huntingdon, and Pembroke, Lord Clinton Lord Darcy, the Bishop of London, Lords Abergavenny, Cobham, Grey de Wilton, Windsor, Bray, Watworth, Rich, Willoughby and Paget  
Eldest Sons of Peers  
Lords, Warwick, son of the Duke

They signed without order; ardent Protestants side by side with the attached friends of Mary; city merchants intermixed with privy councillors; and some names appear in so singular a connection, that it is hazardous to suggest the principle which guided the

of Northumberland, Fitzwalters, of the Earl of Sussex, Talbot, of the Earl of Shrewsbury, St John of Basing, of the Marquis of Winchester, Russell, of the Earl of Bedford, Fitzwarren, of the Earl of Bath, Gerald Fitzgerald, heir of the earldom of Kildare, Strange, son of Lord Derby, Lord Thomas Grey, brother of the Duke of Suffolk.

#### Officers of the Household

Sir R. Cheyne, Treasurer and Warden of the Cinque Ports, commonly called Lord Warden, Sir William Cavendish, Treasurer for the Chamber; Sir Richard Cotton, Controller; Sir John Gates, Vice-Chamberlain

#### Secretaries of State

Sir William Petre, Sir William Cecil, Sir John Cheke

#### Judges

Sir Roger Cholmeley, Chief Justice of the King's Bench, Sir Edward Montague, Chief Justice of the Common Pleas, Henry Bradshaw, Chief Baron of the Exchequer, Sir John Baker, Chancellor of the Exchequer, Sir Humfrey Brown, Justice of the Common Pleas, Sir William Portman, Justice

of the King's Bench, Sir Robert Bowes, Master of the Rolls

The King's Sergeant  
James Dyer.

The Solicitor General.  
John Gosnold

#### Privy Counsellors

Sir John Mason, Sir Ralph Sadler, Sir Richard Sackville, Sir Edward North, Sir Anthony St Leger, Sir Richard Southwell

#### Knights of the Privy Chamber

Sir Thomas Wroth, Sir Henry Sydney, Sir Maurice Berkeley, Sir Nicholas Throgmorton, Sir Richard Blount, Sir Henry Gage.

[The Lord Mayor Sir George Barnes

Aldermen. Sir John Gresham, Sir Andrew Judd, Sir Richard Dobbs, Sir Augustine Hinde, Sir John Lambard, Sir Thomas Offley

Sheriff of Middlesex Sir William Garrard

Sheriffs of Kent and Surrey  
Sir Anthony Brown, Sir Robert Southwell

Six Merchants of the Staple,  
Six Merchants Adventurers]

The mayor and the citizens did not sign till the 8th of July.

arrangement<sup>1</sup> The judges, when they produced the document, again protested that it was worthless, and they must have signed as a form, Cecil, after long refusal, wrote his name at last at the King's desire; but insisting, as he did it, that he signed only as a witness. Many, perhaps, like Montague, saved their consciences with an intention of resisting afterwards when the King should have died. Some signed, it can hardly be doubted, with a deliberate intention of deceiving and betraying the Duke of Northumberland. Winchester, Bedford, and Cheyne continued their opposition, notwithstanding their apparent compliance, and were insisting in council, two days after, on the necessity of maintaining the original Act of Succession<sup>2</sup>

Cranmer, though he headed the list, was the last who subscribed on the 21st of June. The Archbishop, who had been on bad terms with the Duke since Somerset's death, was among the latest to be informed of his project. He, of all men, had most to fear from the accession of the daughter of Queen Catherine; but Northumberland knew his disposition too well to seek his confidence or expect his support;<sup>3</sup> he had been informed only as soon as his outward concurrence became necessary. On learning the Duke's intentions, he went

<sup>1</sup> Lord Paget, for instance, is separated from the peers, and appears between Sir Anthony St Leger and Sir Thomas Wroth

<sup>2</sup> Scheyfne to Charles V., June 23

<sup>3</sup> 'The Duke never opened his

mouth to me to move me nor his heart was not such towards me, seeking long time my destruction, that he would ever trust me in such a matter, or think that I would be persuaded by him' — Cranmer to Mary STUART's *Life of Cranmer*

at once to Edward, and in the presence of Lord Northampton, remonstrated with him. Finding the King obstinate, he requested a private audience, which the Duke was too prudent to permit. He then endeavoured to move the council. Northumberland told him that the judges had acquiesced, and that it was not for him to interfere with the King's pleasure,<sup>1</sup> yet he continued to hold off, and, finding his remonstrances useless, he absented himself from Greenwich on the day of the signature. But the Archbishop's name could not be dispensed with. He was sent for, and came in only after the rest had signed. He said that he had sworn to maintain the will of Henry VIII. If he signed the letters patent, he was perjured. The Duke and his friends replied that they had sworn as well as he, and if he had a conscience, so had they. He did not judge their consciences, he said, but he must act for himself by his own. He would not sign till he had again seen his master, and he was taken to the King's room.

Edward there assured him that the change of the succession had the sanction of the judges; neither himself nor his subjects could be bound by his father's will; he had a right to act for the good of the commonwealth by his own judgment.<sup>2</sup> The Archbishop had not been present at Montague's protest, and knew nothing of it. He desired to see the judges himself; and the judges having satisfied their own consciences that treason was not treason while the King lived, now told him that he

---

<sup>1</sup> STYVE'S *Life of Crommer*.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

might sign, if he wished it, without breach of the law. He returned, still hesitating, to the King's bedside. Edward told him he hoped that he would not stand out alone, 'and be more repugnant to his will than all the rest of the council;' and at this last appeal the Archbishop yielded. Others signed with mental reservations, of which, in their subsequent defence of themselves, they made the most. Cranmer made no reservations, and pretended to none. When called to account by Mary, he said frankly that, when he signed at last, 'he did it unfeignedly and without dissimulation.'<sup>1</sup>

The letters patent were thus completed; but the Duke still felt himself insecure, and those who might be suspected of equivocating were compelled to bind themselves with a second chain. An engagement was attached to the scheme as drawn by the King, by which all the council, except Lord Arundel, promised that they would maintain the succession as it was there determined, 'to the uttermost of their power,' and 'never at any time during their lives would swerve from it'<sup>2</sup>

The last precautions were thus taken, and the conspirators had then to sit still till the King's death, which was now every day expected. Since the 11th of June

<sup>1</sup> STREEPE'S *Life of Cranmer*

<sup>2</sup> *Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, p. 90 — Montague subscribed to this, with Baker and the Attorney and Solicitor-General, although they had assumed the council to the last that the letters patent were valueless, and had, as they said, resolved

to move no step, after the King's death, to carry them into effect. I suppose that the bond was devised to catch those who might have signed with reservations, and the judges having given their names once, could not help themselves.

he had eaten nothing, on the 14th he was thought at one time to be gone. The care of him was now exclusively committed to the nameless woman, who, when the physicians despaired, had professed a belief that she could effect a cure<sup>1</sup> But his disorder evidently grew worse, and assumed anomalous forms, it was said to be an affection of the lungs; but symptoms appeared which could have been occasioned by no disorder of the lungs. Eruptions came out over his skin; his hair fell off, and then his nails, and afterwards the joints of his toes and fingers,<sup>2</sup> and rumour said that Northumberland, having made his arrangements, could not afford to wait, and was hastening the natural arrival of death with poison.<sup>3</sup>

While these events were in progress, Mary, whom the Duke believed to be ignorant of all that had passed,

<sup>1</sup> HAYWARD'S *Life of Edward VI* Scheyfne

<sup>2</sup> SCHEYFNE

<sup>3</sup> The suspicion that Edward was poisoned was shared both by Catholic and Protestant Machyn, a contemporary citizen of London, says that no one doubted it—*Diary*, p. 35 Burcher, writing to Bullinger, says 'That wretch, the Duke of Northumberland, has committed an enormous crime Our excellent King was taken off by poison, his nails and hair fell off,' &c Renard, on the 6th of August, informed Charles V. that, by Mary's order, Edward's body had been examined, and it was found 'que les artoix des piedz luy estoient tumbéz et qu'il a esté empoissonné'—Renard's Despatches

*MS Rolls House* The symptoms, certainly, do not resemble those of any known disorder On the other hand, when a life came to an end on which much depended, there was always a suspicion of poison, and although Northumberland was not a man to have hesitated, had the acceleration of the death been important to him he would have gained no advantage from it in the least commensurate with the crime The probable truth was perhaps this that the woman to whose exclusive care the King was culpably committed, administered mineral medicines in over-doses, and that Edward was in fact poisoned, though not by deliberate malice.

found means, though she was narrowly watched, to communicate with Scheyfne, and desired him to let the Emperor know her situation, and ask his advice. On the 23rd of June, a rising was expected in London.<sup>1</sup> The Protestant clergy, who were the only persons that heartily exerted themselves in the conspiracy, gave out in their pulpits that the King was dying, and that religion would be in danger from Mary. The people listened so ominously, that the guards at the gates were doubled. The Duke of Norfolk, Gardiner, and the other prisoners in the Tower, who had been allowed to walk on the leads and in the gardens, were confined to their rooms, Lord Dacres, who was leaving London, was detained, and other suspected persons were arrested, and on the 24th of June Scheyfne was told that the Duke found his embarrassments so great, <sup>June 24</sup> that he was giving up the game. Three quarters of the country were determined to support Mary, and her friends on the council sent a message through Scheyfne to the Emperor, to say that the slightest demonstration, on his part, in his cousin's favour, would suffice to insure her accession.<sup>2</sup>

In his extremity Northumberland was obliged again to appeal to France. It was now whispered at Paris that, should Mary become Queen, Charles had already destined her for Philip of Spain; and the union of England and Spain, under a common sovereign, was a danger which every French statesman felt himself called

---

<sup>1</sup> NOAILLES

<sup>2</sup> Scheyfne to Charles V. *MS. Rolls House*

upon to make an effort to prevent. In the last  
June 27. week in June, therefore, fresh communications passed between the King of France and the conspirators; promises were given of help, at which the Duke recovered heart; he demanded a loan from the city, and when there was hesitation, he threatened that the voluntary loan should be a forced one. Troops were raised in all directions; the forts in Essex were dismantled of cannon to furnish the fleet; and by the 1st of July twenty sail were ready armed and manned at Greenwich to intercept any descent which might be attempted from Flanders: Scheyfne comforted himself with ascertaining that the crews had been pressed, and were not to be depended on; but the preparations in London threatened to crush resistance in the capital.

July 4. On the 4th of July the King was believed to be dead. A wan face had been seen at a window of the palace at Greenwich; Edward had been lifted out of bed, and carried to the casement, that the people might assure themselves with their own eyes that he was living. But the suspicion was only deepened; the spectators believed that they had seen a corpse.<sup>1</sup> Scheyfne was by this time informed minutely of the circumstances of the letters patent. Parliament was to meet in September, and Parliament he was assured would replace the Princess Mary in her rights; but the danger was that in the mean time she would be made away with. She had been warned by some secret friend to move

---

<sup>1</sup> SCHEYFNE



further from London, if possible, to Framlingham Castle, in Norfolk, where she would find friends.<sup>1</sup>

On the first Sunday in the month it was observed that the preacher at Paul's Cross 'did neither pray for the Lady Mary's Grace, nor the Lady Elizabeth's.'<sup>2</sup> On the Friday following the French ambassador detected an unusual movement; he had been promised an audience, but a message was brought to put him off. There was no longer any king in England. On the evening of Thursday, the 6th of July, the anniversary, as pious Catholics did not fail to observe, of the execution of Sir Thomas More, the last male child of the Tudor race had ceased to suffer

---

<sup>1</sup> Scheyne to the Emperor, July 4

<sup>2</sup> *Grey Friars' Chronicle*.

## CHAPTER XXX.

### QUEEN JANE AND QUEEN MARY.

July 7      **T**HE death of Edward VI. was ushered in with signs and wonders, as if heaven and earth were in labour with revolution. The hail lay upon the grass in the London gardens as red as blood. At Middleton Stony in Oxfordshire, anxious lips reported that a child had been born with one body, two heads, four feet and hands<sup>1</sup>. About the time when the letters patent were signed there came a storm such as no living Englishman remembered. The summer evening grew black as night. Cataracts of water flooded the houses in the city and turned the streets into rivers, trees were torn up by the roots and whirled through the air, and a more awful omen—the forked lightning—struck down the steeple of the church where the heretic service had been read for the first time<sup>2</sup>.

The King died a little before nine o'clock on Thurs-

---

<sup>1</sup> *Grey Friars' Chronicle* MA-CHYN | *Edward VI.*, printed at Venice, 1558. A copy of this rare book is

<sup>2</sup> BAOWARD'S *History of the Revolution in England on the Death of* in the Bodleian Library at Oxford

day evening. His death was made a secret; but in the same hour a courier was galloping through the twilight to Hunsdon to bid Mary mount and fly. Her plans had been for some days prepared. She had been directed to remain quiet, but to hold herself ready to be up and away at a moment's warning. The lords who were to close her in would not be at their posts, and for a few hours the roads would be open. The Howards were looking for her in Norfolk; and thither she was to ride at her best speed, proclaiming her accession as she went along, and sending out her letters calling loyal Englishmen to rise in her defence.

So Mary's secret friends had instructed her to act, as her one chance. Mary, who, like all the Tudors, was most herself in the moments of greatest danger, followed a counsel boldly which agreed with her own opinion, and when Lord Robert Dudley came in the morning with a company of horse to look for her, she was far away. Relays of horses along the road, and such other precautions as could be taken without exciting suspicion, had doubtless not been overlooked.

Far different advice had been sent to her by the new ambassadors of the Emperor. Scheyfne, who understood England and English habits, and who was sanguine of her success, had agreed to a course which had probably been arranged in concert with him; but on the 6th, the day of Edward's death, Renard and M. de Courieres, arrived from Brussels. To Renard, accustomed to countries where governments were everything and peoples nothing, for a single woman to proclaim

herself Queen in the face of those who had the armed force of the kingdom in their hands, appeared like madness. Little confidence could be placed in her supposed friends, since they had wanted resolution to refuse their signatures to the instrument of her deposition. The Emperor could not move; although he might wish well to her cause, the alliance of England was of vital importance to him, and he would not compromise himself with the faction whose success, notwithstanding Scheyfne's assurance, he looked upon as certain. Renard, therefore, lost not a moment in entreating the Princess not to venture upon a course from which he anticipated inevitable ruin. If the nobility or the people desired to have her for Queen, they would make her Queen. There was no need for her to stir.<sup>1</sup> The remonstrance

<sup>1</sup> Avant nostre arrivées elle mist en délibération avec aulcuns de ses plus confidens ce qu'elle debvroit faire, advenant la dicte morte, la quelle treuva, que incontinent la dicte morte decouverte, elle se devoit publier royne par lettres et escriptz, et qu'en ce faisant, elle conciteroit plusieurs à se déclarer pour la maintenir telle, (et aussy que y a quelque observance par de çà que celui ou celle qui est appelé à la couronne se doit incontinent tel déclarer et publier) pour la haine qu'ilz portent audiet duc, le tenant tran et indigne, s'estant absolument resoluë qu'elle debroit suyvre ceste conclusion et conseil, autrement elle tomberoit en danger de sa personne plus grand qu'elle n'est et perdrait l'esper de parvenir à la

couronne. La quelle conclusion avons treuvé estrange, difficile, et dangereuse, pour les raisons soubzscriptes pour aultant que toutes les forces du pays sont es mains dudiet duc que la dicte dame n'a espoir de contraires forces ny d'assistance pour donner pied à ceulx qu'ilz adhérer luy voudroient, que se publiant royne, le roy et royne désignés par le dict testament (encores qu'il soit mal) prendroient fondement, de l'invalir par la force et que n'y aura moien d'y résister si vostre majesté ne s'en empesche, ce que avons pesé pour les grands affaires et empeschemens qu'elle a contre les François et en divers lieux, que ne semble convenir que l'on concite en ceste saison les Angloys contre vostre Majesté et ses pays.

agreed fully with the opinion of Charles himself, who replied to Renard's account of his conduct with complete approval of it.<sup>1</sup> The Emperor's power was no longer equal to an attitude of menace, he had been taught, by the repeated blunders of Reginald Pole, to distrust accounts of popular English sentiment; and he disbelieved entirely in the ability of Mary and her friends to cope with a conspiracy so broadly contrived, and supported by the countenance of France.<sup>2</sup> But Mary was probably gone from Hunsdon before advice arrived, to which she had been lost if she had listened. She had ridden night and day without a halt for a hundred miles to Keninghall, a castle of the Howards on the Waveney river. There, in safe hands, she would

Comme n'avons peu communiquer verbalement avec elle, l'avons advertie desdicts difficultés. . . Que si la noblesse ses adherens, ou le peuple la desiroit et maintenoit pour royne, il le pourroit démonstrer par l'effect, que la question estoit grande même entre barbares et gens de telle condition que les Angloys. . . luy touchant ces difficultez pour le respect de sa personne et pour suivre la fin de la dicté instruction qu'est de non troubler le royaume au désavantage de vostre Majesté —The Ambassadors in England to the Emperor: *Papiers d'Etat du Cardinal de Granvelle*, vol iv pp 19, 20

<sup>1</sup> Nous avons veu par vos lettres l'avertissement qu'avez donné soubz main à Madame la princesse nostre

cousine, afin qu'elle ne se laisse forcompter par ceux qui lui persuadent qu'elle se haste de se déclarer pour royne, que nous a semble très bien pour les raisons et considerations touchez en vosdictes lettres —The Emperor to the Ambassadors Ibid pp 24, 25

<sup>2</sup> Ne se pouvoient faire grand fondement sur la faveur et affection que aucuns particuliers et le peuple peuvent porter à nostredicte cousine, ne fust que y en y eust plus grant nombre ou des principaulx, n'estant cela souffisant pour contreminer la negociation si fondée et de si longue main que le dict duc de Northumberland a eue avec l'assistance que doubtez de France—Ibid pp 25, 26.

try the effect of an appeal to her country. If the nation was mute, she would then escape to the Low Countries.<sup>1</sup>

In London, during Friday and Saturday, the death of Edward was known and unknown. Every one talked of it as certain. Yet the Duke still spoke of him as living, and public business was carried on in his name.

On the 8th the mayor and aldermen were sent  
 July 8 for to Greenwich to sign the letters patent. From them the truth could not be concealed, but they were sworn to secrecy before they were allowed to leave the palace. The conspirators desired to have Mary under safe custody in the Tower before the mystery was published to the world, and another difficulty was not yet got over.

The novelty of a female sovereign, and the supposed constitutional objection to it, were points in favour of the alteration which Northumberland was unwilling to relinquish. The 'device' had been changed in favour of Lady Jane; but Lady Jane was not to reign alone. Northumberland intended to hold the reins tight-grasped in his own hands, to keep the power in his own family, and to urge the sex of Mary as among the prominent occasions of her incapacity.<sup>2</sup> England was still to

<sup>1</sup> BACARDO.

<sup>2</sup> In the explanation given on the following Tuesday to the Emperor's ambassadors, Madame Marie was said—'N'estre capable dudict royaume pour le divorce fait entre le feu Roy Henry et la Roynne Katherine, se référant aux causes aians men ledict divorce, et mesme

n'estre suffisante pour l'administration d'iceuluy comme estant femme, et pour la religion — *Papiers d'Etat du Cardinal de Granvelle*, p. 28. Noailles was instructed to inform the King of France of the good affection of 'the new King' ('le nouveau Roy'). He had notice of the approaching coronation of 'the King,'

have a king, and that king was to be Guilford Dudley.

Jane Grey, eldest daughter of the Duke of Suffolk, was nearly of the same age with Edward. Edward had been unhealthily precocious; the activity of his mind had been a symptom, or a cause, of the weakness of his body. Jane Grey's accomplishments were as extensive as Edward's; she had acquired a degree of learning rare in matured men, which she could use gracefully, and could permit to be seen by others without vanity or consciousness. Her character had developed with their talents. At fifteen she was learning Hebrew and could write Greek; at sixteen she corresponded with Bullinger in Latin at least equal to his own; but the matter of her letters is more striking than the language, and speaks more for her than the most elaborate panegyrics of admiring courtiers. She has left a portrait of herself drawn by her own hand; a portrait of piety, purity, and free, noble innocence, uncoloured, even to a fault, with the emotional weaknesses of humanity.<sup>1</sup> While the effects of the Reformation in England had been chiefly visible in the outward dominion of scoundrels and in the eclipse of the hereditary virtues of the national character, Lady Jane Grey had lived to show that the defect was not in the Reformed faith, but in the absence of all faith,—that the graces of a St Elizabeth could be rivalled by the pupil of Cranmer and

---

and in the first communication of Edward's death to Hoby and Morryson in the Netherlands, a 'king,' and not a 'queen,' was described as

on the throne in his place

<sup>1</sup> Letters of Lady Jane Grey to Bullinger: *Epistolæ Tigurinæ*, pp 3—7.

Ridley. The Catholic saint had no excellence of which Jane Grey was without the promise; the distinction was in the freedom of the Protestant from the hysterical ambition for an unearthly nature, and in the presence, through a more intelligent creed, of a vigorous and practical understanding.

When married to Guilford Dudley, Lady Jane had entreated that, being herself so young, and her husband scarcely older, she might continue to reside with her mother.<sup>1</sup> Lady Northumberland had consented, and the new-made bride remained at home till a rumour went abroad that Edward was on the point of death, when she was told that she must remove to her father-in-law's house, till 'God should call the King to his mercy;' her presence would then be required at the Tower, the King having appointed her to be the heir to the Crown.

This was the first hint which she had received of the fortune which was in store for her. She believed it to be a jest, and took no notice of the order to change her residence, till the Duchess of Northumberland came herself to fetch her. A violent scene ensued with Lady Suffolk. At last the Duchess brought in Guilford Dudley, who commanded Lady Jane, on her allegiance as a wife, to return with him; and, 'not choosing to be disobedient to her husband,' she consented. The Duchess carried her off, and kept her for three or four days a prisoner. Afterwards she was taken to a house of the

---

<sup>1</sup> Bacardo—who tells the story as it was told by Lady Jane herself to Abbot Feckenham



Duke's at Chelsea, where she remained till Sunday, the 9th of July, when a message was brought that she was wanted immediately at Sion House, to receive an order from the King.

She went alone. There was no one at the palace when she arrived; but immediately after Northumberland came, attended by Pembroke, Northampton, Huntingdon, and Arundel. The Earl of Pembroke, as he approached, knelt to kiss her hand. Lady Northumberland and Lady Northampton entered, and the Duke, as President of the Council, rose to speak.

'The King,' he said, 'was no more. A godly life had been followed, as a consolation to their sorrows, by a godly end, and in leaving the world he had not forgotten his duty to his subjects. His Majesty had prayed on his death-bed that Almighty God would protect the realm from false opinions, and especially from his unworthy sister; he had reflected that both the Lady Mary and the Lady Elizabeth had been cut off by Act of Parliament from the succession as illegitimate;<sup>1</sup> the Lady Mary had been disobedient to her father; she had been again disobedient to her brother; she was a capital and principal enemy of God's word; and both she and her sister were bastards born; King Henry did not intend that the crown should be worn by either of them; King Edward, therefore, had, before his death, bequeathed it

---

<sup>1</sup> La detta maestà haveva ben considerato un atto di Parlamento nel quale fu già deliberato che qualunque volesse riconoscere Maria

overo Elizabetha sorelle per heredi della corona fusse tenuto traditore  
—BAOARDO

to his cousin the Lady Jane; and, should the Lady Jane die without children, to her younger sister; and he had entreated the council, for their honours' sake and for the sake of the realm, to see that his will was observed.'

Northumberland, as he concluded, dropt on his knees; the four lords knelt with him, and, doing homage to the Lady Jane as Queen, they swore that they would keep their faith or lose their lives in her defence.

Lady Jane shook, covered her face with her hands, and fell fainting to the ground. Her first simple grief was for Edward's death; she felt it as the loss of a dearly loved brother. The weight of her own fortune was still more agitating; when she came to herself, she cried that it could not be, the crown was not for her, she could not bear it—she was not fit for it. Then, knowing nothing of the falsehoods which Northumberland had told her, she clasped her hands, and, in a revulsion of feeling, she prayed God that if the great place to which she was called was indeed justly hers, He would give her grace to govern for his service and for the welfare of his people<sup>1</sup>

So passed Sunday, the 9th of July, at Sion House. In London, the hope of first securing Mary being disappointed, the King's death had been publicly acknowledged; circulars were sent out to the sheriffs, mayors, and magistrates in the usual style, announcing

---

<sup>1</sup> Mr John Gough Nichols, the accomplished editor of so many of the best publications of the Camden Society, throws a doubt on the authenticity of this scene, being unable to find contemporary authority for it. It comes to us, through Baocardo, from Lady Jane herself.

the accession of Queen Jane, and the troops were sworn man by man to the new sovereign. Sir William Petre and Sir John Cheke waited on the Emperor's ambassador to express a hope that the alteration in the succession would not affect the good understanding between the Courts of England and Flanders. The preachers were set to work to pacify the citizens; and, if Scheyfne is to be believed, a blood cement was designed to strengthen the new throne; and Gardiner, the Duke of Norfolk, and Lord Courtenay,<sup>1</sup> were directed to prepare for death in three days.<sup>2</sup> But Northumberland would scarcely have risked an act of gratuitous tyranny. Norfolk, being under attainder, might have been put to death without violation of the *forms* of law, by warrant from the Crown; but Gardiner was uncondemned, and Courtenay had never been accused of crime

The next day, Monday, the 10th of July, July 10 the royal barges came down the Thames from Richmond; and at three o'clock in the afternoon Lady Jane landed at the broad staircase at the Tower, as Queen, in undesired splendour. A few scattered groups of spectators stood to watch the arrival; but it appeared, from their silence, that they had been brought together chiefly by curiosity. As the gates closed, the heralds-at-arms, with a company of the archers of the

<sup>1</sup> Edward Lord Courtenay was son of the executed Marquis of Exeter and great-grandson of Edward IV. He was thrown into the Tower with his father when a little boy, and in that confinement, in

fifteen years, he had grown to manhood. Of him and his fortunes all that need be said will unfold itself.

<sup>2</sup> Scheyfne to Charles V, July 10 *MS Rolls House*.

guard, rode into the city, and at the cross in Cheapside, Paul's Cross, and Fleet-street they proclaimed, 'that the Lady Mary was unlawfully begotten, and that the Lady Jane Grey was Queen.' The ill-humour of London was no secret, and some demonstration had been looked for in Mary's favour;<sup>1</sup> but here, again, there was only silence. The heralds cried 'God save the Queen!' The archers waved their caps and cheered, but the crowd looked on impassively. One youth only, Gilbert Potter, whose name for those few days passed into Fame's trumpet, ventured to exclaim, 'The Lady Mary has the better title.' Gilbert's master, one 'Ninian Sanders,' denounced the boy to the guard, and he was seized. Yet a misfortune, thought to be providential, in a few hours befell Ninian Sanders. Going home to his house down the river, in the July evening, he was overturned and drowned as he was shooting London Bridge in his wherry; the boatmen, who were the instruments of Providence, escaped

Nor did the party in the Tower rest their first night there with perfect satisfaction. In the evening messengers came in from the eastern counties with news of the Lady Mary, and with letters from herself. She had written to Renard and Scheyfne to tell them that she was in good hands, and for the moment was safe. She had proclaimed herself Queen. She had sent addresses to the peers, commanding them on their allegiance to come to her; and she begged the ambassadors to tell

---

<sup>1</sup> NOAILLES.

her instantly whether she might look for assistance from Flanders; on the active support of the Emperor, so far as she could judge, the movements of her friends would depend.

The ambassadors sent a courier to Brussels for instructions; but, pending Charles's judgment to the contrary, they thought they had better leave Mary's appeal unanswered till they could see how events would turn. There was a rumour current indeed that she had from ten to fifteen thousand men with her; but this they could ill believe. For themselves, they expected every hour to hear that she had been taken by Lord Warwick and Lord Robert Dudley, who were gone in pursuit of her, and had been put to death.<sup>1</sup>

The Lords who were with the new Queen were not so confident. They were sitting late at night in consultation with the Duchess of Northumberland and the Duchess of Suffolk, when a letter was brought in to them from Mary. The Lords ordered the messenger into arrest. The seal of the packet was broken, and the letter read aloud. It was dated the day before, Sunday, July 9:—

'My Lords,' wrote Mary, 'we greet you well, and have received sure advertisement that our deceased brother the King, our late Sovereign Lord, is departed to God's mercy; which news how they be woeful to our heart He only knoweth to whose will and pleasure we must and do submit us and all our

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V *Papiers d'Etat du Cardinal Granvelle*, vol. iv.

wills. But in this so lamentable a case that is, to wit, now, after his Majesty's departure and death, concerning the crown and governance of this realm of England, that which hath been provided by Act of Parliament and the testament and last will of our déarest father, you know—the realm and the whole world knoweth. The rolls and records appear, by the authority of the King our said father, and the King our said brother, and the subjects of this realm, so that we verily trust there is no true subject that can pretend to be ignorant thereof, and of our part we have ourselves caused, and as God shall aid and strengthen us, shall cause, our right and title in this behalf to be published and proclaimed accordingly.

‘And, albeit, in this so weighty a matter, it seemeth strange that the dying of our said brother upon Thursday at night last past, we hitherto had no knowledge from you thereof; yet we consider your wisdom and prudence to be such, that having eftsoons amongst you debated, pondered, and well-weighed the present case, with our estate, with your own estate, the commonwealth, and all our honours, we shall and may conceive great hope and trust, with much assurance in your loyalty and service; and therefore, for the time, we interpret and take things not for the worst; and that ye yet will, like noblemen, work the best. Nevertheless, we are not ignorant of your consultation to undo the provisions made for our preferment, nor of the great banded provisions forcible whereunto ye be assembled and prepared, by whom and to what end God and you

know; and nature can fear some evil. But be it that some consideration politic, or whatsoever thing else, hath moved you thereunto; yet doubt ye not, my Lords, but we can take all these your doings in gracious part, being also right ready to remit and also pardon the same, with that freely to eschew bloodshed and vengeance against all those that can or will intend the same; trusting also assuredly you will take and accept this grace and virtue in good part as appertaineth, and that we shall not be enforced to use the service of other our true subjects and friends which, in this our just and rightful cause, God, in whom our whole affiance is, shall send us.

‘Whereupon, my Lords, we require and charge you, and every of you, on your allegiance, which you owe to God and us, and to none other, that for our honour and the surety of our realm, only you will employ yourselves; and forthwith, upon receipt hereof, cause our right and title to the Crown and Government of this realm to be proclaimed in our city of London, and such other places as to your wisdom shall seem good, and as to this cause appertaineth, not failing hereof, as our very trust is in you; and this our letter, signed with our own hand, shall be your sufficient warrant.’<sup>1</sup>

The Lords, when the letter was read to the end, looked uneasily in each other’s faces. The ladies screamed, sobbed, and were carried off in hysterics. There was yet time to turn back; and had the Reform-

---

<sup>1</sup> HOLINSHED.

ation been, as he pretended, the true concern of the Duke of Northumberland, he would have brought Mary back himself, bound by conditions which, in her present danger, she would have accepted. But Northumberland cared as little for religion as for any other good thing. He was a great criminal, throwing a stake for a crown; and treason is too conscious of its guilt to believe retreat from the first step to be possible.

Another blow was in store for him that night before he laid his head upon his pillow. Lady Jane, knowing nothing of the letter from Mary, had retired to her apartment, when the Marquis of Winchester came in to wish her joy. He had brought the crown with him, which she had not sent for; he desired her to put it on, and see if it required alteration. She said it would do very well as it was. He then told her that, before her coronation, another crown was to be made for her husband. Lady Jane started; and it seemed as if for the first time the dreary suspicion crossed her mind that she was, after all, but the puppet of the ambition of the Duke to raise his family to the throne. Winchester retired, and she sat indignant<sup>1</sup> till Guilford Dudley appeared, when she told him that, young as she was, she knew that the crown of England was not a thing to be trifled with. There was no Dudley in Edward's will, and, before he could be crowned, the consent of Parliament must be first asked and obtained. The boy-husband went whining to his mother, while Jane sent for Arundel and

---

<sup>1</sup> Le quale parole io senti con mio gran dispiacere.—BACARDO



Pembroke, and told them that it was not for her to appoint kings. She would make her husband a duke if he desired it; that was within her prerogative; but king she would not make him. As she was speaking, the Duchess of Northumberland rushed in with her son, fresh from the agitation of Mary's letter. The mother stormed; Guilford cried like a spoilt child that he would be no duke, he would be a king: and, when Jane stood firm, the Duchess bade him come away, and not share the bed of an ungrateful and disobedient wife.<sup>1</sup>

The first experience of royalty had brought small pleasure with it. Dudley's kingship was set aside for the moment, and was soon forgotten in more alarming matters. To please his mother, or to pacify his vanity, he was called 'Your Grace.' He was allowed to preside in the council, so long as a council remained, and he dined alone<sup>2</sup>—tinsel distinctions, for which the poor wretch had to pay dearly.

The next day restored the conspirators to their courage. No authentic accounts came July 11. in of disturbances. London was still quiet; so quiet, that it was thought safe to nail Gilbert Potter by the ears in the pillory, and after sufficient suffering, to slice them off with a knife. Lord Warwick and Lord Robert were still absent, and no news had come from them—a proof that they were still in pursuit. The

---

<sup>1</sup> BACARDO.

<sup>2</sup> Se faisoit servir de mesme.—Renard to Charles V. *MS Rolls House*

Duke made up his mind that Mary was watching only for an opportunity to escape to Flanders; and the ships in the river, with a thousand men-at-arms on board them, were sent to watch the Essex coast, and to seize her, could they find opportunity. Meanwhile he himself penned a reply to her letter. 'The Lady Jane,' he said, 'by the antient laws of the realm,' and 'by letters patent of the late King,' signed by himself, and countersigned by the nobility, was rightful Queen of England. The divorce of Catherine of Arragon from Henry VIII. had been prescribed by the laws of God, pronounced by the Church of England, and confirmed by Act of Parliament; the daughter of Catherine was, therefore, illegitimate, and could not inherit; and the Duke warned her to forbear, at her peril, from molesting her lawful sovereign, or turning her people from their allegiance. If she would submit and accept the position of a subject, she should receive every reasonable attention which it was in the power of the Queen to show to her.

During the day rumours of all kinds were flying, but Mary's friends in London saw no reasonable grounds for hope. Lord Robert was supposed by Renard<sup>1</sup> to be on his way to the Tower with the Princess as his prisoner; and if she was once within the Tower walls, all hope was over. It was not till Wednesday morning that the Duke became really alarmed. Then at once, from all sides, messengers came in with unwelcome tidings. The Dudleys had come up with

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *MS Rolls House.*

Mary the day before, as she was on her way from Kenninghall to Framlingham. They had dashed forward upon her escort, but their own men turned sharp round, declared for the Princess, and attempted to seize them; they had been saved only by the speed of their horses.<sup>1</sup> In the false calm of the two preceding days, Lord Bath had stolen across the country into Norfolk. Lord Mordaunt and Lord Wharton had sent their sons, Sir William Drury, Sir John Skelton, Sir Henry Bedingfield, and many more, had gone in the same direction. Lord Sussex had declared also for Mary; and, worse than all Lord Derby had risen in Cheshire, and was reported to be marching south with twenty thousand men.<sup>2</sup> Scarcely were these news digested, when Sir Edmund Peckham, cofferer of the household, was found to have gone off with the treasure under his charge. Sir Edward Hastings, Lord Huntingdon's brother, had called out the musters of Buckinghamshire in Mary's name, and Peckham had joined him, while Sir Peter Carew, the very hope and stay of the western Protestants, had proclaimed Mary in the towns of Devonshire.

Now, when too late, it was seen how large an error had been committed in permitting the Princess's escape. But it was vain to waste time in regrets. Her hasty levies, at best, could be but rudely armed; the Duke had trained troops, and cannon, and, had he been free to act, with no enemies but those in the field against him,

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *MS. Rolls House*

<sup>2</sup> *Queen Jane and Queen Mary* Renard to Charles V.

he had still the best of the game. But Suffolk and Northampton, the least able of the council, were, nevertheless, the only members of it on whom he could rely. To whom but to himself could he trust the army which must meet Mary in the field? If he led the army in person, whom could he leave in charge of London, the Tower, and Lady Jane? Winchester and Arundel knew his dilemma, and deliberately took advantage of it. The guard, when first informed that they were to take the field, refused to march. After a communication with the Marquis of Winchester, they withdrew their objections, and professed themselves willing to go. Northumberland, uneasy at their conduct, or requiring a larger force, issued a proclamation offering tenpence a day to volunteers who would go to bring in the Lady Mary.<sup>1</sup> The lists were soon filled, but filled with the retainers and servants of his secret enemies.<sup>2</sup>

The men being thus collected, Suffolk was first thought of to lead them, or else Lord Grey de Wilton;<sup>3</sup> but Suffolk was inefficient, and his daughter could not bring herself to part with him; Grey was a good soldier, but he had been a friend of Somerset, and the Duke had tried hard to involve him with Arundel and Paget in Somerset's ruin.<sup>4</sup> Northampton's truth could have been

<sup>1</sup> *Grey Friars' Chronicle*

<sup>2</sup> 'Ille impigre quidem, utpote  
cujus res agebatur, proponit magna  
stipendia, conducit militem partim  
invitum partim perfidum; constabant enim majori ex parte satellitia  
nobilem qui secreto Mariæ fave-

bant'—Julius Terentianus to John  
ab Ulmis: *Epistole TIGURINÆ*, p.  
243

<sup>3</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls  
House MSS*

<sup>4</sup> *Ibid.*

depended upon, but Northampton four years before had been defeated by a mob of Norfolk peasants. Northumberland, the council said, must go himself—there was no remedy. No man, on all accounts, could be so fit as he; 'he had achieved the victory in Norfolk once already, and was so feared, that none durst lift their weapons against him.'<sup>1</sup> Suffolk in his absence should command the Tower. Had the Duke dared, he would have delayed; but every moment that he remained inactive added to Mary's strength, and whatever he did he must risk something. He resolved to go, and as the plot was thickening, he sent Sir Henry Dudley to Paris to entreat the King to protect Calais against Charles, should the latter move upon it in his cousin's interest.

Noailles had assured him that this and larger favours would be granted without difficulty; while, as neither Renard nor his companions had as yet acknowledged Lady Jane, and were notoriously in correspondence with Mary, the French ambassador suggested also that he would do wisely to take the initiative himself, to send Renard his passports, and commit the country to war with the Emperor.<sup>2</sup> Northumberland would not venture the full length to which Noailles invited him, but he sent Sir John Mason and Lord Cobham to Renard, with an intimation that the English treason laws were not to be trifled with. If he and his companions dared to meddle in matters which did not concern them, their

---

<sup>1</sup> *Chronicle of Queen Jane*

<sup>2</sup> NOAILLES, vol. II

privileges as ambassadors should not protect them from extremity of punishment.<sup>1</sup>

Newmarket was chosen for the rendezvous of the army. The men were to go down in companies, in whatever way they could travel most expeditiously, with the guns and ammunition waggons. The Duke himself intended to set out on Friday at dawn. In his calculations of the chances, hope still predominated—his cannon would give him the advantage in the field, and he trusted to the Protestant spirit in London to prevent a revolution in his absence. But he took the precaution of making the council entangle themselves more completely by taking out a commission under the Great Seal, as general of the army, which they were forced to sign; and before he left the Tower, he made a parting appeal to their good faith. If he believed they would betray him, he said, he could still provide for his own safety; but, as they were well aware that Lady Jane was on the throne by no will of her own, but through his influence and theirs, so he trusted her to their honours to keep the oaths which they had sworn. ‘They were all in the same guilt,’ one of them answered; ‘none could excuse themselves.’ Arundel especially wished the Duke God speed upon his way, and regretted only that he was not to accompany him to the field.<sup>2</sup>

This was on Thursday evening. Northumberland

---

<sup>1</sup> Ajoutant menace de la rigueur de leurs lois barbares —Renard to Charles V., *Granvelle Papers*, vol. 17.

<sup>2</sup> *Chronicle of Queen Jane.*

slept that night at Whitehall. The following morning he rode out of London, accompanied <sup>July 14</sup> by his four sons, Northampton, Grey, and about six hundred men. The streets were thronged with spectators, but all observed the same ominous silence with which they had received the heralds' proclamation. 'The people press to see us,' the Duke said, 'but not one saith God speed us'<sup>1</sup>

The principal conspirator was now out of the way; his own particular creatures—Sir Thomas and Sir Henry Palmer, and Sir John Gates, who had commanded the Tower guard, had gone with him. Northampton was gone. The young Dudleys were gone all but Guilford. Suffolk alone remained of the faction definitely attached to the Duke; and the Duke was marching to the destruction which had been prepared for him. But prudence still warned those who were loyal to Mary to wait before they declared themselves; the event was still uncertain; and the disposition of the Earl of Pembroke might not yet, perhaps, have been perfectly ascertained.

Pembroke, in the black volume of appropriations, was the most deeply compromised. Pembroke, in Wilts and Somerset, where his new lands lay, was hated for his oppression of the poor, and had much to fear from a Catholic sovereign, could a Catholic sovereign obtain the reality as well as the name of power, Pembroke, so said Northumberland, had been the first to propose the conspiracy to him, while his eldest son had married

---

<sup>1</sup> *Chronicle of Queen Jane*

Catherine Grey. But, as Northumberland's designs began to ripen, he had endeavoured to steal from the Court; he was a distinguished soldier, yet he was never named to command the army which was to go against Mary, Lord Herbert's marriage was outward and nominal merely—a form, which had not yet become a reality, and never did. Although Pembroke was the first of the council to do homage to Jane, Northumberland evidently doubted him. He was acting and would continue to act for his own personal interests only. With his vast estates and vast hereditary influence in South Wales and on the Border, he could bring a larger force into the field than any other single nobleman in England, and he could purchase the secure possession of his acquisitions by a well-timed assistance to Mary as readily as by lending his strength to buttress the throne of her rival.

Of the rest of the council, Winchester and Arundel had signed the letters patent with a deliberate intention of deserting or betraying Northumberland, whenever a chance should present itself, and of carrying on their secret measures in Mary's favour<sup>1</sup> with greater security,

<sup>1</sup> 'Aliqui subscripserunt, id quod postea competum est, ut facilius fallerent Northumbrum, cujus consilio hæc omnia videbant fieri et tegerent conspirationem quam adornabant in auxilium Mariæ'—Julius Terentianus to John ab Ulmis *Epistole TIGURINÆ*, p. 242. John Knox allowed his vehemence to carry him too far against the

Marquis of Winchester, who unquestionably was not one of those who advised the scheme of Northumberland. In the 'aliqui' of Julius Terentianus, the letters of Renard, of Scheyfne, enable us to identify both him and Arundel, but there must have been many more, in the council or out of it, who were acting in concert with them.



The other noblemen in the Tower perhaps imperfectly understood each other. Cranmer had taken part unwillingly with Lady Jane; but he meant to keep his promise, having once given it. Bedford had opposed the Duke up to the signature, and might be supposed to adhere to his original opinion; but he was most likely hesitating, while Lord Russell had been trusted with the command of the garrison at Windsor. Sir Thomas Cheyne and Shrewsbury might be counted among Mary's friends; the latter certainly. Of the three secretaries, Cecil's opposition had put his life in jeopardy; Petre was the friend and confidant of Paget, and would act as Paget should advise; Cheke, a feeble enthusiast, was committed to the Duke.

The task of bringing the council together was undertaken by Cecil. Cecil and Winchester worked on Bedford; and Bedford made himself responsible for his son, for the troops at Windsor, and generally for the western counties. The first important step was to readmit Paget to the council. Fresh risings were reported in Northamptonshire and Lincolnshire;<sup>1</sup> Sir John Williams was proclaiming Mary round Oxford; and on Friday night or Saturday morning news came July 15.

from the fleet which might be considered decisive as to the Duke's prospects. The vessels, so carefully equipped, which left the Thames on the 12th, had been driven into Yarmouth Harbour by stress of weather. Sir Henry Jerningham was in the town raising men for

---

<sup>1</sup> Cecil's Submission, printed by TITLER, vol. II.

Mary; and knowing that the crews had been pressed, and that there had been desertions among the troops before they were embarked,<sup>1</sup> he ventured boldly among the ships. 'Do you want our captains?' some one said to him. 'Yea, marry,' was the answer 'Then they shall go with you,' the men shouted, 'or they shall go to the bottom.' Officers, sailors, troops, all declared for Queen Mary, and landed with their arms and artillery. The report was borne upon the winds; it was known in a few hours in London; it was known in the Duke's army, which was now close to Cambridge, and was the signal for the premeditated mutiny. 'The noblemen's tenants refused to serve their lords against Queen Mary'<sup>2</sup> Northumberland sent a courier at full speed to the council for reinforcements. The courier returned 'with but a slender answer.'<sup>3</sup>

The Lords in London, however, were still under the eyes of the Tower garrison, who watched them narrowly. Their first meeting to form their plans was within the Tower walls, and Arundel said 'he liked not the air'<sup>4</sup> Pembroke and Cheyne attempted to escape, but failed to evade the guard, Winchester made an excuse to go to his own house, but he was sent for and brought back at midnight. Though Mary might succeed, they might still lose their own lives, which they were inclined to value.

On Sunday, the 16th, the preachers again  
 July 16 exerted themselves Ridley shrieked against

<sup>1</sup> Scheyfne to Charles V *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> *Chronicle of Queen Jane*

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid*

<sup>4</sup> Cecil's Submission *TITLEB, vol. II*

Mary' at Paul's Cross;<sup>1</sup> John Knox, more wisely, at Amersham, in Buckinghamshire, foretold the approaching retribution from the giddy ways of the past years; Buckinghamshire, Catholic and Protestant, was arming to the teeth; and he was speaking at the peril of his life among the troopers of Sir Edward Hastings.

'Oh England!' cried the saddened Reformer, 'now is God's wrath kindled against thee—now hath he begun to punish as he hath threatened by his true prophets and messengers. He hath taken from thee the crown of thy glory, and hath left thee without honour, and this appeareth to be only the beginning of sorrows. The heart, the tongue, the hand of one Englishman is bent against another, and division is in the realm, which is a sign of desolation to come. Oh, England, England! if thy mariners and thy governors shall consume one another, shalt not thou suffer shipwreck? Oh England, alas! these plagues are poured upon thee because thou wouldst not know the time of thy most gentle visitation.'<sup>2</sup>

At Cambridge, on the same day, another notable man preached—Edwin Sandys, then Protestant Vice-Chancellor of the University, and afterwards Archbishop of York. Northumberland the preceding evening brought his mutinous troops into the town. He sent for Parker, Lever, Bill, and Sandys to sup with him, and told them he required their prayers, or he and his friends were like to be 'made deacons of'<sup>3</sup> Sandys,

<sup>1</sup> Stow

<sup>2</sup> Account of a Sermon at Amersham *Admonition to the Faithful*

*in England*, by JOHN KNOX

<sup>3</sup> Some jest, perhaps, upon a shorn crown, at any rate, a eu-

between treason to the country or now inevitable destruction.<sup>1</sup> When he called in the help of France he must have known well that his ally, with a successful army in England, would prevent indeed the accession of Mary Tudor, but as surely would tear in pièces the paper title of the present Queen and snatch the crown for his own Mary, the Queen of Scots, and the bride of the Dauphin.

But the council was too quick for Dudley. A secret messenger followed or attended him to Calais, where he was arrested, the treasure recovered, and his despatches taken from him.

The counter-revolution could now be accomplished without bloodshed and without longer delay. On

July 19 Wednesday the 19th word came that the Earl of Oxford had joined Mary. A letter was written to Lord Rich admonishing him not to follow Oxford's example, but to remain true to Queen Jane, which the council were required to sign. Had they refused, they would probably have been massacred.<sup>2</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> La peine où se retrouve ledict duc est qu'il ne se ose fier en personne, pour n'avoir fait ou donné occasion à personne de l'aimer,— que a meu envoyer en France le Millor Dudley son frère, pour l'assurer du secours que luy a esté promis par le roy de France, et le prier en faire demonstration pour intimider ceulx de par deça. Car encorresqu'il entende qu'il dégousterà davantage ceulx du pays pour y amener François, si est ce craignant

d'estre rebouté de son emprinse, et d'estre massacré du peuple et sa generation, et que ma dicté dame Marie ne parvienne à la couronne, il ne respectera chose quelconque plustôt donnera il pied aux François ou peys tel est le courage d'ung homme tian, obstiné, et resolu, signamment quant il est question de se démesurer pour regner — Renard to Charles V. *Granvelle Papers*, vol iv p 38

<sup>2</sup> The letter is among the *Lans-*

Towards the middle of the day, Winchester, Arundel, Pembroke, Shrewsbury, Bedford, Cheyne, Paget, Ma-on, and Petre found means of passing the gates, and made their way to Baynard's Castle,<sup>1</sup> where they sent for the mayor, the aldermen, and other great persons of the city. When they were all assembled, Arundel was the first to speak

The country, he said, was on the brink of civil war, and if they continued to support the pretensions of Lady Jane Grey to the crown, civil war would inevitably break out. In a few more days or weeks the child would be in arms against the father, the brother against the brother; the quarrels of religion would add fury to the struggle; the French would interfere on one side, the Spaniards on the other, and in such a conflict the triumph of either party would be almost equally injurious to the honour, unity, freedom, and happiness of England. The friends of the commonwealth, in the face of so tremendous a danger, would not obstinately persist in encouraging the pretensions of a faction. It was for his hearers where they sat to decide if there should be peace or war, and he implored them, for the sake of the country, to restore the crown to her who was their lawful sovereign.

*downe MSS* It is in the hand of Sir John Cheke, and dated July 19. The signatures are Cranmer, Goodrich, Winchester, Bedford, Suffolk, Arundel, Shrewsbury, Pembroke, Darcy, Paget, Cheyne, Cotton, Petre, Cheke, Baker, Bowes

quarters of a mile above London Bridge. The original castle of Baynard the Norman had fallen into ruins at the end of the fifteenth century. Henry VII built a palace on the site of it, which retained the name

<sup>1</sup> Fronting the river, about three-

Pembroke rose next. The words of Lord Arundel, he said, were true and good, and not to be gainsaid. What others thought he knew not; for himself, he was so convinced, that he would fight in the quarrel with any man; and if words are not enough, he cried, flashing his sword out of the scabbard, 'this blade shall make Mary Queen, or I will lose my life.'<sup>1</sup>

Not a voice was raised for the Twelfth-day Queen, as Lady Jane was termed, in scornful pity, by Noailles. Some few persons thought that, before they took a decisive step, they should send notice to Northumberland, and give him time to secure his pardon. But it was held to be a needless stretch of consideration; Shrewsbury and Mason hastened off to communicate with Renard,<sup>2</sup> while a hundred and fifty men were marched directly to the Tower gates, and the keys were demanded in the Queen's name.

It is said that Suffolk was unprepared: but the goodness of his heart and the weakness of his mind alike saved him from attempting a useless resistance. The gates were opened, and the unhappy father rushed to his daughter's room. He clutched at the canopy

<sup>1</sup> E quando le persuasioni del conte d'Arundel non habiano luogo appresso di voi, o questa spada farà Reina Maria, o perderò io la vita.—  
BAOARDO

<sup>2</sup> Renard had been prepared, by a singular notice, to expect their coming, and to suspect their good faith. Ce matin, he wrote, relating the counter-revolution to the Em-

peior; ce matin, à bonne heure, il y a venu une vieille femme de soixante ans en nostre logis pour nous advertir que l'on deust faire sçavoir à madicte dame Marie qu'elle se donna garde, de ceulx de conseil car ils la vouloient tromper soubz couleur de luy monstrer affection.—*Gravelle Papers*, vol. iv.

under which she was sitting, and tore it down; she was no longer Queen, he said, and such distinctions were not for one of her station. He then told her briefly of the revolt of the council. She replied that his present words were more welcome to her than those in which he had advised her to accept the crown,<sup>1</sup> her reign being at an end, she asked innocently if she might leave the Tower and go home.<sup>2</sup> But the Tower was a place not easy to leave, save by one route too often travelled.

Meanwhile the Lords, with the mayor and the heralds, went to the Cross at Cheapside to proclaim Mary Queen. Pembroke himself stood out to read; and this time there was no reason to complain of a silent audience. He could utter but one sentence before his voice was lost in the shout of joy which thundered into the air 'God save the Queen,' 'God save the Queen,' rung out from tens of thousands of throats. 'God save the Queen,' cried Pembroke himself, when he had done, and flung up his jewelled cap and tossed his purse among the crowd. The glad news spread like lightning through London, and the pent-up hearts of the citizens poured themselves out in a torrent of exultation. Above the human cries, the long-silent church-bells clashed again into life, first began St Paul's, where happy chance had saved them from destruction, then, one by one, every peal which had been spared caught up the sound, and through the summer evening and the summer night, and all the next day, the metal

<sup>1</sup> Bocardo to Charles V. *Rolls*  
*House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Narrative of Edward Underhill: *Harleian MSS* 425

tongues from tower and steeple gave voice to England's gladness. The Lords, surrounded by the shouting multitude, walked in state to St Paul's, where the choir again sang a Te Deum, and the unused organ rolled out once more its mighty volume of music. As they came out again, at the close of the service, the apprentices were heaping piles of wood for bonfires at the cross-ways. The citizens were spreading tables in the streets, which their wives were loading with fattest capons and choicest wines; there was free feasting for all comers; and social jealousies, religious hatreds, were forgotten for the moment in the ecstasy of the common delight. Even the retainers of the Dudleys, in fear or joy, tore their badges out of their caps, and trampled on them <sup>1</sup>

At a night session of the council, a letter was written to Northumberland, which Cranmer, Suffolk, and Sir John Cheke consented to sign, ordering him in the name of Queen Mary to lay down his arms. If he complied, the Lords undertook to intercede for his pardon. If he refused, they said that they would hold him as a traitor, and spend their lives in the field against him <sup>2</sup>

While a pursuivant bore the commands of the council to the Duke, Arundel and Paget undertook to carry to Mary at Framlingham their petition for forgiveness, in which they declared that they had been innocent at heart of any share in the conspiracy,<sup>3</sup> and had only de-

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS* All authorities agree in the general description of the state of London Renard, Noailles, and Baoardo are the most explicit and

interesting

<sup>2</sup> This letter is among the *Tanner MSS* in the Bodleian Library at Oxford It was printed by Stowe

<sup>3</sup> 'Our bounden duties most



layed coming forward in her favour from a desire to prevent bloodshed.

The two lords immediately mounted and galloped off into the darkness, followed by thirty horse, leaving the lights of illuminated London gleaming behind them.

The Duke's position was already desperate: on the 18th, before the proclamation in London, Mary had felt herself strong enough to send orders to the Mayor of Cambridge for his arrest,<sup>1</sup> and, although he had as yet been personally unmolested, he was powerless in the midst of an army which was virtually in Mary's service. The news of the revolution in London first reached him by a private hand. He at once sent for Sandys, and, going with him to the market cross, he declared, after

humbly remembered to your excellent Majesty. It may like the same to understand, that we your most humble, faithful, and obedient subjects, having always, God we take to witness, remained your Highness's true and humble subjects in our hearts, ever since the death of our late Sovereign Lord and master your Highness's brother, whom God pardon, and seeing hitherto no possibility to utter our determination without great destruction and bloodshed, both of ourselves and others, till this time have this day proclaimed in your city of London your Majesty to be our true natural sovereign hege, Lady and Queen, most humbly beseeching your Majesty to pardon and remit our former infirmities, and most graciously to

accept our meanings which have been ever to serve your Highness truly, and so shall remain with all our power and force, to the effusion of our blood, as these bearers, our very good Lords, the Earls of Arundel and Paget, can, and be ready more particularly to declare—to whom it may please your excellent Majesty to give firm credence, and thus we do and shall daily pray to Almighty God for the preservation of your most royal person long to reign over us.—*Lansdowne MSS.*  
3 Endorsed in Cecil's hand 'Copy of the Letter of the Lords to the Queen Mary from Baynard's Castle.' The signatures are, unfortunately, wanting.

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS.*

one violent clutch at his beard, that he had acted under orders from the council; the council, he understood, had changed their minds, and he would change his mind also; therefore he cried, 'God save Queen Mary,' and with a strained effort at a show of satisfaction, he, too, like Pembroke, threw up his cap. The Queen, he said to Sandys, was a merciful woman, and there would be a general pardon. 'Though the Queen grant you a pardon,' Sandys answered, 'the Lords never will; you can hope nothing from those who now rule.'<sup>1</sup>

It was true that he could hope nothing—the hatred of the whole nation, which before his late treasons he had brought upon himself, would clamour to the very heavens for judgment against him. An hour  
July 20 after the proclamation of Mary, Rouge-cross herald arrived with the Lords' letter from London. An order at the same time was read to the troops informing them that they were no longer under the Duke's command, and an alderman of the town then ventured to execute the Queen's warrant for his arrest. Northumberland was given in charge to a guard of his own soldiers; he protested, however, that the council had sent no instructions for his detention; and in some uncertainty, or perhaps in compassion for his fate, the soldiers obeyed him once more, and let him go. It was then night. He intended to fly; but he put it off till the morning, and in the morning his chance was gone. Before he could leave his room he found himself face to

---

<sup>1</sup> FOXE, VOL. VIII.

face with Arundel, who, after delivering the council's letter to the Queen, had hastened to Cambridge to secure him.

Northumberland, who, while innocent of crime, had faced death on land and sea like a soldier and a gentleman, flung himself at the Earl's feet. 'Be good to me, for the love of God,' he cried. 'consider I have done nothing but by the consent of you and the council.' He knew what kind of consent he had extorted from the council. 'My Lord,' said Arundel, 'I am sent hither by the Queen's Majesty; and in her name I do arrest you'—'I obey, my Lord,' the Duke replied; 'yet show me mercy, knowing the case as it is'—'My Lord,' was the cold answer, 'you should have sought for mercy sooner, I must do according to my commandment.'<sup>1</sup>

At the same moment Sandys was paying the penalty for his sermon. The University, in haste to purge itself of its heretical elements, met soon after sunrise to depose their vice-chancellor. Dr Sandys, who had gone for an early stroll among the meadows to meditate on his position, hearing the congregation-bell ringing, resolved, like a brave man, to front his fortune, he walked to the Senate-house, entered, and took his seat. 'A rabble of Papists' instantly surrounded him. He tried to speak, but the masters of arts shouted 'Traitor,' rough hands shook or dragged him from his chair: and the impatient theologian, in sudden heat, drew his dagger, and 'would have done a mischief with it,' had not some of his friends disarmed him.<sup>2</sup> He, too, was handed

<sup>1</sup> HOLINSHED.

<sup>2</sup> FOXE, vol viii pp 591-2

over to a guard, lashed to the back of a lame horse, and carried to London.

Mary, meanwhile, notwithstanding the revolution in her favour, remained a few more days at Framlingham, either suspicious of treachery or uncertain whether there might not be another change. But she was assured rapidly that the danger was at an end by the haste with which the lords and gentlemen who were compromised sought their pardon at her feet. On the

July 21 21st and 22nd Clinton, Grey, Fitzgerald, Ormond, Fitzwarren, Sir Henry Sidney, and Sir

James Crofts presented themselves and received forgiveness. Cecil wrote, explaining his secret services, and was taken into favour. Lord Robert and Lord Ambrose Dudley, Northampton, and a hundred other gentlemen—Sir Thomas Wyatt among them, who had accompanied the Duke to Bury—were not so fortunate. The Queen would not see them, and they were left under arrest. Ridley set out for Norfolk, also, to confess his offences; but, before he arrived at the Court, he was met by a warrant for his capture, and carried back a prisoner to the Tower.

The conspiracy was crushed, and crushed, happily, without bloodshed. The inquiry into its origin, and the punishment of the guilty, could be carried out at leisure. There was one matter, however, which admitted of no delay. Mary's first anxiety, on feeling her crown secure, was the burial of her dead brother, who, through all these scenes, was still lying in his bed in his room at Greenwich. In her first letter to the Im-

perial ambassadors, the day after the arrival of Arundel and Paget at the Court, she spoke of this as her greatest care ; to their infinite alarm, she announced her intention of inaugurating her reign with Requiem and Dirige, and a mass for the repose of his soul.

Their uneasiness requires explanation.

While on matters of religion there was in England almost every variety of opinion, there was a very general consent that the Queen should not marry a foreigner. The dread that Mary might form a connection with some Continental prince, had formed the strongest element in Northumberland's cause ; all the Catholics, except the insignificant faction who desired the restoration of the Papal authority,<sup>1</sup> and all the moderate Protestants, wished well to her, but wished to see her married to some English nobleman ; and, while her accession was still uncertain, the general opinion had already fixed upon a husband for her in the person of her cousin Edward Courtenay, the imprisoned son of the Marquis of Exeter. The interest of the public in the long confinement of this young nobleman had invested him with all imaginary graces of mind and body. He was the grandchild of a Plantagenet, and a representative of the White Rose. He had suffered from the tyranny, and was supposed to have narrowly escaped murder at the

---

<sup>1</sup> I must again remind my readers of the distinction between Catholic and Papist. Three-quarters of the English people were Catholics, that is, they were attached to the hereditary and traditionary doctrines of the Church. They detested, as cordially as the Protestants, the interference of a foreign power, whether secular or spiritual, with English liberty.

hands of the man whom all England most hated. <sup>f</sup> Nature, birth, circumstances, all seemed to point to him as the king-consort of the realm.<sup>1</sup> The Emperor had thought of Mary for his son; and it has been seen that the fear of such an alliance induced the French to support Northumberland. To prevent the injury which the report, if credited in England, would have done to her cause, Mary, on her first flight to Keninghall, empowered Renard to assure the council that she had no thought at all of marrying a stranger. The Emperor and the Bishop of Arras, in assuring Sir Philip Hoby that the French intended to strike for the Queen of Scots, declared that, for themselves they wished only to see the Queen settled in her own realm, as her subjects desired; and especially they would prevent her either from attempting innovations in religion without their consent, or from marrying against their approbation.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 'Adversity is a good thing. I trust in the Lord to live to see the day her Grace to marry such an one as knoweth what adversity meaneth, so shall we have both a merciful queen and king to their subjects, and would to God I might live to have another virtuous Edward'—Epistle of Poor Pratt to Gilbert Potter, written July 13 *Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, Appendix, p. 116. The occasion of this curious epistle was the punishment of Gilbert on the pillory. The writer was a Protestant, and evidently thought the Reformation in greater danger from Northumberland than Mary. 'We have had many prophets and

true preachers,' he said, 'which did declare that our King shall be taken away from us, and a tyrant shall reign. The gospel shall be plucked away, and the right heir shall be dispossessed, and all for our unthankfulness. And, thinkest thou not, Gilbert, this world is now come? Yea! truly! and what shall follow, if we repent not in time? The same God will take from us the virtuous Lady Mary our lawful Queen, and send such a cruel Pharaoh as the Ragged Bear to rule us, which shall pull and poll us, and utterly destroy us, and bring us in great calamities and miseries.'

<sup>2</sup> *MS. Harleian*, 523.

But the Emperor's disinterestedness was only the result of his despondency. While the crisis lasted, neither Charles nor Henry of France saw their way to a distinct course of action. Charles, on the 20th of July, ignorant of the events in London, had written to Renard, despairing of Mary's success. Jane Grey he would not recognize; the Queen of Scots, he thought, would shortly be on the English throne. Henry, considering, at any rate, that he might catch something in troubled waters, volunteered to Lord William Howard,<sup>1</sup> in professed compliance with the demands of Northumberland, to garrison Guisnes and Calais for him. Howard replied that the French might come to Calais if they desired, but their reception might not be to their taste.<sup>2</sup> The revolution of the 19th altered the aspect of the situation both at the Courts of Paris and of Brussels. The accession of Mary would be no injury to France, provided she could be married in England; and Henry at once instructed Noailles to congratulate the council on her accession. Noailles himself indeed considered, that, should she take Courtenay for a husband, the change might, after all, be to their advantage. The Emperor, on the other hand, began to think again of his original scheme. Knowing that the English were sincere in their detestation of the Papacy, and imperfectly comprehending the insular distinction between general attachment to Catholic tradition and indifference to Catholic unity, he supposed that the country really

---

<sup>1</sup> Governor of Calais

<sup>2</sup> NOAILLES

was, on the whole, determined in its adherence to the Reformed opinions. But the political alliance was still of infinite importance to him; and therefore he was anxious beyond everything that the Princess, whom he intended to persuade to break her word about her marriage, should be discreet and conciliatory about religion. He lost not a moment, after hearing that she was proclaimed Queen, in sending her his congratulations; but he sent with them an earnest admonition to be cautious; to be content with the free exercise for herself of her own creed, to take no step whatever without the sanction of Parliament, and to listen to no one who would advise her, of her own authority, to set aside the Act of Uniformity. Her first duty was to provide for the quiet of the realm; and she must endeavour, by prudence and moderation, to give reasonable satisfaction to her subjects of all opinions. Above all things, let her remember to be a good Englishwoman (*bonne Anglaise*)<sup>1</sup>

It was, in consequence, with no light anxiety that Renard learnt from Mary her intention of commencing her reign with an act which was so far at variance with the Emperor's advice, and which would at once display the colours of a party. To give the late King a public funeral with a ceremonial forbidden by the law, would be a strain of the prerogative which could not fail to create jealousy even among those to whom the difference between a Latin mass and an English service was not

---

<sup>1</sup> Charles V. to Renard, July 22. *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv.



absolutely vital; and the judicious latitudinarianism to which the lay statesmen of the better sort were inclining, would make them dread the appearance of a disposition that would encourage the revolutionists. She owed her crown to the Protestants as well as to the Catholics. If she broke the law to please the prejudices of the latter, Renard was warned that her present popularity would not be of long continuance<sup>1</sup>

Yet, as the ambassador trembled to know, a carelessness of consequences and an obstinate perseverance in a course which she believed to be right were the principal features in Mary's character. He wrote to her while she was still at Framlingham, using every argument which ought, as he considered, to prevail. He reminded her of the long and unavailing struggle of the Emperor to bring back Germany out of heresy, where the obstinacy of the Romanists had been as mischievous to him as the fanaticism of the Lutherans. 'Her duty to God was of course the first thing to be considered; but at such a time prudence was a part of that duty. The Protestant heresies had taken a hold deep and powerful upon her subjects. In London alone there were fifteen thousand French, Flemish, and German refugees, most of them headstrong and ungovernable enthusiasts. The country dreaded any fresh convulsions, and her Majesty should remember that she had instructed him to tell the council that she was sus-

---

<sup>1</sup> Elle sera odiieuse, suspecte, et dangereuse — Renard to the Emperor: *Rolle House MSS.*

pected unjustly, and had no thought of interfering with the existing settlement of the realm.'<sup>1</sup>

With all his efforts, however, Renard could but bring the Queen to consent to a few days' delay; and fearing that she would return to her purpose, he sent to the Emperor a copy of his letter, which he urged him

to follow up. Charles on the 29th replied again, July 29 lauding the ambassador's caution, and suggesting an argument more likely to weigh with his cousin than the soundest considerations of public policy. Edward had lived and died in heresy, and the Catholic services were intended only for the faithful sons of the Church.<sup>2</sup> He desired Renard to remind her that those who had been her most valuable friends were known to hold opinions far from orthodox; and he once more implored her to be guided by Parliament, and to take care that the Parliament was free. She had asked whether she should imitate Northumberland and nominate the members of the House of Commons. He cautioned her against so dangerous an example; she might make a selection among the towns and counties, but he advised her to let them choose for themselves; and if the writs

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Queen Mary, copy enclosed to Charles V. : *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Vous avez tres bien fait de desconseiller à la dicte Roynie qu'elle fist les obsèques du feu Roy, ce qu'elle peult tant plus delaisser avecque le repos de sa conscience, puisque comme escripvez il est décedé soustenant jusques à la fin, selon qu'il avoit esté persuadé de

depuis sa jeunesse, les opinions de desvoyez de nostre ancienne religion par ou l'on ne peult sans scrupule luy faire l'enterrement et obsèques accoustumez en nostre dicte religion Et est bien que l'avez persuadé par vostre dicte lettre à la dicte dilation.—Charles V to Renard, July 29 *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv.

were sent into Cornwall and the North, which had remained most constant to the Catholic religion, these places might be expected to return persons who would support her own sentiments<sup>1</sup>

If the Emperor had been equally earnest in urging Mary to consult the wishes of her subjects on her marriage, he would have been a truer friend to her than he proved to be. But prudential arguments produced no effect on the eager Queen; Renard had warned her not to resist Northumberland; she had acted on her own judgment, and Northumberland was a prisoner, and she was on the throne. By her own will she was confident that she could equally well restore the mass, and in good time the Pope's authority. The religious objection to the funeral was more telling, and on this point she hesitated. Meantime she began to move slowly towards London, and at the end of the month she reached her old house of Newhall in Essex, where she rested till the preparations were complete for her entry into the city.

The first point on which she had now to make up her mind concerned the persons with whom she was to carry on the Government. The Emperor was again clear in his advice, which here she found herself obliged to follow. She was forced to leave undisturbed in their authorities such of her brother's late ministers as had contributed to the revolution in her favour. Derby, Sussex,

<sup>1</sup> Et il sejoit à espérer que y démonstré plus d'affection en son  
appellant ceulx du Noort et de endroit qu'elle trouveroit envers  
Cornuailles avec les autres comme ceulx pour tout ce qu'elle voudroit  
ce sont ceulx qui sont demeurez ordonner plus de faveur — Ibid  
plus ferme en la religion, et qui ont

Bath, Oxford, who had hurried to her support at Framlingham, were her loyal subjects, whom she could afford to neglect, because she could depend upon their fidelity. Pembroke and Winchester, Arundel and Shrewsbury, Bedford, Cobham, Cheyne, Petre, too powerful to affront, too uncertain to be trusted as subjects, she could only attach to herself, by maintaining them in their offices and emoluments. She would restore the Duke of Norfolk to the council; Gardiner should hold office again; and she could rely on the good faith of Paget, the ablest, as well as the most honest, of all the professional statesmen. But Norfolk was old, and the latitudinarian Paget and the bigoted Gardiner bore each other no good will; so that, when the Queen had leisure to contemplate her position, it did not promise to be an easy one. She would have to govern with the assistance of men who were gorged with the spoils of the Church, suspected of heresy, and at best indifferent to religion.

In Mary's absence, the Lords in London carried on the government as they could on their own responsibility. On the 21st Courtenay was released from the Tower. Gardiner was offered liberty, but he waited to accept it from the Queen's own hand. He rejoined the council, however, and on the first or second day of his return to the board, he agitated their deliberations by requiring the restoration of his house in Southwark, which had been appropriated to the Marquis of Northampton, and by reminding Pembroke that he was in possession of estates which had been stolen from the See of Winchester.

On the 25th Northumberland and Lord Ambrose Dudley were brought in from Cambridge, escorted by Grey and Arundel, with four hundred of the guard. Detachments of troops were posted all along the streets from Bishopsgate where the Duke would enter, to the Tower, to prevent the mob from tearing him in pieces. It was but twelve days since he had ridden out from that gate in the splendour of his power; he was now assailed from all sides with yells and execrations, barchaded, with cap in hand, he bowed to the crowd as he rode on, as if to win some compassion from them; but so recent a humility could find no favour. His scarlet cloak was plucked from his back; the only sounds which greeted his ears were, 'Traitor, traitor, death to the traitor' He hid his face, sick at heart with shame, and Lord Ambrose, at the gate of the Tower, was seen to burst into tears.<sup>1</sup> Edwin Sandys, Northampton, Ridley, Lord Robert Dudley, the offending judges Cholmley and Montague, with many others, followed in the few next days. Montague had protested to the Queen that he had acted only under compulsion, but his excuses were not fully received. Lady Northumberland went to Newhall to beg for mercy for her sons, but Mary refused to admit her.<sup>2</sup>

In general, however, there was no desire to press hard upon the prisoners. Few had been guilty in the first degree; in the second degree so many were guilty,

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V *Rolls House MSS.* BACARDO *Grey Friars' Chronicle*

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V *Rolls House MSS.*

that all could not be punished, and to make exceptions would be unjust and invidious. The Emperor recommended a general pardon, from which the principal offenders only should be excluded, and Mary herself was as little inclined to harshness. Her present desire was to forget all that had passed, and take possession of her throne for the objects nearest to her heart. Her chief embarrassment for the moment was from the over-loyalty of her subjects. The old-fashioned lords and country gentlemen who had attended her with their retainers from Norfolk, remained encamped round Newhall, unable to persuade themselves that they could leave her with safety in the midst of the men who had been the ministers of the usurpation.<sup>1</sup>

Her closest confidence the Queen reserved for Renard

On the 28th of July she sent for him at midnight. On the 2nd of August he was again with her, and the chief subject of her thoughts was still the funeral. 'She could not have her brother committed to the ground like a dog,' she said. While her fortunes were uncertain, she had allowed Renard to promise for her that she would make no changes in religion, but 'she had now told the Lords distinctly that she would not recognize any of the laws which had been passed in the minority,<sup>2</sup> and she intended to act boldly; timidity

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> She, perhaps, imagined that she was not exceeding her statutable right in the refusal. The 17th of the 28th of Henry VIII. empower-

ed any one of the heirs to the crown named in the King's will, on arriving at the age of twenty-four, to repeal laws passed not only in his or her own minority, but under circumstances such as those which had

would only encourage the people to be insolent ' 'the Lords were all quarrelling among themselves, and accusing one another ; she could not learn the truth on any point of the late conspiracy ; she did not know who were guilty 'or who were innocent, and, amidst the distracted advices which were urged upon her, she could not tell whether she could safely venture to London or not But outward acquiescence in the course which she chose to follow she believed that she could compel, and she would govern as God should direct her. The Emperor, she added, had written to her about her marriage, not specifying any particular person, but desiring her to think upon the subject. She had never desired to marry while princess, nor did she desire it now : but if it were for the interests of the Church, she would do whatever he might advise '

On this last point Renard knew more of the Emperor's intentions than Mary, and was discreetly silent ; on other points he used his influence wisely He constrained her, with Charles's arguments, to relinquish her burial scheme. 'Edward, as a heretic, should have a heretic funeral at Westminster Abbey ; she need not be present, and might herself have a mass said for him in the Tower As to removing to London, in his opinion

---

actually occurred, where the first Act of Edward's was, it-self, passed  
 her had died before coming of age in a minority, and Mary might urge  
 The 11th of the 1st of Edward VI that she might repeal that as well  
 modified the Act of Henry, limiting as any other statute passed in his  
 the power of repeal to the sovereign reign in virtue of the Act of her  
 in whose own reign the law to be father  
 repealed had been passed But this

she had better go thither at once, take possession of her throne, and send Northumberland to trial. Her brother's body ought to be examined also, that it might be ascertained whether he had been poisoned; and if poisoned, by whom and for what purpose.<sup>1</sup>

Mary rarely paused upon a resolution. Making up her mind that, as Renard said, it would be better for

Aug. 3 her to go to London, she set out thither the following day, Thursday, the 3rd of August. Excitement lent to her hard features an expression almost of beauty,<sup>2</sup> as she rode in the midst of a splendid cavalcade of knights and nobles. Elizabeth, escorted by two thousand horse and a retinue of ladies, was waiting to receive her outside the gates. The first in her congratulations, after the proclamation, yet fearful of giving offence, Elizabeth had written to ask if it was the Queen's pleasure that she should appear in mourning; but the Queen would have no mourning, nor would have others wear it in her presence. The sombre colours which of late years had clouded the Court, were to be banished at once and for ever; and with the dark colours, it seemed for a time as if old dislikes and suspicions were at the same time to pass away. The sisters embraced, the Queen was warm and affectionate, kissing all the ladies in Elizabeth's train; and side by side the daughters of Henry VIII. rode through Aldgate at seven in the evening, amidst the shouts of the people, the thunder of

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. . *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> 'La beauté de visage plus que médiocre,' are Renard's words to Charles



cannon, and pealing of church bells.<sup>1</sup> At the Tower gates the old Duke of Norfolk, Gardiner, Courtenay, and the Duchess of Somerset were seen kneeling as Mary approached. 'These are my prisoners,' she said, as she alighted from her horse and stooped and kissed them. Charmed by the enthusiastic reception and by the pleasant disappointment of her anxieties, she could find no room for hard thoughts of any one; so far was she softened, Renard wrote, that she could hardly be brought to consent to the necessary execution of justice. Against Northumberland himself she had no feeling of vindictiveness, and was chiefly anxious that he should be attended by a confessor; Northampton was certainly to be pardoned; Suffolk was already free; Northumberland should be spared, if possible; and, as to Lady Jane, justice forbade, she said, that an innocent girl should suffer for the crimes of others.<sup>2</sup>

The Emperor had recommended mercy; but he had not advised a general indemnity, as Renard made haste to urge. The Imperialist conception of clemency differed from the Queen's; and the same timidity which had first made the ambassadors too prudent, now took the form of measured cruelty. Renard entreated that Lady Jane should not be forgiven; 'conspirators required to be taught that for the principals in treason there was but one punishment; the Duke must die, and the rival Queen and her husband must die with him' 'We set before her'—Renard's own hand is the witness

---

<sup>1</sup> RENARD, NOAILLES, MACHYN; *Grey Friars' Chronicle*

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V. . *Rolls House MSS.*

against him—‘the examples of Maximus and his son Victor, both executed by the Emperor Theodosius, Maximus, because he had usurped the purple; Victor, because, as the intended heir of his father, he might have been an occasion of danger had he lived.’<sup>1</sup>

Looking also, as Renard was already doing, on the scenes which were round him, chiefly or solely as they might affect the interests of his master’s son, he had been nervously struck by the entourage which surrounded Elizabeth, and the popularity which she, as well as the Queen, was evidently enjoying.

Elizabeth, now passing into womanhood, was the person to whom the affections of the liberal party in England most definitely tended. She was the heir-presumptive to the crown after her sister; in matters of religion she was opposed to the mass, and opposed as decidedly to factious and dogmatic Protestantism; while from the caution with which she had kept aloof from political entanglements, it was clear that her brilliant intellectual abilities were not her only or her most formidable gifts. Already she shared the favour of the people with the Queen. Let Mary offend them (and in the intended marriage offence would unquestionably have to be given), their entire hearts might be transferred to her. The public finger had pointed to Courtenay as the husband which Eng-

---

<sup>1</sup> Et luy fust proposé l'exemple de Maximus et Victor son filz que Theodose l'Empereur feist mourir pour s'estre attribué le nom d'Empereur par tyrannie et l'avoir voulu continuer en son diet filz Victor, es-

cripvant l'histoire que l'on feist mourir le filz pour le scandale et danger qu'en eust peu advenir — Renard to Charles V *Roll's House MSS.* For the story, see GIBBON, cap xxvii.

land desired for the Queen. When Courtcnay should be set aside by Mary, he might be accepted by Elizabeth, and Elizabeth, it was rumoured, looked upon him with an eye of favour<sup>1</sup>. On all accounts, therefore, Elizabeth was dangerous. She was a figure on the stage whom Renard would gladly see removed. and a week or two later he bid Mary look to her, watch her, and catch her tripping if good fortune would so permit: 'it was better to prevent than to be prevented.'<sup>2</sup>

The Queen did not close her ears to those evil whispers; but for the first few days after she came to the Tower her thoughts were chiefly occupied with religion, and her first active step was to release and to restore to their sees the deprived and imprisoned bishops. The first week in August, Ponet, by royal order, was ejected from Winchester. Rudley from London, and Scory from Chichester. The See of Durham was reconstituted. Tunstal, Day, and Heath were set at liberty,

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Signamment sembleroit que vostre majesté ne se deust confier en Madame Elizabeth que bien a point, et discouvrir sur ce qu'elle ne se voit en espoir d'entrer en règne, ne avoir voulu fleschir quant au point de la religion ny ouyr la messe, ce que l'on jugeoit elle deust faire pour la respect de vostre majesté, et pour les courtisans dont elle use en son endroit encores qu'elle ny eust faict sinon l'assister et l'accompagner. Et davantage l'on peult discouvrir

comme elle se maintient en la nouvelle religion par pratique, pour attirer et gagner a sa devotion ceulx quilz sont de la dicté religion en s'en aider, si elle avoit intention de maligner, et jaçois l'on se pourroit fourcompter quant à son intention, si est en ce commencement, qu'il est plus sure prévenir que d'estre prévenu et penser a ce que peult advenir, attendu que les objets sont evidens. — Les Ambassadeurs de l'Empereur à Marie, Reire d'Angleterre *Gravelle Papers* vol. II pp 64—69

and returned to their dioceses. The Bishop of Ely was deposed from the chancellorship, and the seals were given to Gardiner. 'On the 5th of August,' August 5. says the *Grey Friars' Chronicle*, 'at seven o'clock at night, Edmond Bonner came home from the Marshalsea like a bishop, and all the people by the way-side bade him welcome home, both man and woman, and as many of the women as might kissed him; and so he came to Paul's, and knelt on the steps, and said his prayers, and the people rang the bells for joy.'<sup>1</sup>

While Mary was repairing acts of injustice, Gardiner, with Sir William Petre, was looking into the public accounts. The debts of the late Government had been reduced, the currency unconsidered, to 190,000*l*.<sup>2</sup> A doubt had been raised whether, after the attempt to set aside the succession, the Queen was bound to take the responsibility of these obligations, but Mary preferred honour to convenience; she promised to pay everything as soon as possible. Further, there remain, partly in Gardiner's hand, a number of hasty notes, written evidently in these same first weeks of Mary's reign, which speak nobly for the intentions with which both Mary

<sup>1</sup> *Chronicle of the Grey Friars of London*, p 82

<sup>2</sup> August 1553 Debts of the crown Irish debt, 36,094*l*. 18*s* Household debts, 14,574*l* 16*s* Further household debts, 7,450*l* 5*s* Berwick debt, with the wages of the officers, 16,639*l* 18*s* Calais debt, beside 17,000*l* of loans and other things, 21,184*l* 10*s* Ordnance

Office, 3,134*l* 7*s* Public works, 3,200*l*. Admiralty debt, 3,923*l* 4*s* Debts in the Office of the Chamber, 17,968*l* Debts beyond the seas by Sir Thomas Gresham's particular bill, 61,068*l*. Alderney's debt, 3,028*l* Scilly debt,\* 3,071*l* —*MS Mary, Domestic*, vol 1. State Paper Office.

and himself were setting generally to work. The expenses of the household were to be reduced to the scale of Henry VII., or the early years of Henry VIII.; the garrisons at Berwick and Calais were to be placed on a more economical footing, the navy reduced, the irregular guard dismissed or diminished. Bribery was to be put an end to in the courts of Westminster, at quarter sessions, and among justices of the peace; 'the laws were to be restored to their authority without suffering any matters to be ordered otherwise than as the laws should appoint.'<sup>1</sup> These first essentials having been attended to, the famous or infamous book of sales, grants, and exchanges of the Crown lands was to be looked into; the impropriation of benefices was to cease, and decency to be restored to the parish churches, where the grooms and game-keepers should give way to competent ministers. Economy, order, justice, and reverence were to heal the canker of profligate profanity which had eaten too long into the moral life of England.

In happier times Mary might have been a worthy Queen, and Gardiner an illustrious minister,<sup>2</sup> but the

---

<sup>1</sup> Note of things to be attended to. *MS Mary, Domestic*, vol. 1.

<sup>2</sup> Another natural feature of these curious days was the arrest of suspected persons, one of whom, Edward Underhill the Hot Gospeller, has left behind him, in the account of his own adventures, a very vivid picture of the time. Underhill was a yeoman of the guard. He had seen service in the French wars,

but had been noted chiefly for the zeal which he had shown in the late reign in hating Catholics into gaol. He had thus worked his way into Court favour. During the brief royalty of Jane Grey, his wife was confined. His child was christened at the Tower church and Suffolk and Pembroke were 'godfathers,' and Jane herself was godmother. The day that Mary was proclaimed, he

fatal superstition which confounded religion with orthodox opinion was too strong for both of them.

put out a ballad, which, as he expected, brought him into trouble. 'The next day,' he is telling his own story, 'after the Queen was come to the Tower, the foresaid ballad came into the hands of Secretary Bourne, who straightway made inquiry for the said Edward, who dwelt in Lymehurst, which he having intelligence of, sent the sheriff of Middlesex with a company of bills and glaives, who came into my house, being in my bed, and my wife newly laid in childbed. The high constable, whose name is Thomas Joy, dwelled at the house next to me, whom the sheriff brought also with him. He being my very friend, desired the sheriff and his company to stay without for frightening of my wife, and he would go fetch me unto him; who knocked at the door, saying, he must speak with me. I, lying so near that I might hear him, called unto him, willing him to come unto me, for that he was always my very friend and earnest in the gospel, who declared unto me that the sheriff and a great company was sent for me. Whereupon I rose and made me ready to come unto him.'

'Sir, said he, I have commandment from the council to apprehend you and bring you unto them.'

'Why, said I, it is now ten of the clock at night, you cannot now carry me unto them.'

'No, sir, said he, you shall go with me to my house in London, where you shall have a bed, and tomorrow I will bring you unto them in the Tower.'

'In the name of God, quoth I, and so went with him, requiring him if I might understand the cause. He said he knew none.'

Underhill, however, conjectured that it was the ballad. He 'was nothing dismayed,' and in the morning went readily to the Tower, where he waited in the presence chamber talking to the pensioners.

Sir Edward Hastings passed through, and as he saw him, 'frowned earnestly.' 'Are you come?' said Hastings, 'we will talk with you ere you part, I warrant you.' They were old acquaintances. Underhill had been controller of the ordnance at Calais when Lord Huntingdon was in command there. The Earl being in bad health, his brother Sir Edward was with him, assisting in the duties of the office, and Underhill, being able to play and sing, had been a frequent visitor at the Government House. The Earl, moreover, 'took great delight to hear him reason' with Sir Edward, on points of controversy—chiefly on the real presence—where the controller of the ordnance (according to his own account), would quote Scripture, and Sir Edward would 'swear great oaths,' especially by

Edward's body was meanwhile examined. The physicians reported that without doubt he had died of

the Lord's foot;' on which Underhill would say, 'Nay, then, it must needs be so, and you prove it with such oaths,' and the Earl would laugh and exclaim, 'Brother, give him over, Underhill is too good for you.'

Hastings, it seemed, could not forgive these passages of wit, and Underhill was to smart for them. While he stood waiting, Secretary Bourne came in, 'looking as the wolf at the lamb,' and seeing the man that he had sent for, carried him off into the council room. Hastings was gone, Bedford sat as President, 'and Bedford,' says Underhill, 'was my friend, for that my chance was to be at the recovery of his son, my Lord Russell, when he was cast into the Thames by Lymehurst, whom I received into my house, and gave him to bed, who was in great peril of his life, the weather being very cold.'

Bedford, however, made no sign of recognition. Bourne read the ballad, on which Underhill protested that there was no attack on the Queen's title in it. No! Bourne said, but it maintains the Queen's title with the help of an arrant heretic, Tyndal. Underhill used the word Papist. Sir John Mason asked what he meant by that. 'Sir,' he says that he replied, 'I think, if you look among the priests in Paul's, you shall find some old

mumpsimusses there

'Mumpsimusses, knave, said he, mumpsimusses! Thou art an heretic knave, by God's blood.'

'Yea' by the mass said the Earl of Bath, I warrant him an heretic knave indeed.

'I beseech your honours,' Underhill said, 'speaking to the Lords that sat at the table (for those others stood by and were not of the council), be my good Lords. I have offended no laws. I have served the Queen's Majesty's father and brother long time, and spent and consumed my living therein. I went not forth against her Majesty, notwithstanding I was commanded.'

He was interrupted by Arundel, who said that, 'by his writing,' he wished to set them all by the ears. Hastings re-entered at the moment, telling the council that they must repair to the Queen, and the Hot Gospeller was promptly ordered to Newgate.

The sheriff led him through the streets, his friend Joy 'following afar off, as Peter followed Christ.' He wrote a few words to his wife at the door of Newgate, asking her to send him 'his nightgown, his Bible, and his lute,' and then entered the prison, his life in which he goes on to describe.

In the centre of Newgate was 'a great open hall.' 'As soon as it was supper time,' the board was

poison,<sup>1</sup> and there was a thought of indicting the Duke of Northumberland for his murder: but it was relinquished on further inquiry; the poison, if the physicians were right, must have been administered by negligence or accident. The corpse was then  
 August 6. buried with the forms of the Church of Eng-

covered in the same hall. The keeper, whose name was 'Alisander,' with his wife, came and sat down, and half a dozen prisoners that were there for felony,' Underhill 'being the first that for religion was sent unto that prison' One of the felons had served with him in France 'After supper,' the story continues, 'this good fellow, whose name was Bristow, procured me to have a bed in his chamber, who could play well upon a rebeck. He was a tall fellow, and after one of Queen Mary's guard, yet a Protestant, which he kept secret, for else, he said, he should not have found such favour as he did at the keeper's hands and his wife's, for to such as loved the gospel they were very cruel Well, said Underhill, I have sent for my Bible, and, by God's grace, therein shall be my daily exercise, I will not hide it from them Sir, said he, I am poor, but they will bear with you, for they see your estate is to pay well, and I will shew you the nature and manner of them, for I have been here a good while They both do love music very well Wherefore you with your lute, and I to play with you on my rebeck, will please them greatly He loveth to be merry,

and to drink wine, and she also If you will bestow upon them, every dinner and supper, a quart of wine and some music, you shall be their white son, and have all the favour they can shew you'

The honour of being 'white son' to the governor and governess of Newgate was worth aspiring after. Underhill duly provided the desired entertainments The governor gave him the best room in the prison, with all other admissible indulgences

'At last,' however, 'the evil savours, great unquietness, with over many drafts of air,' threw the poor gentleman into a burning ague He shifted 'his lodgings,' but to no purpose, the 'evil savours' followed him The keeper offered him his own parlour, where he escaped from the noise of the prison; but it was near the kitchen, and the smell of the meat was disagreeable Finally, the wife put him away in her store-closet, amidst her best plate, crockery, and clothes, and there he continued to survive till the middle of September, when he was released on bail through the interference of the Earl of Bedford.—Underhill's Narrative: *Harleian MSS* 425.

<sup>1</sup> Supra, p. 172.



land at Westminster Abbey; the Archbishop of Canterbury, who had so far been left at liberty, read the service; it was the last and saddest function of his public ministry which he was destined to perform. Simultaneously, as Mary had determined, requiems were chanted in the Tower Chapel; and Gardiner, in the presence of the Queen and four hundred persons, sung the mass for the dead with much solemnity. The ceremony was, however, injured by a misfortune; after the gospel the incense was carried round, and the chaplain who bore it was married; Doctor Weston, who was afterwards deprived of the deanery of Windsor for adultery, darted forward and snatched the censer out of the chaplain's hand. 'Shamest thou not to do thine office,' he said, 'having a wife, as thou hast? The Queen will not be censured by such as thou.'<sup>1</sup> Nor was scandal the worst part of it. Elizabeth had been requested to attend, and had refused; angry murmurs and curses against the Bishop of Winchester were heard among the yeomen of the guard; while the Queen made no secret of her desire that the example which she had set should be imitated. Renard trembled for the consequences; Noailles anticipated a civil war; twenty thousand men, the latter said, would lose their lives before England would be cured of heresy;<sup>2</sup> yet Mary had made a beginning, and as she had begun she was resolved that others should continue.

In the Tower she felt her actions under restraint.

---

<sup>1</sup> STYPE.

<sup>2</sup> NOAILLES, vol. ii p. 111.

She was still surrounded by thousands of armed men, the levies of Derby and Hastings, the retainers of Pembroke and Arundel and Bedford; the council were spies upon her actions; the sentinels at the gates were a check upon her visitors. She could receive no one whose business with her was not made public to the Lords, and whose reception they were not pleased to sanction; even Renard was for a time excluded from her, and in her anxiety to see him she suggested that he might come to her in disguise.<sup>1</sup> Such a thralldom was irksome and inconvenient. She had broken the promise which Renard had been allowed to make for her about religion; she had been troubled, it is easy to believe, with remonstrances to which she was not likely to have answered with temper; Pembroke absented himself from the presence; he was required to return and to reduce the number of his followers; the quarrels which began while the Queen was at New Hall broke out with worse violence than ever; Lord Derby complained to Renard that those who had saved her crown were treated with neglect, while men like Arundel, Bedford, and Pembroke, who had been parties to the treasons against her, remained in power; Lord Russell

---

<sup>1</sup> Monseigneur, je n'ay sceu trouver moien jusques à ceste heure de communiquer avec la royne, ce que je deliberois faire avec l'occasion des lectres de sa Majesté, si sans suspicion, j'eusse peu avoir accès, que n'a esté possible pour estre les portes en la Tour de Londres ou elle este logée, si gardées que n'est possible y entrer que l'on ne soit congneu; elle m'avoit fait dire si je me pouvoys desguiser et prendre ung manteau, mais il m'a semblé pour le mieux et plus seur d'attendre qu'elle soit a Richemont — Renard to Charles V.: *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv pp. 71, 72.

was soon after placed under arrest. Pembroke and Winchester were ordered to keep their houses, and the Court was distracted with suspicion, discord, and uncertainty.<sup>1</sup>

From such a scene Mary desired to escape to some place where she could be at least mistress of her own movements, her impatience was quickened by a riot at St Bartholomew's, where a priest attempted to say mass; and on Saturday, the 12th of August, she removed to Richmond. Her absence encouraged the insubordination of the people. On Sunday, the 13th, another priest was attacked at the altar; the vestments <sup>August 13</sup> were torn from his back, and the chalice snatched from his hands. Bourne, whom the Queen had appointed her chaplain, preached at Paul's Cross. A crowd of refugees and English fanatics had collected round the pulpit; and when he spoke something in praise of Bonner, and said that he had been unjustly imprisoned,<sup>2</sup> yells rose of 'Papist, Papist! Tear him down.' A dagger was hurled at the preacher, swords were drawn, the mayor attempted to interfere, but he could not make his way through the dense mass of the rioters, and Bourne would have paid for his rashness with his life, had not Courtenay, who was a popular favourite, with his mother the Marchioness of Exeter, thrown themselves on the pulpit steps, while Bradford sprung to his side, and kept the people back till he could be carried off.

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to the Emperor *Rolls* : <sup>2</sup> Renard says it was at these *House MSS. Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, p. 15 words that the exasperation broke out

But the danger did not end there. The Protestant orators sounded the alarm through London. Meetings were held, and inflammatory placards were scattered about the streets. If religion was to be tampered with, men were heard to say, it was better at once to fetch Northumberland from the Tower.

Uncertain on whom she could rely, Mary  
August 16. sent for Renard, who could only repeat his former cautions, and appeal to what had occurred in justification of them. He undertook to pacify Lord Derby; but in the necessity to which she was so soon reduced of appealing to him, a foreigner, in her emergencies, he made her feel that she could not carry things with so high a hand. She had a rival in the Queen of Scots, beyond her domestic enemies, whom her wisdom ought to fear; she would ruin herself if she flew in the face of her subjects; and he prevailed so far with her that she promised to take no further steps till the meeting of Parliament. After a consultation with the mayor, she drew up a hasty proclamation, granting universal toleration till further orders, forbidding her Protestant and Catholic subjects to interrupt each other's services, and prohibiting at the same time all preaching on either side without license from herself.

Being on the spot, the ambassador took the opportunity of again trying Mary's disposition upon the marriage question. His hopes had waned since her arrival in London; he had spoken to Paget, who agreed that an alliance with the Prince of Spain was the most splendid which the Queen could hope for; but the time

was inopportune and the people were intensely hostile. The exigencies of the position, he thought, might oblige the Queen to yield to wishes which she could not oppose, and accept Lord Courtenay; or possibly her own inclination might set in the same direction; or again, she might wish to renew her early engagement with the Emperor himself. The same uncertainty had been felt at Brussels; the Bishop of Arras, therefore had charged Renard to feel his way carefully and make no blunder. If the Queen inclined to the Emperor, he might speak of Philip as more eligible. if she fancied Courtenay, it would be useless to interfere—she would only resent his opposition<sup>1</sup>. Renard obeyed his instructions, and the result was reassuring. When the ambassador mentioned the word ‘marriage,’ the Queen began to smile significantly: not once, but many times—she plainly liked the topic. plainly, also, her thoughts were not turning in the direction of any English husband; she spoke of her rank, and of her unwillingness to condescend to a subject, Courtenay, the sole remaining representative of the White Rose except the Poles, was the only Englishman who could in any way be thought suitable for her; but she said that she expected the Emperor to provide a consort for her, and that, being a woman, she could not make the first advances. Renard satisfied himself from her manner that

<sup>1</sup> Car si elle y avoit fantasie, elle ne laisseroit, si elle este du naturel des autres femmes de passer oultre et si se ressentiroit à jamais de ce que vous, en pourriez avoir dit — Arras to Renard. *Granville Papers*, vol iv p 77

if the Prince of Spain was proposed, the offer would be most entirely welcome.<sup>1</sup>

The trials of the conspirators were now resolved upon. The Queen was determined to spare Lady Jane Grey, in spite of all which Renard could urge; but the state of London showed that the punishment of the really guilty could no longer be safely delayed. On this point all parties in the council were agreed. On

August 18 Friday, the 18th of August, therefore, a court of peers was formed in Westminster Hall, with the aged Duke of Norfolk for High Steward, to try John Dudley Duke of Northumberland, the Earl of Warwick, and the Marquis of Northampton, for high treason. Forty-four years before, as the curious remarked, the father of Norfolk had sat on the commission which tried the father of Northumberland for the same crime.

The indictments charged the prisoners with levying war against their lawful sovereign. Northumberland, who was called first to the bar, pleaded guilty of the acts which were laid against him, but he submitted two points to the consideration of the court.

1. Whether, having taken the field with a warrant under the Great Seal, he could be lawfully accused of treason.

2. Whether those peers from whom he had received his commission, and by whose letters he had been

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to the Bishop of Arras | Renard to Charles V, August 16  
*Granielle Papers*, vol. iv. p. 79 | *Rolls House, MSS.*

directed in what he had done, could sit upon his trial as his judges.

The Great Seal, he was answered briefly, was the seal of a usurper, and could convey no warrant to him. If the Lords were as guilty as he said, yet, so long as no attainder was on record against them, they were persons able in law to pass upon any trial, and not to be challenged but at the prince's pleasure.<sup>1</sup>

The Duke bowed and was silent.

Northampton and Warwick came next, and, like Northumberland, confessed to the indictment. Northampton, however, pleaded in his defence, that he had held no public office during the crisis, that he had not been present at the making of Edward's device, and had been amusing himself hunting in the country.<sup>2</sup> Warwick, with proud sadness, said merely that he had followed his father, and would share his father's fortunes; if his property was confiscated, he hoped that his debts would be paid.<sup>3</sup>

But Northampton had indisputably been in the field with the army, and, as his judges perfectly well knew, had been, with Suffolk, the Duke's uniform supporter in his most extreme measures; the Queen had resolved to pardon him; but the court could not recognize his

<sup>1</sup> *Queen Jane and Queen Mary.* The anomaly in the constitution of the Court amused Renard, who commented upon it to the Emperor, as an illustration of England and the English character. — *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS. Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, Appendix B. 1553. Northampton pleaded — *Clarendon* *si era mai messo in governo che sempre attese alla caccia.*

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

excuse. Norfolk rose, in a few words pronounced the usual sentence, and broke his wand ; the cold glimmering edge of the Tower axe was turned towards the prisoners, and the peers rose. Northumberland, before he was led away, fell upon his knees ; his ' children were young, he said, and had acted under orders from their father ; to them let the Queen show mercy ; for himself he had his peace to make with Heaven ; he entreated for a few days of life, and the assistance of a confessor ; if two of the council would come to confer with him, he offered to communicate important secrets of state ; and, finally, he begged that he might die by the axe like a nobleman.<sup>1</sup>

On the 19th, Sir John and Sir Henry  
 August 19 Gates, Sir Andrew Dudley, and Sir Thomas Palmer were tried before a special commission. Dudley had gone with the treasonable message to France ; the three others were the boldest and most unscrupulous of the Duke's partisans, while Palmer was also especially hated for his share in the death of Somerset. These four also pleaded guilty, and were sentenced, Palmer only scornfully telling the commissioners that they were traitors as well as he, and worse than he<sup>2</sup>

Seven had been condemned, three only, the Duke, Sir John Gates, and Palmer, were to suffer.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Queen Jane and Queen Mary*,  
 p 17 Renard says that he asked  
 the council to intercede for his life  
<sup>2</sup> So Renard states The author  
 of the *Chronicle of Queen Mary* says

merely that he denied that he had borne arms against the Queen, but admitted that he had been with the army



Crime alone makes death terrible: in the long list of victims whose bloody end, at stake or scaffold, the historian of England in the sixteenth century has to relate, two only showed signs of cowardice, and one of those was a soldier and a nobleman, who, in a moment of extreme peril, four years before, had kissed swords with his comrades, and had sworn to conquer the insurgents at Norwich, or die with honour.

The Duke of Northumberland, who since that time had lived very emphatically without God in the world, had not lived without religion. He had affected religion, talked about religion, played with religion, till fools and flatterers had told him that he was a saint; and now, in his extreme need, he found that he had trifled with forms and words, till they had grown into a hideous hypocrisy. The Infinite of death was opening at his feet, and he had no faith, no hope, no conviction, but only a blank and awful horror, and perhaps he felt that there was nothing left for him but to fling himself back in agony into the open arms of superstition. He had asked to speak with some member of the council; he had asked for a confessor. In Gardiner, Bishop of Winchester, he found both.

After the sentence Gardiner visited him in the Tower, where he poured out his miserable story; he was a Catholic, he said, he always had been a Catholic; he had believed nothing of all the doctrines for which he had pretended to be so zealous under Edward. 'Alas!' he cried, 'is there no help for me?' 'Let me live but a little longer to do penance for my many sins.'

Gardiner's heart was softened at the humiliating spectacle; he would speak to the Queen, he said, and he did speak, not wholly without success; he may have judged rightly, that the living penitence of the Joshua of the Protestants would have been more useful to the Church than his death: Already Mary had expressed a wish that if possible, the wretched man should be spared, and he would have been allowed to live except for the reiterated protests of Renard in his own name and in the Emperor's.

It was decided at last that he should die; and a priest was assigned him to prepare his soul. Doctor Watts or Watson, the same man whom Cranmer long ago had set in the stocks at Canterbury, took charge of Palmer and the rest—to them, as rough soldiers, spiritual consolation from a priest of any decent creed was welcome.

The executions were fixed originally for August 21 Monday the 21st; but the Duke's conversion was a triumph to the Catholic cause too important not to be dwelt upon a little longer. Neither Northampton, Warwick, Andrew Dudley, nor Sir Henry Gates were aware that they were to be respited, and, as all alike

<sup>1</sup> The authority for this story is Parsons the Jesuit, who learnt it from one of the council who was present at the interview. Parsons says, indeed, that Mary would have spared the Duke; but that some one wrote to the Emperor, and that the Emperor insisted that he should be put to death. This could not be, be-

cause there was no time for letters to pass and repass between Brussels and London, in the interval between the sentence and the execution, but Renard says distinctly that Mary did desire to pardon him, and that he was himself obliged to exert his influence to prevent it.

availed themselves of the services of a confessor and the forms of the Catholic faith, their compliance could be made an instrument of a public and edifying lesson. The lives of those who were to suffer were prolonged for twenty-four hours. On Monday morning 'certain of the citizens of London' were requested to be in attendance at the Tower chapel, where Northumberland, Northampton, Dudley, Henry Gates, and Palmer were brought in; and, 'first kneeling down, every one of them, upon his knees, they heard mass, saying devoutly, with the Bishop,<sup>1</sup> every one of them, *Confiteor*'

'After the mass was done, the Duke rose up, and looked back upon my lord marquis, and came unto him, asking them all forgiveness, the one after the other, upon their knees, one to another; and the one did heartily forgive the other. And then they came, every one of them, before the altar, every one of them kneeling, and confessing to the Bishop that they were the same men in the faith according as they had confessed to him before, and that they all would die in the Catholic faith.' When they had all received the sacrament, they rose and turned to the people, and the Duke said —

'Truly, good people, I profess here before you all, that I have received the sacrament according to the true Catholic faith: and the plague that is upon the realm and upon us now is that we have erred from the faith these sixteen years; and this I protest unto you all from the bottom of my heart.'

---

<sup>1</sup> GARDINER.

Northampton, with the rest, 'did affirm the same with weeping tears.'<sup>1</sup>

Among the spectators were observed the sons of the Duke of Somerset.

In exhibiting to the world the humiliation of the professors of the gospel, the Catholic party enjoyed a pardonable triumph. Northumberland, in playing a part in the pageant, was hoping to save his wretched life. When it was over he wrote a passionate appeal to Arundel.

August 22

'Alas, my lord,' he said, 'is my crime so heinous as no redemption but my blood can wash away the spots thereof? An old proverb there is, and that most true—A living dog is better than a dead lion. Oh that it would please her good Grace to give me life, yea, the life of a dog, if I might but live and kiss her feet, and spend both life and all in her honourable service.'

But Arundel could not save him—would not have saved him, perhaps, had he been able—and he had only to face the end with such resolution as he could command.

The next morning at nine o'clock, Warwick and Sir John Gates heard mass in the Tower chapel; the two Seymours were again present with Courtenay: and before Gates received the sacrament he said a few words of regret to the latter for his long imprisonment, of which he admitted himself in part the cause.<sup>2</sup> On leav-

<sup>1</sup> *Harleian MSS* 284. Compare the account of the chronicler. *Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, pp. 18, 19

<sup>2</sup> 'Not for any hatred towards you,' he added, 'but for fear that harm

ing the chapel Warwick was taken back to his room, and learned that he was respited. Gates joined Palmer, who was walking with Watson in the garden, and talking with the groups of gentlemen who were collected there. Immediately after the Duke was brought out. 'Sir John,' he said to Gates, 'God have mercy on us; forgive me as I forgive you, although you and your council have brought us hither.' 'I forgive you, my Lord,' Gates answered, 'as I would be forgiven: yet it was you and your authority that was the only original cause of all.' They bowed each. The Duke passed on, and the procession moved forward to Tower Hill.

The last words of a worthless man are in themselves of little moment, but the effect of the dying speech of Northumberland lends to it an artificial importance. Whether to the latest moment he hoped for his life, or whether, divided between atheism and superstition, he thought, if any religion was true, Romanism was true, and it was prudent not to throw away a chance, who can tell? At all events, he mounted the scaffold with Heath, the Bishop of Worcester, at his side, and then deliberately said to the crowd, that his rebellion and his present fall were owing to the false preachers who had led him to err from the Catholic faith of Christ; the fathers and the saints had ever agreed in one doctrine; the present generation were the first that had dared to follow their private opinions; and in England and in Germany, where error had taken deepest root, there

---

might come thereby to my late young master.'—*Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, p. 20.

had followed war, famine, rebellion, misery, tokens all of them of God's displeasure. Therefore, as they loved their country, as they valued their souls, he implored his hearers to turn, all of them, and turn at once, to the Church which they had left; in which Church he, from the bottom of his heart, avowed his own steadfast belief. For himself he called them all to witness that he died in the one true Catholic faith; to which, if he had been brought sooner, he would not have been in his present calamity.

He then knelt; 'I beseech you all,' he said again, 'to believe that I die in the Catholic faith.' He repeated the *Miserere* psalm, the psalm *De Profundis*, and the *Paternoster*. The executioner, as usual, begged his pardon. 'I have deserved a thousand deaths,' he muttered. He made the sign of the cross upon the sawdust, and kissed it, then laid down his head, and perished.

The shame of the apostasy shook down the frail edifice of the Protestant constitution, to be raised again in suffering, as the first foundations of it had been laid, by purer hands and nobler spirits.<sup>1</sup> In his better years

---

<sup>1</sup> Lady Jane Grey spoke a few memorable words on the Duke's conduct at the scaffold. 'On Tuesday, the 29th of August,' says the writer of the *Chronicle of Queen Mary*, 'I dined at Partridge's house (in the Tower) with my Lady Jane, she sitting at the board's-end, Partridge, his wife, and my Lady's gentlewoman. We fell in discourse of religion. I pray you, quoth she, have they mass in London. Yea, forsooth, quoth I, in some places. It may so be, quoth she. It is not so strange as the sudden conversion of the late Duke; for who could have thought, said she, he would have so done?' It was answered her, perchance he thereby hoped to have had his par-

Northumberland had been a faithful subject and a fearless soldier, and, with a master's hand over him, he might have lived with integrity and died with honour. Opportunity tempted his ambition—ambition betrayed him into crime—and, given over to his lower nature, he climbed to the highest round of the political ladder, to fall and perish like a craven. He was one of those many men who can follow worthily, yet cannot lead; and the virtue of the beginning was not less real than the ignominy of the end.

Gates was the second sufferer. He, too, spoke in the same key. He had been a great reader of Scripture, he said, but he had not read it to be edified, but to be seditious—to dispute, to interpret it after his private

don Pardon! quoth she, woe worth him! He hath brought me and our stock in most miserable calamity by his exceeding ambition, but for the answering that he hoped for life by his turning, though other men be of that opinion, I utterly am not. For what man is there living, I pray you, although he had been innocent, that would hope of life in that case, being in the field in person against the Queen, as general, and after his taking so hated and evil spoken of by the Commons, and at his coming into prison, so wondered at as the like was never heard by any man's time. Who can judge that he should hope for pardon whose life was odious to all men? But what will ye more? Like as his life was wicked and full of dissimulation, so

was his end thereafter. I pray God I view no friend of mine die so. Should I, who am young and in my few years, forsake my faith for the love of life? Nay, God forbid! Much more he should not, whose fatal course, although he had lived his just number of years, could not have long continued. But life was sweet, it appeared. So he might have lived, you will say, he did not care how; indeed the reason is good, for he that would have lived in chains to have had his life, by like would leave no other means unatempted. But God be merciful to us, for he saith, whoso denyeth him before men, he will not know him in his Father's kingdom.—*Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, p 24

affection; to him, therefore, the honey had been poison, and he warned all men how they followed his ill example; God's holy mysteries were no safe things to toy or play with. Gates, in dying, had three strokes of an axe;—'Whether,' says an eye-witness,<sup>1</sup> 'it was by his own request or no was doubtful'—remarkable words—as if the everlasting fate of the soul depended on its latest emotion, and repentance could be intensified by the conscious realization of death.

Last came Sir Thomas Palmer, in whom, to judge by his method of taking leave of life, there was some kind of nobleness. It was he who led the cavalry forlorn hope, at Haddington, when the supplies were thrown in for the garrison.

He leapt upon the scaffold, red with the blood of his companions. 'Good morning to you all, good people,' he said, looking round him with a smile; 'ye come hither to see me die, and to see what news I have; marry, I will tell you: I have seen more in yonder terrible place [he pointed towards the Tower] than ever I saw before throughout all the realms that ever I wandered in; for there I have seen God, I have seen the world, and I have seen myself; and when I beheld my life, I saw nothing but slime and clay, full of corruption; I saw the world nothing else but vanity, and all the pleasures and treasures thereof nought worth; I saw God omnipotent, his power infinite, his mercy incomprehensible; and when I saw this, I most humbly

---

<sup>1</sup> *Harleian MSS.* 284.



submitted myself unto him, beseeching him of mercy and pardon, and I trust he hath forgiven me; for he called me once or twice before, but I would not turn to him, but even now by this sharp kind of death he hath called me unto him. I trust the wings of his mercy shall spread over me and save me, and I do here confess, before you all, Christ to be the very Son of God the Father, born of the Virgin Mary, which came into the world to fulfil the law for us, and to bear our offences on his back, and suffered his passion for our redemption, by the which I trust to be saved.'

Like his fellow-sufferers, Palmer then said a few prayers, asked the Queen's forgiveness, knelt, and died.

Stunned by the apostasy on the scaffold of the man whom they had worshipped as a prophet, the ultrafaction among the Protestants became now powerless. The central multitude, whose belief was undefined, yielded to the apparent sentence of Heaven upon a cause weakened by unsuccessful treason, and disavowed in his death by its champion. Edward had died on the anniversary of the execution of More; God, men said, had visited his people, and 'the Virgin Mary' had been set upon the throne for their redemption.<sup>1</sup> Dr Watson, on the 20th of August, preached at Paul's Cross under a guard of soldiers; on the 24th, two days after the scene on Tower Hill, so little was a guard <sup>August 24</sup> necessary, that mass was said in St Paul's Church in Latin, with matins and vespers. The crucifix was re-

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. : *Ro's House MSS*

placed in the roodloft, the high altar was re-decorated, the real presence was defended from the pulpit, and except from the refugees not a murmur was heard.<sup>1</sup> Catching this favourable opportunity, the Queen charmed the country with the announcement that the second portion of the last subsidy granted by Parliament should not be collected; she gave her word that the currency at the earliest moment should be thoroughly restored; while she gained credit on all sides for the very moderate vengeance with which she appeared to be contenting herself. Ridley only, Renard wrote, on the 9th of September, would now be executed; the other prisoners were to be all pardoned. The enthusiasm was slightly abated, indeed, when it was announced that their forgiveness would not be wholly free. Montague and Bromley, on their release from the Tower, were fined 7000*l.* a-piece; Suffolk, Northampton, and other noblemen and gentlemen, as their estates would bear. But, to relieve the burdens of the people at the expense of those who had reaped the harvest of the late spoliations was, on the whole, a legitimate retribution; the moneyed men were pleased with the recognition of Edward's debts, and provided a loan of 25,000 crowns for the present necessities of the Government. London streets rang again with shouts of 'God save the Queen;' and Mary recovered a fresh instalment of popularity to carry her a few steps further.<sup>2</sup>

The refugees were the first difficulty. They were

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> NOAILLES, RENARD.

too numerous to imprison; and the most influential among them—men like Peter Martyr—having come to England on the invitation of the late Government, it was neither just nor honourable to hand them over to their own sovereigns. But both Mary and her Flemish adviser were anxious to see them leave the country as quickly as possible. The Emperor recommended a general intimation to be given out that criminals of all kinds taking refuge in England would be liable to seizure, offences against religion being neither specially mentioned nor specially excepted.<sup>1</sup> The foreign preachers were ordered to depart by proclamation; and Peter Martyr, who had left Oxford, and was staying with Cranmer at Lambeth, expecting an arrest, received, instead of it, a safe-conduct, of which he instantly availed himself. The movements of others were quickened with indirect menaces; while Gardiner told Renard, with much self-satisfaction, that a few messages desiring some of them to call upon him at his house had given them wings.<sup>2</sup>

Finding her measures no longer opposed, the Queen refused next to recognize the legality of the marriage of the clergy. Married priests should either leave their wives or leave their benefices; and on the 29th of August, Gardiner, Bonner, Day, and Tunstal, late prisoners in the Tower, were appointed commissioners to examine into the conditions of their episcopal brethren. Convocation was about to meet, and must undergo a preliminary

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Queen Mary: *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv p 65

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V., September 9 *Rolls House MSS.*

purification. Unhappy Convocation! So lately the supreme legislative body in the country, it was now patched, clipped, mended, repaired, or altered, as the secular Government put on its alternate hues. The Protestant bishops had accepted their offices on Protestant terms—*Quamdiu se bene gesserint*, on their good behaviour; and, with the assistance of so pliant a clause, a swift clearance was effected. Barlow, to avoid expulsion, resigned Bath. Paul Bush retreated from Bristol. Hooper, ejected from Worcester by the restoration of Heath, was deprived of Gloucester for heresy and marriage, and, being a dangerous person, was committed on the 1st of September to the Fleet.

September. Ferrars, of St David's, left in prison by Northumberland for other pretended offences, was deprived on the same grounds, but remained in confinement. Bird, having a wife, was turned out of Chester; Archbishop Holgate out of York. Coverdale, Ridley, Scory, and Ponet had been already disposed of. The bench was wholesomely swept.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Some of the Protestant bishops (Cranmer, Hooper, Ridley, and Ferrars were admirable exceptions) had taken care of themselves in the seven years of plenty. At the time of the deposition of the Archbishop of York, an inventory was taken of the personal property which was then in his possession. He had 'five houses, three very well provided, two meetly well.' At his house at Battersea he had, of comed gold, 300*l*.; plate gilt and parcel gilt, 1600 oz. Mitre,

gold, with two pendants set with very fine diamonds, sapphires, and balsts, and other stones and pearls, weight 125 oz.; six great gold rings, with very fine sapphires, emeralds, diamonds, turquoises. 'At Cawood he had of money 900*l*., mitres, 2. Plate gilt and parcel gilt, 770 oz.; broken cross of silver gilt, 46 oz.; two thousand five hundred sheep; two Turkey carpets, as big and as good as any subject had; a chest full of copes and vestments. House-

The English Protestant preachers seeing that priests everywhere held themselves licensed *ex officio* to speak as they pleased from the pulpit, began themselves also, in many places, to disobey the Queen's proclamation. They were made immediately to feel their mistake and were brought to London to the Tower, the Marshalsea, or the Fleet, to the cells left vacant by their opponents. Among the rest came one who had borne no share in the late misdoings, but had long foreseen the fate to which those doings would bring him and many more. When Latimer was sent for, he was at Stamford. Six hours' notice was given him of his Sept. 4 intended arrest; and so obviously his escape was desired that the pursuivant who brought the warrant left him to obey it at his leisure; his orders, he said, were not to wait. But Latimer had business in England. While the fanatics who had provoked the catastrophe were slinking across the Channel from its consequences, Latimer determined to stay at home, and help to pay the debts which they had incurred. He went quietly to London, appeared before the council, where his 'demeanour' was what they were pleased to term 'seditious,'<sup>1</sup> and was committed to the Tower. 'What, my friend,' he said to a warder who was an old acquaintance there, 'how do you? I am come to be your neighbour again.'

hold stores: wheat, 200 quarters, malt, 500 quarters, oats, 60 quarters, wine, 5 or 6 tuns, fish and ling, 6 or 7 hundred, horses at Ca-wood, four or five score, harness

and artillery sufficient for 7 score men.—STREYER'S *Chron.*, vol. 1 p. 440

<sup>1</sup> *Privy Council Register, MS. Mary*

Sir Thomas Palmer's rooms in the garden were assigned for his lodging. In the winter he was left without a fire, and, growing infirm, he sent a message to the Lieutenant of the Tower to look better after him, or he should give him the slip yet.<sup>1</sup>

And there was another besides Latimer who would not fly when the chance was left open to him. Archbishop Cranmer had continued at Lambeth unmolested, yet unpardoned; his conduct with respect to the letters patent had been more upright than the conduct of any other member of the council by whom they had been signed; and on this ground, therefore, an exception could not easily be made in his disfavour. But his friends had interceded vainly to obtain the Queen's definite forgiveness for him; treason might be forgotten; the divorce of Catherine of Arragon could never be forgotten. So he waited on, watching the reaction gathering strength, and knowing well the point to which it tended. In the country the English service was set aside and the mass restored with but little disturbance. No force had been used or needed; the Catholic majorities among the parishioners had made the change for themselves. The Archbishop's friends came to him for advice; he recommended them to go abroad; he was urged to go himself while there was time; he said, 'it would be in no ways fitting for him to go away, considering the post in which he was; and to show that he was not afraid to own all the changes that were by his means made in religion in the last reign.'<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> FOXE.

<sup>2</sup> STYRPE'S *Cranmer*.

Neither was it fitting for him to sit by himself. The world, misconstruing his inaction, believed him more like Northumberland; the world reported that he had restored mass at Canterbury: the world professed to have ascertained that he had offered to sing a requiem at Edward's funeral. In the second week of September, therefore, he made a public offer, in the form of a letter to a friend, to defend the communion service, and all the alterations for which he was responsible, against any one who desired to impugn them; he answered the stories against himself with a calm denial, and, though the letter was not printed, copies in manuscript were circulated through London so numerous that the press, said Renard, would not have sent out more <sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS* In these late times, when men whose temper has not been tried by danger, feel themselves entitled, nevertheless, by their own innocence of large errors, to sit in judgment on the greatest of their forefathers, Cranmer has received no tender treatment. Because, in the near prospect of a death of agony, his heart for a moment failed him, the passing weakness has been accepted as the key to his life, and he has been railed at as a coward and a sycophant. Considering the position of the writer, and the circumstances under which it was issued, I regard the publication of this letter as one of the bravest actions ever deliberately ventured by man.

Let it be read, and speak for itself.

'As the devil Christ's most adversary is a liar and the father of lying, even so hath he stirred his servants and members to persecute Christ and his true word and religion, which he ceaseth not to do most earnestly at this present. For whereas the most noble prince, of famous memory King Henry VIII, seeing the great abuses of the Latin masses, reformed some things therein in his time, and also our late sovereign lord King Edward VI. took the same wholly away for the manifold errors and abuses thereof, and restored in the place thereof Christ's holy supper according to Christ's own institution and as the Apostles in the primitive Church used the same in the beginning, the devil goeth about by lying to overthrow the Lord's holy supper, and

The challenge was answered by an immediate summons before the council; the Archbishop was accused of attempting to excite sedition among the people, and was forthwith committed to the Tower to wait, with Ridley and Latimer, there, till his fate should be decided on. Meantime the eagerness with which the country generally availed itself of the permission to restore the Catholic ritual, proved beyond a doubt that, except in London and a few large towns, the popular feeling was with the Queen. The English people had no affection for the Papacy. They did not wish for the re-establishment of the religious orders, or the odious domination of the clergy. But the numerical majority

to restore the Latin satisfactory masses, a thing of his own invention and device. And to bring the same more clearly to pass, some have abused the name of me, Thomas, Archbishop of Canterbury, bruting abroad that I have set up the mass at Canterbury, and that I offered to say mass before the Queen's Highness at Paul's Cross and I wot not where I have been well exercised these twenty years, to suffer and to bear evil reports and lies, and have not been much grieved thereat, and have borne all things quietly, yet where untrue reports and lies turn to the hindrance of God's truth, they be in no ways to be tolerated and suffered. Wherefore these be to signify to the world that it was not I that did set up the mass at Canterbury, but a false, flattering, lying, and dissembling monk, which

caused the mass to be set up there without my advice and counsel and as for offering myself to say mass before the Queen's Highness, or in any other place, I never did, as her Grace knoweth well. But if her Grace will give me leave, I shall be ready to prove against all that will say the contrary, that the Communion-book, set forth by the most innocent and godly prince King Edward VI, in his High Court of Parliament, is conformable to the order which our Saviour Christ did both observe and command to be observed, which his Apostles and primitive Church used many years, whereas the mass in many things not only hath no foundation of Christ, his Apostles, nor the primitive Church, but also is contrary to the same, and containeth many horrible blasphemies.



among them did desire a celibate priesthood, the ceremonies which the customs of centuries had sanctified, and the ancient faith of their fathers, as reformed by Henry VIII. The rights of conscience had found no more consideration from the Protestant doctrinalists than from the most bigoted of the persecuting prelates; and the facility with which the professors of the gospel had yielded to moral temptations, had for the time inspired moderate men with much distrust for them and for their opinions.

Could Mary have been contented to pursue her victory no further, she would have preserved the hearts of her subjects: and the reaction, left to complete its own tendencies would in a few years perhaps, have accomplished in some measure her larger desires. But few sovereigns have understood less the effects of time and forbearance. She was deceived by the rapidity of her first success: she flattered herself that, difficult though it might be, she could build up again the ruined hierarchy, could compel the holders of Church property to open their hands, and could reunite the country to Rome. Before she had been three weeks on the throne, she had received, as will be presently mentioned, a secret messenger from the Vatican; and she had opened a correspondence with the Pope, entreating him, as an act of justice to herself and to those who had remained true to their Catholic allegiance, to remove the interdict.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. September 9. *Rolls House MSS.*

Other actors in the great drama which was approaching were already commencing their parts.

Reginald Pole having attempted in vain to recover a footing in England on the accession of Edward, having seen his passionate expectations from the Council of Trent melt into vapour, and Germany confirmed in heresy by the Peace of Passau, was engaged, in the summer of 1553, at a convent on the Lago di Garda, in re-editing his book against Henry VIII., with an intended dedication to Edward, of whose illness he was ignorant. The first edition, on the failure of his attempt to raise a Catholic crusade against his country, had been withdrawn from circulation; the world had not received it favourably, and there was a mystery about the publication which it is difficult to unravel. In the interval between the first despatch of the book into England as a private letter in the summer of 1536, and the appearance of it in print at Rome in the winter of 1538-9, it was re-written, as I have already stated, enlarged and divided into parts. In a letter of apology which Pole wrote to Charles V., in the summer or early autumn of 1538,<sup>1</sup> he spoke of that division as having been executed by himself;<sup>2</sup> he said that he had kept his book secret till the Church had spoken; but Paul having excommunicated Henry, he could no longer remain silent; he dwelt at length on the history of the work which he was then editing,<sup>3</sup> and he sent a copy at the same time

<sup>1</sup> Before his embassy to Spain.

<sup>2</sup> Opus in quatuor libros sum-  
partus.

<sup>3</sup> 'Scripta quæ nunc edo,' are  
his own words in the apology, and  
therefore, in an earlier part of this

with a letter, or he wrote a letter with the intention of sending a copy, to James V of Scotland.<sup>1</sup>

But Charles had refused to move; the book injured Henry not at all, and injured fatally those who were dear to Pole; he checked the circulation of the copies, and he declared to the Cardinal of Naples that it had been published only at the command of the Pope—that his own anxiety had been for the suppression of it.<sup>2</sup> Thirteen years after this, however, writing to Edward VI., he forgot that he had described himself to Charles as being himself engaged in the publication; and he assured the young King that he had never thought of publishing the book, that he had abhorred the very thought of publishing it; that it was prepared, edited, and printed by his friends at Rome during his own absence;<sup>3</sup> now, at length, he found himself obliged in his

work, I said that he published his book himself. There is no doubt, from the context, that in the word *scripta* he referred to that book and to no other.

<sup>1</sup> 'Eum ad te librum Catholice princeps nunc mitto, et sub nominis tui auspiciis cujus te strenuum pietatis ministrum præbes in lucem exire volo' — *Epistola ad Regem Scotiæ*. *POLI Epistolæ*, vol. i. p. 174.

<sup>2</sup> 'Qui si postea editus fuit magis id aliorum voluntate et illius qui mihi imperare potuit quam meâ est factum, mea vero fuit ut impressus supprimeretur.'—*Ibid* vol. iv p. 85

<sup>3</sup> 'Nam cum ad urbem ex His-

paniâ rediens libros in jussu meo typis excusos reperissem, *toto volumine amicorum studio et operâ non sine ejus auctoritate qui jus imperandi haberet in plures libros disposito quod ego non feceram* quippe qui de ejus editione nunquam cogitâsem,' &c

'Quid aliud hoc significavit nisi me ab his libris divulgandis penitus abhorruisse ut certe abhorru'—*Epistola ad Edwardum Sextum*: *POLI Epistolæ* The book being the sole authority for some of the darkest charges against Henry VIII., the history of it is of some importance. See vol. ii. of this history, appendix.

This was not the only instance

own person to give it forth, because an edition was in preparation elsewhere from one of the earlier copies; and he selected the son of Henry as the person to whom he could most becomingly dedicate the libel against his father's memory.

Edward did not live to receive this evidence of Pole's good feeling. He died before the edition was completed; and as soon as Northumberland's failure and Mary's accession were known at Rome, England was looked upon in the Consistory as already recovered to the faith, and Pole was chosen by the unanimous consent of the cardinals as the instrument of the reconciliation. The ac-

count of the proclamation of the Queen was  
August. brought to the Vatican on the 6th of August by a courier from Paris: the Pope in tears of joy drew his commission and despatched it on the instant to the Lago di Garda; and on the 9th Pole himself wrote to Mary to say that he had been named legate, and waited her orders to fly to England. He still clung to his con-

in which his recollection of his own conduct was something treacherous. In the apology to Charles V, speaking of a war against Henry, he had said: 'Tempus venisse video, ad te primum missus, deinde ad Regem Christianissimum, ut hujus scelera per se quidem minime obscura detegam, et te Cæsar a bello Turcico abducere coner et quantum possum suadeam ut arma tua ex convertas si huic tanto malo aliter mederi non possis' For thus 'levying war against his country,' Pole had been

attainted. The name of traitor grated upon him. To Edward, therefore, he wrote 'I invited the two sovereigns rather to win back the King, by the ways of love and affection, as a fallen friend and brother, than to assail him with arms as an enemy. This I never dreamed nor did I urge any such conduct upon them. *Hoc ego nunquam profecto volui neque cum illis egi*.'—Epistola ad Edwardum Sextum; Ibid.

viction that the revolution in all its parts had been the work of a small faction, and that he had but himself to set his foot upon the shore to be received with an ovation; his impulse was therefore to set out without delay; but the recollection, among other things, that he was attainted by Act of Parliament, forced him to delay unwillingly till he received formal permission to present himself.

Anxious for authentic information as to the state of England and the Queen's disposition, Julius had before despatched also a secret agent, Commendone, afterwards a cardinal, with instructions to make his way to London to communicate with Mary, and if possible to learn her intentions from her own lips. Rapid movement was possible in Europe even with the roads of the sixteenth century. Commendone was probably sent from Rome as soon as Edward was known to be dead; he was in London, at all events, on the 8th of August,<sup>1</sup> disguised as an Italian gentleman in search of property which he professed had been bequeathed him by a kinsman. By the favour of Providence,<sup>2</sup> he fell in with an acquaintance, a returned Catholic refugee, who had a place in the household; and from this man he learnt that the Queen was virtually a prisoner in the Tower, and that the heretics on the council allowed no one of whose business they disapproved to have access to her. Mary, however, was made acquainted with his arrival;

<sup>1</sup> He remained fifteen days, and he left for Rome the day after the execution of Northumberland — PALLAVICINO

<sup>2</sup> Celsum ductu.

a secret interview was managed, at which she promised to do her very best in the interests of the Church; but she had still, she said, to conquer her kingdom, and Pole's coming, much as she desired it, was for the moment out of the question; before she could draw the spiritual sword she must have the temporal sword more firmly in her grasp, and she looked to marriage as the best means of strengthening herself. If she married abroad, she thought at that time of the Emperor; if she accepted one of her subjects, she doubted—in her dislike of Courtenay—whether Pole might not return in a less odious capacity than that of Apostolic Legate; as the Queen's intended husband the country might receive him; he had not yet been ordained priest, and deacon's orders, on a sufficient occasion, could perhaps be dispensed with.<sup>1</sup> The visit, or visits, were concealed even from Renard. Commendone was forbidden, under the strictest injunctions, to reveal what the Queen might say to him, except to the Pope or to Pole, and it is the more likely that she was serious in her expressions about the latter, from the care with which she left Renard in ignorance of Commendone's presence.

The Papal messenger remained long enough to witness a rapid change in her position; he saw the restoration of the mass; he was in London at the execution, and he learnt the apostasy, of Northumberland;

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Nec destitit regina id ipsum Commendone indicare, eum percontata an existimaret Pontificem ad id legem Polo relaxaturum, cum is nondum sacerdos sed diaconus esset, extarentque hujusmodi relaxationum exempla ingentis alicujus emolumentum gratiâ.'—PALLAVICINO.

and he carried letters from Mary to the Pope with assurances of fidelity, and entreaties for the absolution of the kingdom. But Mary was obliged to say, notwithstanding, that for the present she was in the power of the people, of whom the majority mortally detested the Holy See; that the Lords of the Council were in possession of vast estates which had been alienated from the Church, and they feared their titles might be called in question;<sup>1</sup> and, although she agreed herself in all which Pole had urged (she had received his letter before Commendone left England), yet that, nevertheless, necessity acknowledged no law. Her heretical sister was in every one's mouth, and might at any moment take her place on the throne, and for the present, she said, to her deep regret, she could not, with prudence or safety, allow the legate to come to her.

The Queen's letters were confirmed by Commendone himself; he had been permitted to confer in private with more than one good Catholic in the realm; and every one had given him the same assurances,<sup>2</sup> although he had urged upon them the opposite opinion entertained by Pole:<sup>3</sup> he had himself witnessed the disposition with which the people regarded Elizabeth, and he was

<sup>1</sup> Mary described her throne as, 'acquistato per benevolenze di quei popoli, che per la maggior parte odiano a morte questa sancta seda, oltregl' interessi dei beneeclesiastici occupati da molti signori, che sono del suo consiglio'—Julius III. to Pole. *Poli Epistole*, vol. 1v.

<sup>2</sup> 'Le parole che haveva inteso da lei disse di haver inteso da persone Catholice et digne di fede in quel paese'—Julius III. to Pole: *Poli Epistole*, vol. 1v.

<sup>3</sup> 'Et similmente espose l'opinione vostra con le ragioni che vi movano.'—*Ibid.*

satisfied that the Queen's alarm on this head was not exaggerated.<sup>1</sup>

In opinions so emphatically given, the Pope was obliged to acquiesce, and the same view was enforced upon him equally strongly by the Emperor. Charles knew England tolerably well; he was acquainted perfectly well with the moral and intellectual unfitness of the intended legate for any office which required discretion; and Julius, therefore, was obliged to communicate to the eager Cardinal the necessity of delay, and to express his fear that, by excess of zeal, he might injure the cause and alienate the well-affected Queen.<sup>2</sup> Though Pole might not go to England, however, he might go, as he went before, to the immediate neighbourhood; he might repair to Flanders, with a nominal commission to mediate in the peace which was still hoped for. In Flanders, though the Pope forbore to tell him so, he would be under the Emperor's eyes and under the Emperor's control, till the vital question of the Queen's marriage had been disposed of, or till England was in a calmer humour.

About the marriage Charles was more September. anxious than ever; Pole was understood to have declined the honour of being a competitor;<sup>3</sup> Renard

<sup>1</sup> Julius III. to Pole. *Poli Epistole*, vol. iv.

<sup>2</sup> 'Onde se per questa molta diligenza nostra, le avvenisse qualche caso sinistro, si rovinarebbe forse (il che Dio non voglia) ogni speranza della reductione di quella patria, le-

vando se le forze a questa buona e Catholica regina, overo alienando la de noi per offesa, ricevuta.'—*Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> 'Ayant le Cardinal Pole si expressement declaré qu'il n'a nul désir de soy marier, et que nous



had informed the Emperor of the present direction of the Queen's own inclinations; and treating himself, therefore, as out of the question on the score of age and infirmities, he instructed his minister to propose the Prince of Spain as a person whom the religious and the political interests of the world alike recommended to her as a husband. The alliance of England, Spain, and Flanders would command a European supremacy; their united fleets would sweep the seas, and Scotland, deprived of support from France, must become an English province; while sufficient guarantees could be provided easily for the security of English liberties. These, in themselves, were powerful reasons; Renard was permitted to increase their cogency by promises of pensions, lands, and titles, or by hard money in hand, in whatever direction such liberality could be usefully employed.<sup>1</sup>

The external advantages of the connection were obvious; ~~it~~ recommended itself to the Queen from the Spanish sympathies which she had contracted in her blood, and from the assistance which it promised to afford her in the great pursuit of her life. The proposal was first suggested informally. Mary affected to find difficulties; yet, if she raised objections, it was only to prolong the conversation upon a subject which delighted her. She spoke of her age; Philip was twenty-seven, she ten-years older; she called him 'boy;' she

tenons, que pour avoir si longuement  
suivi l'état ecclésiastique, et s'ac-  
commodé aux choses duysant a icel-

luy et estant diacre'—Charles V. to  
Renard. *Granville Papers*, vol. iv.  
<sup>1</sup> Ibid.

feared she might not be enough for him; she was unsusceptible; she had no experience in love;<sup>1</sup> with such other phrases, which Renard interpreted at their true importance. With the Queen there would be no difficulty; with the council it was far otherwise. Lord Paget was the only English statesman who listened with any show of favour.

The complication of parties is not to be easily disentangled. Some attempt, however, may be partially successful.

The council, the peers, the commons, the entire lay voices of England, liberal and conservative alike, were opposed to Rome; Gardiner was the only statesman in the country who thought a return to Catholic union practicable or desirable; while there was scarcely an influential family, titled or untitled, which was not, by grant or purchase, in possession of confiscated Church property.

There was an equal unanimity in the dread that if Mary became the wife of a Spanish sovereign England would, like the Low Countries, sink into a provincial dependency; while, also, there was the utmost unwillingness to be again entangled in the European war. The French ambassador insisted that the Emperor only desired the marriage to secure English assistance; and the council believed that, whatever promises might be made, whatever stipulations insisted on, such a mar-

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Elle jura que jamais elle n'avait senti esquillon de ce que l'on appelle amour, ny entre en pense- ment de volupté, &c —Renard to the Bishop of Arras. *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv.

riage, sooner or later, would implicate them. The country was exhausted, the currency ruined, the people in a state of unexampled suffering, and the only remedy was to be looked for in quiet and public economy. There were attractions in the offer of a powerful alliance, but the very greatness of it added to their reluctance; they desired to isolate England from European quarrels, and marry their Queen at home. With these opinions Paget alone disagreed, while Gardiner was loudly national.

On the other hand, though Gardiner held the restoration of the Papal authority to be tolerable, yet he dreaded the return of Pole, as being likely to supersede him in the direction of the English Church.<sup>1</sup> The party who agreed with the Chancellor about the marriage, and about Pole, disagreed with him about the Pope; while Paget, who was in favour of the marriage, was with the lords on the supremacy, and, as the Romanizing views of the Queen became notorious, was inclining, with Arundel and Pembroke, towards the Protestants.

No wonder, therefore, that the whole council were in confusion and at cross purposes. No sooner were Charles's proposals definitely known than the entire machinery of the Government was dislocated. Mary represented herself to Renard as without a friend whom she could trust; and the letters, both of Renard and Noailles, contain little else but reports how the Lords were either quarrelling, or had, one after the other,

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. : *Rolls House MSS*

withdrawn in disgust to their country houses. Now it was Pembroke that was gone, now Mason, now Paget; then Courtenay was a prisoner in his house; then Lord Winchester was forbidden to appear at Court: the ministers were in distrust of each other and of their mistress; the Queen was condemned to keep them in their offices because she durst not make them enemies; while the Stanleys, Howards, Talbots, and Nevilles were glooming apart, indignant at the neglect of their own claims.

The Queen herself was alternately angry and miserable; by the middle of September Renard congratulated Charles on her growing ill-humour; the five Dudleys and Lady Jane, he hoped, would be now disposed of, and Elizabeth would soon follow.

Elizabeth's danger was great, and proceeded as much from her friends' indiscretion as from the hatred of her enemies. Every one who disliked the Queen's measures, used Elizabeth's name. Renard was for ever hissing his suspicions in the Queen's ear, and, unfortunately, she was a too willing listener—not, indeed, that Renard hated Elizabeth for her own sake, for he rather admired her—or for religion's sake, for he had a most statesmanlike indifference to religion; but he saw in her the Queen's successful rival in the favour of the people, the heir-presumptive to the crown, whose influence would increase the further the Queen travelled on the road on which he was leading her, and, therefore, an enemy who, if possible, should be destroyed. An opportunity of creating a collision between the sisters was not long

wanting. The Lords of the Council were now generally present at Mass in the royal chapel. Elizabeth, with Anne of Cleves, had as yet refused to appear. Her resistance was held to imply a sinister intention; and on the 2nd and 3rd of September the council were instructed to bring her to compliance.<sup>1</sup> Yet the days passed, the priest sang, and the heir to the crown continued absent. Gardiner, indeed, told Renard that she was not obdurate; he had spoken to her, and she had seemed to say that, if he could convince her, her objections would cease; but they had not ceased so far; she did not attend. In the happiness of her first triumph Mary had treated Elizabeth like a sister, but her manner had relapsed into coldness; and the princess, at length, knowing how her name was made use of, requested a private interview, which, with difficulty, was granted. The sisters, each accompanied by a single lady, met in a gallery with a half-door between them. Elizabeth threw herself on her knees. She said that she perceived her Majesty was displeased with her; she could not tell what the cause might be, unless it was religion; and for this, she said, she might be reasonably forgiven; she had been educated, as the Queen was aware, in the modern belief, and she understood no other; if her Majesty would send her books and teachers, she would read, she would listen, she could say no more.

Mary, at the moment, was delighted. Like a true Catholic, however, she insisted that obedience must pre-

---

<sup>1</sup> Noailles to the King of France. *Ambassades*, vol. ii p. 147

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS.*

cede faith; come to the mass, she said, and belief will be the reward of your submission; make your first trial on the mass of the Nativity of the Blessed Virgin.<sup>1</sup>

Elizabeth consented. She was present, but present reluctantly; pretending, as Renard said, to be ill. The next Sunday she was again absent. The Queen, knowing the effect which her conduct would produce, again sent for her, and asked her earnestly what she really believed; the world said that, although she had complied once, her compliance was feigned, and that she had submitted out of fear; she desired to hear the truth. Elizabeth could reply merely that she had done as the Queen had required her to do, with no ulterior purpose; if her Majesty wished, she would make a public declaration to that effect.<sup>2</sup> The Queen was obliged to receive her answer; but she told Renard that her sister trembled as she spoke, and well, Renard said, he understood her agitation; she was the hope of the heretics, and the heretics were raising their heads; the Papists, they said, had had their day, but it was waning; if Elizabeth lived, England would again apostatize.

There was no difficulty in keeping the Queen's jealousy alive against her sister. Courtenay was another offence in the eye of the ambassador, as the rival to Philip, who found favour with the English council. The Queen affected to treat Courtenay as a child; she commanded him to keep to his house; she forbade him to dine abroad without special permission; the title of

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V., September 23 *Ibid.*

Earl of Devon was given to him, and he had a dress made for him to take his seat in, of velvet and gold, but the Queen would not allow him to wear it:<sup>1</sup> and yet, to her own and the ambassador's mortification, she learnt that he affected the state of a prince; that he spoke of his marriage with her as certain; that certain prelates, Gardiner especially, encouraged his expectation, and one or more of them had knelt in his presence.<sup>2</sup> The danger had been felt from the first that, if she persisted in her fancy for the Prince of Spain, Courtenay might turn his addresses to Elizabeth; the Lords would in that case fall off to his support, and the crown would fall from her head as easily as it had settled there.

More afflicting to Mary than these personal grievances, was the pertinacity with which the council continued, in their public documents, to describe her as Head of the Church, the execrable title which was the central root of the apostasy. In vain she protested; the hateful form—indispensable till it was taken away by Parliament—was thrust under her eyes in every paper which was brought to her for signature, and she was obliged to acknowledge the designation with her own hand and pen.

Amidst these anxieties, September wore away. Parliament was to open on the fifth of October, and either before or after the meeting the Queen was to be crowned. The ceremony was an occasion of considerable agitation; Mary herself was alarmed lest the Holy

---

<sup>1</sup> NOAILLES.

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V., September 19; *Rolls H. 402 MSS.*

Oil should have lost its efficacy through the interdict; and she entreated Renard to procure her a fresh supply from Flanders, blessed by the excellent hands of the Bishop of Arras. But the oil was not the gravest difficulty. As the rumour spread of the intended Spanish marriage, libellous handbills were scattered about London; the people said it should not be till they had fought for it. A disturbance at Greenwich, on the 25th of September, extended to Southwark, where Gardiner's house was attacked,<sup>1</sup> and a plot was discovered to murder him: in the day he wore a shirt of mail under his robes, and he slept with a guard of a hundred men. Threatening notices were even found on the floor of the Queen's bed-room, left there by unknown hands. Noailles assured the Lords that his own Government would regard the marriage as little short of a declaration of war, so inevitably would war be the result of it; and Gardiner, who was unjustly suspected of being in the Spanish interest, desired to delay the coronation till Parliament should have met; intending that the first act of the assembly should be to tie Mary's hands with a memorial which she could not set aside. She inherited under her father's will, by which her accession was made conditional on her marrying not without the consent of the council; Parliament might remind her both of her own obligation to obey her father's injunctions, and of theirs to see that those injunctions were obeyed.

---

<sup>1</sup> NOAILLES, RENARD



With the same object, though not with the same object only,<sup>1</sup> the Lords of the Council supported the Bishop of Winchester. They proposed to alter the form of the coronation oath, and to bind the Queen by an especial clause to maintain the independence of the English Church—a precaution, as it proved, not unnecessary, for the existing form was already inconvenient, and Mary was meditating how, when called on to swear to observe the laws and constitutions of the realm, she could introduce an adjective *sub silentio*; she intended to swear only that she would observe the *just* laws and constitutions.<sup>1</sup> But she looked with the gravest alarm to the introduction of more awkward phrases; if words were added which would be equivalent (as she would understand them) to a denial of Christ and his Church, she had resolved to refuse at all hazards.<sup>2</sup>

But her courage was not put to the test. The true grounds on which the delay of the coronation was desired could not be avowed. The Queen was told that her passage through the streets would be unsafe until her accession had been sanctioned by Parliament, and the Act repealed by which she was illegitimized. With Paget's help she faced down these objections, and declared that she would be crowned at once; she appointed the 1st of October for the ceremony; Sept. 28. on the 28th she sent, for the council to attempt an appeal to their generosity. She spoke to them at length of her past life and sufferings, of the con-

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V : *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> *Ib.*d.

spiracy to set her aside, and of the wonderful Providence which had preserved her and raised her to the throne; her only desire, she said, was to do her duty to God and to her subjects; and she hoped, turning as she spoke pointedly to Gardiner, that they would not forget their loyalty, and would stand by her in her extreme necessity. Observing them hesitate, she cried, 'My Lords, on my knees I implore you'—and flung herself on the ground at their feet.<sup>1</sup>

The most skilful acting could not have served Mary's purpose better than this outburst of natural emotion; the spectacle of their kneeling sovereign overcame for a time the scheming passions of her ministers; they were affected, burst into tears, and withdrew their opposition to her wishes.<sup>2</sup>

On the 30th, the procession from the Tower to Westminster through the streets was safely accomplished. The retinues of the Lords protected the Queen from insult, and London put on its usual outward signs of rejoicing; St Paul's spire was rigged with yards like a ship's mast, an adventurous sailor sitting astride on the weathercock five hundred feet in the air:<sup>3</sup> there was

<sup>1</sup> 'Devant les quelz elle se mist à genoux'—Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid*

<sup>3</sup> The Hot Gospeller, half-recovered from his gaol fever, got out of bed to see the spectacle and took his station at the west end of St Paul's. The procession passed so close as almost to touch him, and

one of the train seeing him muffled up, and looking more dead than alive, said, There is one that loveth her Majesty well, to come out in such condition. The Queen turned her head and looked at him. To hear that any one of her subjects loved her just then was too welcome to be overlooked.—Underhill's Narrative *MS. Harleian*, 425.

no interruption; and the next day, Arras having sent the necessary unction,<sup>1</sup> the cere-<sup>October 1</sup>mony was performed at the Abbey without fresh burdens being laid on Mary's conscience.

The banquet in the Great Hall passed off with equal success; Sir Edward Dymocke, the champion, rode in and flung down his gage, and was listened to with becoming silence: on the whole, Mary's friends were agreeably disappointed; only Renard observed that, between the French ambassador and the Lady Elizabeth there seemed to be some secret understanding; the princess saluted Noailles as he passed her; Renard she would neither address nor look at—and Renard was told that she complained to Noailles of the weight of her coronet, and that Noailles 'bade her have patience, and before long she would exchange it for a crown.'<sup>2</sup>

The coronation was a step gained; it was one more victory, yet it produced no material alteration. Rome, and the Spanish marriage, remained as before, insoluble elements of difficulty; the Queen, to her misfortune, was driven to rely more and more on Renard; and at this time she was so desperate and so ill-advised as to think of surrounding herself with an Irish body-guard; she went so far as to send a commission to Sir George Stanley for their transport.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Arras to Regard. *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv. p. 105.

<sup>2</sup> Renard to the Regent Mary. *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>3</sup> 'Mary, by the grace of God, Queen of England, &c. to all mayors, sheriffs, justices of the peace, and other our subjects, these our letters, hearing or seeing. whereas we have appointed a certain number of able men to be presently to be used for our service within our

The scheme was abandoned, but not because her relations with her own people were improved. Before Parliament met, an anonymous pamphlet appeared by some English nobleman on the encroachments of the House of Austria, and on the treatment of other countries which had fallen through marriages into Austrian hands. In Lombardy and Naples every office of trust was described as held by a Spaniard; the Prince of Salerno was banished, the Prince of Benevento was a prisoner in Flanders, the Duke of Calabria a prisoner in Spain. Treating Mary's hopes of children as ridiculous, the writer pictured England, bound hand and foot, at the mercy of the insolent Philip, whose first step, on entering the country, would be to seize the Tower and the fleet, the next, to introduce a Spanish army and suppress the Parliament. The free glorious England of the Plantagenets would then be converted into a prostrate appanage of the dominions of Don Carlos. The pamphlet was but the expression of the universal feeling. Gardiner, indeed, perplexed between his religion and his country, for a few days wavered. Gardiner had a long debt to pay off against the Protestants, and a Spanish force, divided into garrisons for London and other towns, would assist him materially.<sup>1</sup> Partly,

realm of Ireland, and to be transported hither with diligence, we let you wit that for that purpose we have authorized our trusty Sir George Stanley, Knight,' &c —October 5, 1553 From the original Commission. *Tanner MSS.* 90, Bodleian Library.

<sup>1</sup> 'J'estime qu'il desire presentement y veoir une bonne partie de l'Espagne et Allemagne, y tenir grosses et fortes garnisons, pour mortifier ce peuple, et s'en venger,' &c —Noailles to the King of France: *Ambassades*, vol. ii. p. 169.

however, from attachment to Courtenay, partly from loyalty to his country, he shook off the temptation and continued to support the opposition.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> A look at Gardiner, at this time, through contemporary eyes, assists much towards the understanding him. Thomas Mountain, parson of St Michael's by the Tower, an ultra-Reformer, had been out with Northumberland at Cambridge. The following story is related by himself.

'Sunday, October 8,' Mountain says, 'I ministered service, according to the godly order set forth by that blessed prince King Edward, the parish communicating at the Holy Supper. Now, while I was even a breaking of bread at the table, saying to the communicants, Take and eat this, Drink this, there were standing by several serving-men, to see and hear, belonging to the Bishop of Winchester; among whom one of them most shamefully blasphemed God, saying:

'Yea, by God's blood, standest thou there yet, saying—Take and eat, Take and drink, will not this gear be left yet? You shall be made to sing another song within these few days, I trow, or else I have lost my mark.'

A day or two after came an order for Mountain to appear before Gardiner at Winchester. 'House Mountain said he would appear after morning prayers, but the messenger's orders were not to leave him, and he was obliged to obey on the instant.

The Bishop was standing when he entered, 'in a bay window with a great company about him; among them Sir Anthony St Leger, re-appointed Lord Deputy of Ireland.'

'Thou heretic,' the Bishop began; 'how darest thou be so bold as to use that schismatical service still, seeing God hath sent us a Catholic Queen. There is such an abominable company of you, as is able to poison a whole realm with heresies.'

'My lord,' Mountain replied, 'I am no heretic, for in that way you count heresy, so worship we the living God.'

'God's passion,' said the Bishop 'did I not tell you, my Lord Deputy, how you should know a heretic. He is up with his living God as though there was a dead God. They have nothing in their mouths, these heretics, but the Lord liveth; the living God, the Lord! the Lord! and nothing but the Lord.'

'Here,' says Mountain, 'he chafed like a bishop; and as his manner was, many times he put off his cap, and rubbed to and fro up and down the forepart of his head, where a lock of hair was always standing up.'

'My good Lord Chancellor,' St Leger said to him, 'trouble not yourself with this heretic, I think all the world is full of them, God bless me from them. But, as your

Mary, except for the cautious support of Paget, stood otherwise alone coquetting with her fancy, and played upon by the skilful Renard. The Queen and the ambassador were incessantly together, and Philip was the never-tiring subject of conversation between them. She talked of his disposition. She had heard, she said, that he was proud; that he was inferior to his father in point of ability; and then he was young, and she had been told sad stories about him; if he was of warm temperament, he would not suit her at all, she said, considering the age at which she had arrived.<sup>1</sup> Moreover, when she was married, she must obey as God commanded; her husband, perhaps, might wish to place

---

Lordship said, having a Christian Queen reigning over us, I trust there will shortly be a reformation and an order taken with these heretics.' 'Submit yourself unto my lord,' he said to Mountain, 'and you shall find favour.'

'Thank you, sir,' Mountain answered, 'ply your own suit, and let me alone.'

A bystander then put in that the parson of St Michael's was a traitor as well as a heretic. He had been in the field with the Duke against the Queen.

'Is it even so?' cried Gardiner, 'these be always linked together, treason and heresy. Off with him to the Marshalsea, this is one of our new broached brethren that speaketh against good works; your fraternity was, is, and ever will be unprofitable in all ages, and good

for nothing but the fire'—Troubles of Thomas Mountain: printed by STYPE.

The portraits of Gardiner represent a fine, vehement-looking man. The following description of him, by Ponet, his rival in the See of Winchester, gives the image as it was reflected in Ponet's antipathies.

'The doctor hath a swart colour, hanging look, frowning brows, eyes an inch within his head, a nose, hooked like a buzzard's, nostrils like a horse, ever snuffing in the wind; a sparrow mouth, great paws like the devil, talons on his feet like a gripe, two inches longer than the natural toes, and so tied with sinews that he cannot abide to be touched.'

<sup>1</sup> 'Que s'il vouloit estre voluptueux ce n'est ce quelle desire pour estre de telle eage'—Renard to the Emperor. *Rolls House MSS.*

Spaniards in authority in England, and she would have to refuse; and that he would not like. To all of which, being the fluttering of the caught fly, Renard would answer that his Highness was more like an angel than a man; his youth was in his favour, for he might live to see his child of age, and England had had too much experience of minorities. Life, he added remarkably, was shorter than it used to be; sixty was now a great age for a king; and as the world was, men were as mature at thirty as in the days of his grandfather they were considered at forty.<sup>1</sup> Then touching the constant sore—'her Majesty,' he said, 'had four enemies, who would never rest till they had destroyed her or were themselves destroyed—the heretics, the friends of the late Duke of Northumberland, the Courts of France and Scotland, and, lastly, her sister Elizabeth. Her subjects were restless, turbulent, and changeable as the ocean of which they were so fond;<sup>2</sup> the sovereigns of England had been only able to rule with a hand of iron, and with severities which had earned them the name of tyrants;<sup>3</sup> they had not spared the blood royal in order to secure their thrones, and she too must act as they had

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to the Emperor: *Rolls House MSS* *pers.*, vol. iv p 129.

<sup>2</sup> 'Vostre Majesté seit les humeurs des Angloys et leur voluntez estre forte discordantes, désireux de nouveleté, de mutatiō, et vindictifz, soit pour estre insulaires, ou pour tenir ce naturel de la marine'—Renard to Mary *Gramelle Pa-*

<sup>3</sup> 'Les roys du passé on esté forcés de traicter en rigueur de justice et effusion de sang par l'exécution de plusieurs du royaume, voir du sang royal, pour s'asseurer et maintenir leur royaume, dont ils ont acquis le renom de tyrans et cruels.'—*Ibid.*

acted, leaning for support, meanwhile, on the arm of a powerful prince.

To these dark hints Mary ever listened eagerly. Meantime she was harassed painfully from another quarter.

Reginald Pole, as might have been expected from his temperament, could ill endure the delay of his return to England. The hesitation of the Queen and the objections of the Emperor were grounded upon arguments which he assured himself were fallacious; the English nation, he continued to insist, was devoted to the Holy See; so far from being himself unpopular, the *Cornish* in the rebellion under Edward had petitioned for his recall, and had even designated him by the forbidden name of Cardinal; they loved him and they longed for him; and, regarding himself as the chosen instrument of Providence to repair the iniquities of Henry VIII., he held the obstructions to his return not only to be mistaken, but to be impious. The duty of the returning prodigal was to submit; to lay aside all earthly considerations—to obey God, God's vicegerent the Pope, and himself the Pope's representative.

Mendoza had been sent by Charles to meet Pole on his way to Flanders, and reason him into moderation. In return the legate wrote himself to Charles's confessor, commanding him to explain to his master the sin which he was committing. 'The objection to his going to England,' as Pole understood, 'was the supposed danger of an outbreak. Were the truth as the Emperor feared, the Queen's first duty would be, nevertheless, to God,



her own soul, and the souls of the millions of her subjects who were perishing in separation from the Church; for no worldly policy or carnal respect ought she to defer for a moment to apply a remedy to so monstrous a calamity.<sup>1</sup> But the danger was imaginary—or, rather, such danger as there was, arose from the opposite cause. The right of the Queen to the throne did not rest on an Act of Parliament; it rested on her birth as the lawful child of the lawful marriage between Henry and Catherine of Arragon. Parliament, he was informed, would affirm the marriage legitimate, if nothing was said about the Pope; but, unless the Pope's authority was first recognized, Parliament would only stultify itself; the Papal dispensation alone made valid a connection which, if the Pope had no power to dispense, was incestuous, and the offspring of it illegitimate. God had made the peaceful settlement of the kingdom dependent on submission to the Holy See,<sup>2</sup> and for Parliament to interfere and give an opinion upon the subject would be but a fresh act of schism and disobedience.

The original letter, being in our own State Paper

<sup>1</sup> 'Quanto grave peccato et irreparabil danno sia il differir cosa che pertenga alle salute di tante anime, le quale mentre quel regno sta disunito dalla Chiesa, si trovano in manifesto pericolo della loro damnatione.'—Pole to the Emperor's Confessor. *MS Germany*, bundle 16, State Paper Office.

<sup>2</sup> God, he said, had joined the title to the Crown, 'con l'obedientia

della Sede Apostolica, che levata questa viene a cader in tutto, quella non essendo ella legitime herede del regno, se non per la legitimation del matrimonio della regina sua madre, et questa non valendo senon per l'autorita et dispensa del Papa'—Pole to the Emperor's Confessor. *MS Germany*, bundle 16, State Paper Office.

Office, was probably given by the confessor to Charles, and by Charles sent over to England. Most logical it was ; so logical that it quite outwitted the intention of the writer. While it added to the Queen's distress, it removed, nevertheless, all objections which might have been raised by the anti-papal party against the Act to legitimize her. So long as there was a fear that, by a repeal of the Act of Divorce between her father and mother, the Pope's authority might indirectly be admitted, some difficulty was to be anticipated ; as a new assertion of English independence, it could be carried with unanimous alacrity.

What Parliament would or would not consent to, however, would soon cease to be a mystery. The advice of the Emperor on the elections had been, for the most part, followed. It was obvious, indeed, that a sovereign who was unable to control her council was in no position to dictate to constituencies. There were no circulars to the lords-lieutenants of counties, such as Northumberland had issued, or such as Mary herself, a year later, was able to issue ; while the unusual number of members returned to the Lower House—four hundred and thirty, it will be seen, voted on one great occasion—shows that the issue of writs had been on the widest scale. On the whole, it was, perhaps, the fairest election which had taken place for many years. In the House of Lords the ejection of the Reforming bishops, and the restoration of their opponents—the death, imprisonment, or disgrace of three noblemen on the Reforming side, and the return to public life of the peers who, in the late

reign, had habitually absented themselves, had restored a conservative majority. How the representatives of the people would conduct themselves was the anxious and all-agitating question. The Queen, however, could console herself with knowing that Protestantism, as a system of belief, had made its way chiefly among the young; the votes were with the middle-aged and the old.

The session opened on the 5th of October with the ancient form, so long omitted, of the mass of the Holy Ghost. <sup>October 5.</sup> Two Protestant bishops, Taylor of Lincoln and Harley of Hereford, who had been left as yet undisturbed in their sees, on the service commencing, rose and went out; they were not allowed to return. Two prebendaries, Alexander Nowel and Doctor Tregonwell, had been returned to the Lower House; Nowel as a member of Convocation was declared ineligible;<sup>1</sup> Tregonwell being a layman was on consideration allowed to retain his seat. These were the only ejections which can be specifically traced, and the silence of those who were interested in making the worst of Mary's conduct, may be taken to prove that they did not know of any more.<sup>2</sup> The Houses purged

<sup>1</sup> 'Friday, October 13, it was declared by the commissioners that Alex. Nowel, being prebendary in Westminster, and thereby having a voice in the Convocation House, cannot be a member of this House, and so agreed by the House'—*Commons Journal*, 1 Mary

<sup>2</sup> Burnet and other Protestant writers are loud-voiced with eloquent

generalities on the interference with the elections, and the ill-treatment of the Reforming members; but of interference with the elections they can produce no evidence, and of members ejected they name no more than the two bishops and the two prebends. Noailles, indeed, who had opportunities of hearing Mary's something on both points. 'No fault

of these elements then settled to their work; and plunging at once into the great question of the time, the Commons came to an instant understanding that the lay owners of Church lands should not be disturbed in their tenures under any pretext whatsoever.

Commendone on returning to Rome, had disregarded his obligations to secrecy, and had related all that the Queen had said to him in the open Consistory; from the Consistory the account travelled back to England, and arrived inopportunately at the opening of Parliament. The fatal subject of the lands had been spoken of, and the Queen had expressed to Commendone her intention to restore them, if possible, to the Church. The council cross-questioned her, and she could neither deny her words nor explain them away, the Commons first, the Lords immediately after, showed her that whatever might be her own hopes or wishes, their minds on that point were irrevocably fixed.<sup>1</sup>

No less distinct were the opinions expressed in the Lower House on the Papacy. The authority of the Pope, as understood in England, was not a question of doctrine, nor was the opposition to it of recent origin. It had been thrown off after a struggle which had

---

douter, sire' he wrote to the King 'she could' but the influence which of France, 'que la dicte dame she could exercise must obviously n'obtienne presque tout ce qu'elle' have been extremely small, and the voilira en ce parlement de tant overt showed that the ambassador qu'elle a tact faire question de ceux' was entirely wrong in his expectation qui pourrout estre en sa faveur, et tiens  
 jeter quelques uns à elle suspectz' <sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V., October  
 The Queen had probably done what; 19 *Rolls House MSS.*

lasted for centuries, and a victory<sup>1</sup> so hardly won was not to be lightly parted with. Lord Paget warned the Queen that Pole's name must not be so much as mentioned, or some unwelcome resolution about him would be immediately passed;<sup>2</sup> and she was in hourly dread that before they would consent to anything, they would question her whether she would or would not maintain the royal supremacy.<sup>3</sup> On the other hand, if no difficulties were raised about the Pope or the Church lands, the preliminary discussion, both among Lords and Commons, showed a general disposition to re-establish religion in the condition in which Henry left it—provided, that is to say, no penalties were to attach to non-conformity; and the Houses were ready also to take the step so much deprecated by Pole, and pass a measure legitimatizing the Queen, provided no mention was to be made of the Papal dispensation. Some difference of opinion on the last point had shown itself in the House of Commons,<sup>4</sup> but the legate's ingenuity had removed all serious obstacles

<sup>1</sup> Even the most reactionary clergy, men like Abbot Feckenham and Doctor Bourne, had no desire, as yet, to be re-united to Rome. In a discussion with Ridley in the Tower, on the real presence, Feckenham argued that 'forty years before all the world was agreed about it. Forty years ago, said Ridley, all held that the Bishop of Rome was supreme head of the Universal Church. What then' was Master Feckenham beginning to say, but Master Secretary

(Bourne) took the tale, and said that was a positive law. A positive law, quoth Ridley, he would not have it so, he challenged it by Christ's own word, by the words, 'Thou art Peter; thou art Cephas' Tush, quoth Master Secretary. it was not counted an article of our faith'—Foxe, vol. vi.

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V, October 28. *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. October 15. *Ro's House MSS*.

<sup>4</sup> Ibid.

Again Parliament seemed determined that the Act of Succession, and the will of Henry VIII., should not be tampered with, to the disfavour of Elizabeth. It is singular that Renard and probably therefore Mary, were unaware of the position in which Elizabeth was placed towards the crown. They imagined that her only title was as a presumptively legitimate child; that if the Act of Divorce between Catherine of Arragon and Henry was repealed, she must then, as a bastard, be cut off from her expectations. Had Elizabeth's prospects been liable to be affected by the legitimization of her sister, the Queen would have sued as vainly for it as she sued afterwards in favour of her husband. With unmixed mortification Renard learnt that Elizabeth, in the eye of the law, had been as illegitimate as Mary, and that her place in the order of succession rested on her father's will. He flattered himself, at first, that Henry's dispositions could be set aside;<sup>1</sup> but he very soon found that there was no present hope of it. -

These general features of the temper of Parliament were elicited in conversation in the first few days of the session. The Marchioness of Exeter, during the same days, was released from her attainder, Courtenay was restored in blood, while a law, similar to that with which Somerset commenced his Protectorate, repealed all late treason Acts, restricted the definition of treason within the limits of the statute of Edward III., and relieved the clergy of the recent extensions of the Premunire.

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. October 21 *Rolls House MSS.*

The Queen gave her assent to these three measures on the 21st of October; and there was then an interval of three days, during which the bishops were consulted on the view taken by Parliament of the Queen's legitimacy. Renard told the Bishop of Norwich, Thirlby, that they must bend to the times, and leave the Pope to his fortunes. They acted on the ambassador's advice. An Act was passed, in which the marriage from which the Queen was sprung, was declared valid, and the Pope's name was not mentioned; but the essential point being secured, the framers of the statute were willing to gratify their mistress by the intensity of the bitterness with which the history of the divorce was related.<sup>1</sup> The bishops must have been glad to escape from so mortifying a subject, and to apply themselves to the more congenial subject of religion.

As soon as the disposition of Parliament had been generally ascertained, the restoration of the mass was first formally submitted, for the sake of decency, to the clergy of Convocation.

The bench had been purged of dangerous elements. The Lower House contained a small fraction of Protestants just large enough to permit a controversy, and to ensure a triumph to their antagonists. The proceedings opened with a sermon from Harpsfeld, then chaplain of the Bishop of London, in which, in a series of ascending antitheses, Northumberland was described as *Holofernes*, and Mary as *Judith*; Northumberland was

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 Mary, cap. 1.

Haman, and Mary was Esther; Northumberland was Sisera, and Mary was Deborah. Mary was the sister who had chosen the better part: religion ceased and slept until Mary arose a virgin in Israel, and with the mother of God Mary might sing, 'Behold, from henceforth all generations shall call me blessed.' The trumpet having thus sounded, the lists were drawn for the combat; the bishops sat in their robes, the clergy stood bareheaded, and the champions appeared. Hugh Weston, Dean of Windsor, Dean of Westminster afterwards, Dr Watson, Dr Moreman, and the preacher Harpsfeld undertook to defend the real presence against Phillips Dean of Rochester, Philpot, Cheney, Aylmer, and Young.

The engagement lasted for a week. The reforming theologians fought for their dangerous cause bravely and temperately; and Weston, who was at once advocate and prolocutor, threw down his truncheon at last, and told Philpot that he was meeter for Bethlehem than for a company of grave and learned men, and that he should come no more into their house.<sup>1</sup> The orthodox thus ruled themselves the victors: but beyond the doors of the Convocation House they did not benefit their cause. The dispute, according to Renard, resolved itself, in the opinion of the laity, into scandalous railing and recrimination,<sup>2</sup> the people were indignant; and the Houses of Parliament, disgusted and dissatisfied, resumed the dis-

<sup>1</sup> Report of the Disputation in the Convocation House.—FOXE, vol. v. p. 395.

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V., October 28 *Rolls House MSS.*



cussion among themselves, as more competent to conduct it with decency. In eight days the various changes introduced by Edward VI. were argued in the House of Commons, and points were treated of there, said Renard, which a general council could scarcely resolve. At length, by a majority, which exceeded Gardiner's most sanguine hopes, of 350 against 80, the mass was restored, and the clergy were required to return to celibacy.<sup>1</sup>

The precipitation with which Somerset, Cranmer, and Northumberland had attempted to carry out the Reformation, was thus followed by a natural recoil. Protestant theology had erected itself into a system of intolerant dogmatism, and had crowded the gaols with prisoners who were guilty of no crime but Nonconformity; it had now to reap the fruits of its injustice, and was superseded till its teachers had grown wiser. The first Parliament of Mary was indeed more Protestant, in the best sense of that word, than the statesmen and divines of Edward. While the House of Commons re-established the Catholic services, they decided, after long consideration, that no punishment should be inflicted on those who declined to attend those services.<sup>2</sup> There was to be no Pope, no persecution, no restoration of the abbey lands,—resolutions, all of them disagreeable to a reactionary Court. On the Spanish marriage both Lords and Commons were equally impracticable. The Catholic noblemen—the Earls of Derby, Shrewsbury, Bath, and Sussex were in the interest of Courtenay

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, November 8. *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* December 8

The chancellor had become attached to him in the Tower when they were fellow-prisoners there; and Sir Robert Rochester, Sir Francis Englefield, Sir Edward Waldegrave, the Queen's tried and faithful officers of the household, went with the chancellor. Never, on any subject, was there greater unanimity in England than in the disapproval of Philip as a husband for the Queen, and, on the 29th of October, the Lower House had a petition in preparation to entreat her to choose from among her subjects.

To Courtenay, indeed, Mary might legitimately object. Since his emancipation from the Tower he had wandered into folly and debauchery; he was vain and inexperienced, and his insolence was kept in check only by the quality so rare in an Englishman of personal timidity. But to refuse Courtenay was one thing, to fasten her choice on the heir of a foreign kingdom was another. Paget insisted, indeed, that, as the Queen of Scots was contracted to the Dauphin, unless England could strengthen herself with a connection of corresponding strength, the union of the French and Scottish Crowns was a menace to her liberties.<sup>1</sup> But the argument, though important in itself, was powerless against the universal dread of the introduction of a foreign sovereign, and it availed only to provide Mary with an answer to the protests and entreaties of her other ministers.

Perhaps, too, it confirmed her in her obstinacy, and

---

<sup>1</sup> RENARD.

allowed her to persuade herself that, in following her own inclination, she was consulting the interests of her subjects. Obstinate, at any rate, she was beyond all reach of persuasion. Once only she wavered, after her resolution was first taken. Some one had told her that, if she married Philip, she would find herself the step-mother of a large family of children who had come into the world irregularly. A moral objection she was always willing to recognize. She sent for Renard, and conjured him to tell her whether the prince was really the good man which he had described him; Renard assured her that he was the very paragon of the world.

She caught the ambassador's hand.

'Oh!' she exclaimed, 'do you speak as a subject whose duty is to praise his sovereign, or do you speak as a man?'

'Your Majesty may take my life,' he answered, 'if you find him other than I have told you'

'Oh that I could but see him!' she said.

She dismissed Renard gratefully. A few days after she sent for him again, when she was expecting the petition of the House of Commons. 'Lady Clarence,' one of the Queen's attendants, was the only other person present. The holy wafer was in the room on an altar, which she called her protector, her guide, her adviser.<sup>1</sup> Mary told them that she spent her days and nights in tears and prayers before it, imploring God to direct her; and as she was speaking her emotions overcame her;

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Elle l'avoit toujours invoqué comme son protecteur, conducteur, et conseiller'—Renard to Charles V, October 31. *Rolls House MSS.*

she flung herself on her knees with Renard and Lady Clarence at her side, and the three together before the altar sang the 'Veni Creator' The invocation was heard in the breasts from which it was uttered. As the chant died into silence, Mary rose from the ground as if inspired, and announced the divine message. The Prince of Spain was the chosen of Heaven for the virgin Queen; if miracles were required to give him to her, there was a stronger than man who would work them; the malice of the world should not keep him from her; she would cherish him and love him, and him alone; and never thenceforward, by a wavering thought, would she give him cause for jealousy<sup>1</sup>

It was true that she had deliberately promised not to do what she was now resolved on doing, but that was no matter.

November The Commons' petition was by this time ready, but the agitation of the last scene brought on a palpitation of the heart which for the time enabled the Queen to decline to receive it, while Renard assailed the different ministers, and extracted from them their general views on the state of the country, and the measures which should be pursued.

The Bishop of Winchester he found relaxing in his zeal for Rome, and desiring a solid independent English Government, the re-enactment of the Six Articles, and an Anglican religious tyranny supported by the lords of the old blood. Nobles and people were against the

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, October 31 *Rolls House MSS*

Pope, Gardiner said, and against foreign interference of all sorts; Mary could not marry Philip without a Papal dispensation, which must be kept secret, for the country would not tolerate it,<sup>1</sup> the French would play into the hands of the heretics, and the Spanish alliance would give them the game; there would be a cry raised that Spanish troops would be introduced to inflict the Pope upon the people by force. If the Emperor desired the friendship of England, he would succeed best by not pressing the connection too close. Political marriages were dangerous. Cromwell tied Henry VIII to Anne of Cleves; the marriage lasted a night, and destroyed him and his policy. Let the Queen accept the choice of her people, marry Courtenay, send Elizabeth to the Tower, and extirpate heresy with fire and sword.

These were the views of Gardiner, from whom Renard turned next to Paget.

If the Queen sent Elizabeth to the Tower, Lord Paget said, her life would not be safe for a day. Paget wished her to be allowed to choose her own husband; but she must first satisfy Parliament that she had no intention of tampering with the succession. Should she die without children, the country must not be left exposed to claims from Spain on behalf of Philip, or from France on behalf of the Queen of Scots. His own advice, therefore, was, that Mary should frankly acknow-

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Il faudra obtenir dispense du Pape, pour le parentage, qui ne pourra estre publique ains secreete, autrement le peuple se revoltierout, pour l'auctorité du Pape qu'il ne veult admettre et revoir'—Renard to Charles V, November 9 *Rolls House MSS*

ledge her sister as her presumptive successor ; Elizabeth might be married to Courtenay, and, in default of heirs of her own body, it might be avowed and understood that those two should be king and queen. Could she make up her mind to this course, could she relinquish her dreams of restoring the authority of the Pope, of meddling with the Church lands, and interfering with the liberties of her people, she might rely on the loyalty of the country, and her personal inclinations would not be interfered with.<sup>1</sup>

Both the lines of conduct thus sketched were consistent and intelligible, and either might have been successfully followed. But neither the one nor the other satisfied Mary. She would have Philip, she would have the Pope, and she would not recognize her sister. If she insisted on choosing a husband for herself, she felt it would be difficult to refuse her ; her object was to surprise the council into committing themselves, and

Nov 8. she succeeded On the 8th of November, when they were in session in a room in the palace, Renard presented Mary in the Emperor's name with a formal offer of Philip's hand, and requested a distinct answer, Yes or no. The Queen said she would consult her ministers, and repaired in agitation to the council-room.<sup>2</sup> Distrusting one another, unprepared for the sudden demand, and unable to consult in her presence, the Lords made some answer, which she in-

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, November 4. *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> 'Visage intimidé et gestes tremblans.'—Renard to Charles V. : *Rolls House MSS.*

terpreted into acquiescence : Mary returned radiant with joy, and told the ambassador that his proposal was accepted. <sup>1</sup>

A momentary lull followed, during which  
Thomas Cranmer, Archbishop of Canterbury, Nov. 13.  
Lady Jane Grey, Lord Guilford, Lord Ambrose and  
Lord Henry Dudley were taken from the Tower on foot  
to the Guildhall, and were there tried, found guilty of  
high treason, and sentenced to die. Lady Jane the  
Queen still intended to spare ; the Dudleys she meant  
to pause upon. Cranmer, in a grave, mild letter, ex-  
plained what his conduct had been with respect to his  
so-called treason ; but his story, creditable to him as it  
was, produced no effect ; Cranmer was immediately to  
be put to death. That was the first intention, though  
it was found necessary to postpone his fate through a  
superstitious scruple. The Archbishop had received the  
pallium from Rome, and, until degraded by apostolic  
authority, he could not, according to Catholic rule, be  
condemned by a secular tribunal. But there was no  
intention of sparing him at the time of his trial ; in a  
few days, Renard wrote on the 17th of November, ' the  
Archbishop ' will be executed ; and Mary triumphant,  
as she believed herself, on the question nearest to her  
heart, had told him that the melancholy which had  
weighed upon her from childhood was rolling away ;  
she had never yet known the meaning of happiness, and  
she was about to be rewarded at last. <sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V., November 17 : *Rolls House MSS*

The struggle had told upon her. She was looking aged and worn,<sup>1</sup> and her hopes of children, if she married, were thought extremely small. But she considered that she had won the day, and was now ready to face the Commons; the House had chafed at the delay: they had talked largely of their intentions; if the Queen's answer was unsatisfactory, they threatened to dissolve of themselves, and return to their counties. On the 16th of November a message was brought that the Speaker would at last be admitted to the presence. The interview which followed, Mary thus herself described to Renard. The council were present; the Speaker was introduced, and the Queen received him standing.

In an oration which she described as replete to weariness with fine phrases and historic precedents, the Speaker requested her, in the name of the commonwealth, to marry. The succession was perplexed, the Queen of Scots made pretensions to the Crown; and in the event of her death, a civil war was imminent. Let her Majesty take a husband, therefore, and with God's grace the kingdom would not be long without an heir whose title none would dispute. Yet, in taking a husband, the Speaker said, her Majesty's faithful Commons trusted she would not choose from abroad. A foreign prince had interests of his own which might not be English interests; he would have command of English armies, fleets, and fortresses, and he might betray his trust; he might involve the country in wars; he might make promises

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Fort envieillie et agée.'—NOAILLES.



and break them; he might carry her Highness away out of the realm; or he might bring up her children in foreign courts and in foreign habits. Let her marry, therefore, one of her own subjects.

The Speaker was so prolix, so tedious, so confused, the Queen said—his sentences were Nov 10 so long drawn and so little to the purpose—that she sat down before he had half finished. When he came to the words ‘marry a subject,’ she could remain silent no longer.

Replies to addresses of the House of Commons were usually read by the chancellor; but, careless of forms, she again started to her feet, and spoke—<sup>1</sup>

‘For your desire to see us married we thank you; your desire to dictate to us the consort whom we shall choose we consider somewhat superfluous; the English Parliament has not been wont to use such language to their sovereigns, and where private persons in such cases follow their private tastes, sovereigns may reasonably challenge an equal liberty. If you, our Commons, force upon us a husband whom we dislike, it may occasion the inconvenience of our death,<sup>2</sup> if we marry where we do not love, we shall be in our grave in three months, and the heir of whom you speak will not have been brought into being. We have heard much from you of the inconveniences which may attend our mar-

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard is the only authority for this speech, which he heard from the Queen. Translated by him into French, and retranslated by myself into English, it has, doubtless, suffered much in the process

<sup>2</sup> ‘Ceseroit procurer l’inconvenement de sa mort’.

riage; we have not heard from you of the commodities thereof—one of which is of some weight with us, the commodity, namely, of our private inclination. We have not forgotten our coronation oath. We shall marry as God shall direct our choice, to his honour and to our country's good'

Nov 16 She would hear no reply. The Speaker was led out, and as he left the room Arundel whispered to Gardiner that he had lost his office; the Queen had usurped it. At the same moment the Queen herself turned to the chancellor—'I have to thank you, my Lord, for this business,' she said.

The chancellor swore in tears that he was innocent; the Commons had drawn their petition themselves; for himself it was true he was well inclined towards Courtenay, he had known him in the Tower

'And is your having known him in the Tower,' she cried, 'a reason that you should think him a fitting husband for me? I will never, never marry him—that I promise you—and I am a woman of my word; what I say I do'

'Choose where your will,' Gardiner answered, 'your Majesty's consort shall find in me the most obedient of his subjects.'

Mary had now the bit between her teeth, and, resisting all efforts to check or guide her, was making her own way with obstinate resolution.

The next point was the succession, which, notwithstanding the humour of Parliament, should be rearranged, if force or skill could do it. There were four

possible claimants after herself, she told Renard, and in her own opinion the best title was that of the Queen of Scots. But the country objected, and the Emperor would not have the English crown fall to France. The Greys were out of the question, but their mother, the Duchess of Suffolk, was eligible; and there was Lady Lennox, also, Darnley's mother, who perhaps, after all, would be the best choice that could be made<sup>1</sup> Elizabeth, she was determined, should never, never succeed. She had spoken to Paget about it, she said, and Paget had remonstrated; Paget had said, marry her to Courtenay, recognize her as presumptive heir, and add a stipulation, if necessary, that she become a Catholic; but, Catholic or no Catholic, she said, her sister should never reign in England with consent of hers; she was a heretic, a hypocrite, and a bastard, and her infamous mother had been the cause of all the calamities which had befallen the realm.

Even Renard was alarmed at this burst of passion. He had fed Mary's suspicions till they were beyond either his control or her own; and the attitude of Parliament had lately shown him that, if any step were taken against Elizabeth without provocation on her part, it would infinitely increase the difficulty of concluding the marriage. He was beginning to believe, and he ventured to hint to the Queen, that Paget's advice might be worth consideration; but on this subject she would listen to nothing.

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, November 28: *Rolls House MSS*

Elizabeth had hitherto, when at Court, taken precedence of all other ladies. The Queen now compelled her to walk behind Lady Lennox and the Duchess of Suffolk, as a sign of the meditated change,<sup>1</sup> and the ladies of the Court were afraid to be seen speaking to her. But in reply to Mary's derogatory treatment the young lords, knights, and gentlemen gathered ostentatiously round the princess when she rode abroad, or thronged the levees at her house; old-established statesmen said, in Renard's ear, that, let the Queen decide as she would, no foreigner should reign in England; and Lord Arundel believed that Elizabeth's foot was already on the steps of the throne. A large and fast-growing party, which included more than one member of the privy council, were now beginning to consider as the best escape from Philip, that Courtenay should fly from the Court, taking Elizabeth with him—call round him in their joint names all who would strike with him for English independence, and proclaim the Queen deposed.

There was uncertainty about Elizabeth herself; both Noailles and Renard believed that she would consent to this dangerous proposal; but she had shown Courtenay, hitherto, no sign of favour; while Courtenay, on his side, complained that he was frightened by her haughty ways. Again, there was a serious difficulty in Courte-

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Elle l'a faict quelquefois aller  
 apres la Comtesse de Lennox, que  
 l'on appelle icy Madame Marguerite,  
 et Madame Françoise, qu'est la

susdicte Duchesse de Suffolk'— Noailles to the King of France, November 30
--

may's character; he was too cowardly for a dangerous enterprise, too incapable for an intricate one, and his weak humour made men afraid to trust themselves to a person who, to save himself, might at any moment betray them. Noailles, however, said emphatically that, were Courtenay anything but what he was, his success would be certain <sup>1</sup>

The plot grew steadily into definite form. Devonshire and Cornwall were prepared for insurrection, and thither, as to the stronghold of the Courtenay family, Elizabeth was to be first carried. Meantime the ferment of popular feeling showed in alarming symptoms through the surface. The council were in continual quarrel. Parliament, since the rebuff of the Speaker, had not grown more tractable, and awkward questions began to be asked about a provision for the married clergy. All had been already gained which could be hoped for from the present House of Commons, and, on the 6th of December, the session ended in a dissolution. The same day a dead dog was <sup>December</sup> thrown through the window of the presence chamber with ears cropped, a halter about its neck, and a label saying that all the priests in England should be hanged.

Renard, who, though not admitted, like Noailles, into the confidence of the conspirators, yet knew the drift of public feeling, and knew also Arundel's opinion of the Queen's prospects, insisted that Mary should

---

<sup>1</sup> Noailles to the King of France, December 6

place some restraint upon herself, and treat her sister at least with outward courtesy; Philip was expected at Christmas, should nothing untoward happen in the interval; and the ambassador prevailed on her, at last, to pretend that her suspicions were at an end. His own desire, he said, was as great as Mary's that Elizabeth should be detected in some treasonable correspondence, but harshness only placed her on her guard; she would be less careful, if she believed that she was no longer distrusted. The princess, alarmed perhaps at finding herself the unconsenting object of dangerous schemes, had asked permission to retire to her country house. It was agreed that she should go; persons in her household were bribed to watch her; and the Queen, yielding to Renard's entreaties, received her, when she came to take leave, with an appearance of affection so well counterfeited, that it called out the ambassador's applause.<sup>1</sup> She made her a present of pearls, with a head-dress of sable, and the princess, on her side, implored the Queen to give no more credit to slanders against her. They embraced; Elizabeth left the Court; and, as she went out of London, five hundred gentlemen formed about her as a voluntary escort.<sup>2</sup> There were not wanting fools, says Renard, who would persuade the Queen that her sister's last words were honestly spoken; but she remembers too acutely the injuries which her

---

<sup>1</sup> 'La Reine a tres bien dissimulée, en son endroit'—Renard to Charles V., December 8: *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> NOAILLES.

mother and herself suffered at Anne Boleyn's hands; and she has a fixed conviction that Elizabeth, unless she can be first disposed of, will be a cause of infinite calamities to the realm.<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, December 8. *Rolls House MSS.*

## CHAPTER XXXI.

### THE SPANISH MARRIAGE.

THE fears of Renard and the hopes of Noailles were occasioned by the unanimity of Catholics and heretics in the opposition to the marriage; yet, so singular was the position of parties, that this very unanimity was the condition which made the marriage possible. The Catholic lords and gentlemen were jealous of English independence, and, had they stood alone, they would have coerced the Queen into an abandonment of her intentions: but, if they dreaded a Spanish sovereign, they hated unorthodoxy more, and if they permitted or assisted in the schemes of the Reformers, they feared that they might lose the control of the situation when the immediate object was obtained. Those who were under the influence of Gardiner desired to restore persecution; and persecution, which was difficult with Mary on the throne, would be impossible under a sovereign brought in by a revolution. They made a favourite of Courtenay, but they desired to marry him to the Queen, not to Elizabeth: Gardiner told the young



Earl that he would sooner see him the husband of the vilest drab who could be picked out of the London kennels.<sup>1</sup>

Thus, from their murmurs, they seemed to be on the edge of rebellion, yet, when the point of action came, they halted, uncertain what to do, unwilling to acquiesce, yet without resolution to resist. From a modern point of view the wisest policy was that recommended by Paget. The claim of the Queen of Scots on the throne unquestionably made it prudent for England to strengthen herself by some powerful foreign alliance, sufficient precautions could be devised for the security of the national independence; and, so far from England being in danger of being drawn into the war on the Continent, Lord Paget said that, if England would accept Philip heartily, the war would be at an end. Elizabeth of France might marry Don Carlos, taking with her the French pretensions to Naples and Milan as a dowry. Another French princess might be given to the expatriated Philibert, and Savoy and Piedmont restored with her. 'You,' Paget said to Noailles, 'by your Dauphin's marriage forced us to be friends with the Scots; we, by our Queen's marriage, will force you to be friends with the Emperor.'<sup>2</sup>

Paget, however, was detested as an upstart, and de-

<sup>1</sup> Renad to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> 'Le dict Paget me respondit qu'il n'estoit ja besoing d'entrer en si grande jalousie, et que tout ainsi que nous les avions faicts amys avec-

ques les Escossoys, ce mariage seroit aussi cause que nous serions amys avecques l'Empereur.'—Noailles to the King of France, December 26. Compare also the letter of December 23, *Ambassades*, vol. II pp 334—356.

tested still more as a latitudinarian ; he could form no party, and the Queen made use of him only to support her in her choice of the Prince of Spain, as in turn she would use Gardiner to destroy the Protestants ; and thus the two great factions in the State neutralized each other's action in a matter in which both were equally anxious ; and Mary, although with no remarkable capacity, without friends and ruined, if at any moment she lost courage, was able to go her own way in spite of her subjects.

The uncertainty was, how long so anomalous a state of things would continue. The marriage being once decided on, Mary could think of nothing else, and even religion sank into the second place. Reginald Pole, chafing the Imperial bridle between his lips, vexed her, so Renard said, from day to day, with his untimely importunities,<sup>1</sup> the restoration of the mass gave him no pleasure so long as the Papal legate was an exile, and in vain the Queen laboured to draw from him some kind of approval. He saw her only preferring carnal pleasures to her duty to heaven ; and, indifferent himself to all interests save those of the See of Rome, he was irritated with the Emperor, irritated with the worldly schemes to which he believed that his mission had been sacrificed. He talked angrily of the marriage. The Queen heard, through Wotton the ambassador at Paris, that he had said openly, it should never take place,<sup>2</sup> while Peto,

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. November 14, November 23; December 3, December 8, December 11

*House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS*. The Queen wrote to

the Greenwich friar, who was in his train, wrote to her, reflecting impolitely on her age, and adding Scripture commendations of celibacy as the more perfect state<sup>1</sup> It was even feared that the impatient legate had advised the Pope to withhold the dispensations.

Mary, beyond measure afflicted, wrote to Pole at last, asking what in his opinion she ought to do He sent his answer through a priest, by whom it could be conveyed with the greatest emphasis. First, he said, she must pray to God for a spirit of counsel and fortitude; next, she must, at all hazards, relinquish the name of Head of the Church; and, since she could trust neither peer nor prelate, she must recall Parliament, go in person to the House of Commons, and demand permission with her own mouth for himself to return to England. The Holy See was represented in his person, and was freshly insulted in the refusal to receive him; the Pope's vast clemency had volunteered unasked to pardon the crimes of England; if the gracious offer was not accepted, the legation would be cancelled, the

---

Wotton to learn his authority The Venetian ambassador, Wotton said, was the person who had told him, but the quarter from which the information originally came, he believed, might be relied on — Wotton to the Queen and Council *MS State Paper Office* • •

<sup>1</sup> 'Un des principaulx qu'il a avec luy que se nomme William Peto, theologien, luy a escript luy donnant

conseil de non se marrier, et vivre en celibat, meslant en ses lettres plusieurs allegations du Vieux et Nouveau Testament, repétant x ou xii fois qu'elle tombera en la puissance et servitude du mari, qu'elle n'aura enfans, sinon soubz danger de sa vie pour l'âge dont elle est'— Renard to Charles V TITLER, vol. II. p 303 •

national guilt would be infinitely enhanced. The Emperor talked of prudence; in the service of God prudence was madness; and, so long as the schism continued, her attempts at reform were vanity, and her seat upon the throne was usurpation. Let her tell the truth to the House of Commons, and the House of Commons would hear<sup>1</sup>

'Your Majesty will see,' wrote Renard, enclosing to Charles a copy of these advices, 'the extent of the Cardinal's discretion, and how necessary it is that for the present he be kept at a distance.' The Pope was not likely to reject the submission of England at any moment, late or early, when England might be pleased to offer it, and could well afford to wait. Julius was wiser than his legate. Pole was not recalled, but exhorted to patience, and a letter or message from Rome cooled Mary's anxieties. Meanwhile the marriage was to be expedited with as much speed as possible, the longer the agitation continued, the greater the danger; while the winter was unfavourable to revolutionary movements, and armed resistance to the prince's landing would be unlikely so long as the season prevented large bodies of men from keeping the field.<sup>2</sup>

The Emperor, therefore, in the beginning of December, sent over the draft of a marriage treaty, and if the security that the articles would be observed had equalled the form in which they were conceived, the

---

<sup>1</sup> Instructions of Cardinal Pole to Thomas Goldwell *Cotton MSS Titus, B 11*

<sup>2</sup> Renard dwelt much on this point as a reason for haste.

English might have afforded to lay aside their alarms. Charles seemed to have anticipated almost every point on which the insular jealousy would be sensitive. The Prince of Spain should bear the title of King of England so long, but so long only, as the Queen should be alive ; and the Queen should retain the disposal of all affairs in the realm, and the administration of the revenues. The Queen, in return, should share Philip's titles, present and prospective, with the large settlement of 60,000*l.* a year upon her for her life. Don Carlos, the Prince's child by his first wife, would, if he lived, inherit Spain, Sicily, the Italian provinces, and the Indies. But Burgundy and the Low Countries should be settled on the offspring of the English marriage, and be annexed to the English Crown ; and this prospect, splendid in itself, was made more magnificent by the possibility that Don Carlos might die. Under all contingencies, the laws and liberties of the several countries should be held inviolate and inextinguishable.

In such a treaty the Emperor conferred everything, and in return received nothing ; and yet, to gain the alliance, a negotiation already commenced for the hand of the Infanta of Portugal was relinquished. The liberality of the proposals was suspicious, but they were submitted to the council, who, unable to refuse to consider them, were obliged to admit that they were reasonable. Five additional clauses were added, however, to which it was insisted that Philip should swear before the contract should be completed—.

1. That no foreigner, under any circumstances, should

be admitted to any office in the royal household, in the army, the forts, or the fleet.

2. That the Queen should not be taken abroad without her own consent; and that the children—should children be born—should not be carried out of England without consent of Parliament, even though among them might be the heir of the Spanish Empire.

3. Should the Queen die childless, the Prince's connection with the realm should be at an end

4 The jewel-house and treasury should be wholly under English control, and the ships of war should not be removed into a foreign port.

5 The Prince should maintain the existing treaties between England and France; and England should not be involved, directly or indirectly, in the war between France and the Empire.<sup>1</sup>

These demands were transmitted to Brussels, where they were accepted without difficulty, and further objection could not be ventured unless constraint was laid upon the Queen. The sketch of the treaty, with the conditions attached to it, was submitted to such of the Lords and Commons as remained in London after the dissolution of Parliament, and the result was a sullen acquiescence.

An embassy was immediately announced as to be sent from Flanders Count Egmont, M de Courrières, the Count de Lalaing, and M. de Nigry, Chancellor of the Golden Fleece, were coming over as plenipotentiaries

---

<sup>1</sup> Marriage Treaty between Mary, Queen of England, and Philip of Spain RYMER, vol. vi.

of the Emperor. Secret messengers went off to Rome to hasten the dispensations—a dispensation for Mary to marry her cousin, and a dispensation which also was found necessary permitting the ceremony to be performed by a bishop in a state of schism. The marriage could be solemnized at once on their arrival, the ambassadors standing as Philip's representatives, while Sir Philip Hoby, Bonner, Bedford, and Lord Derby would go to Spain to receive the Prince's oaths, and escort him to England. Again and again the Queen pressed haste. Ash-Wednesday fell on the 6th of February, and in Lent she might not marry. Renard assured her that the Prince should be in her arms before Septuagesima, and all her trials would be over. The worst danger which he now anticipated was from some unpleasant collision which might arise after the Prince's landing; and he had advised the Emperor to have the Spaniards who would form the retinue selected for their meekness. They would meet with insolence from the English, which they would not endure, if they had the spirit to resent it; their dispositions, therefore, must be mild and forgiving<sup>1</sup>

And yet Renard could not hide from himself, and the Lords did not hide from Mary, that their consent was passive only; that their reluctance was vehement as ever. Bedford said, if he went to Spain, he must go without attendance, for no one would accompany him. Lord Derby refused to be one of the ambassadors, and

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, December 11. *Rolls House MSS*

with Sir Edward Waldegrave and Sir Edward Hastings told the Queen that he would leave her service if she persisted. The seditious pamphlets which were scattered everywhere created a vague terror in the Court, and the Court ladies wept and lamented in the Queen's presence. The council in a body again urged her to abandon her intention. The Peers met again to consider the marriage articles. Gardiner read them aloud, and Lord Windsor, a dull Brutus, who till then had never been known to utter a reasonable word, exclaimed, amidst general applause, 'You have told us fine things of the Queen, and the Prince, and the Emperor; what security have we that words are more than words?' Corsairs from Brest and Rochelle hovered in the mouth of the Channel to catch the couriers going to and fro between Spain and London and Brussels, and to terrify Philip with the danger of the passage. The Duke of Suffolk's brother and the Marquis of Winchester had been heard to swear that they would set upon him when he landed; and Renard began to doubt whether the alliance, after all, was worth the risk attending it.<sup>1</sup> Mary, however, brave in the midst of her perplexities, vowed that she would relinquish her hopes of Philip only with her life. An army of spies watched Elizabeth day and night, and the Emperor, undeterred by Renard's hesitation, encouraged the Queen's resolution. There could be no conspiracy.

---

<sup>1</sup> 'The English,' he said, 'sont si traictres, si inconstantes, si doubles, si malicieux, et si faciles à esmover qu'il ne se fault fier, et si l'alliance

est grande, aussi est elle hazardeuse pour la personne de son Altesse'—Renard to Charles V, December 12  
*Rolls House MSS*



as yet, Charles said, which could not be checked with judicious firmness ; and dangerous persons could be arrested and made secure. A strong hand could do much in England, as was proved by the success for a time of the late Duke of Northumberland.<sup>1</sup>

The advice fell in with Mary's own temperament ; she had already been acting in the spirit of it. A party of Protestants met in St Matthew's Church on the publication of the Acts of the late session, to determine how far they would obey them. Ten or twelve were seized on the spot, and two were hanged out of hand.<sup>2</sup> The Queen told Hastings and Waldegrave that she would endure no opposition ; they should obey her or they should leave the council. She would raise a few thousand men, she said, to keep her subjects in order, and she would have a thousand Flemish horse among them. There was a difficulty about ways and means ; as fast as money came into the treasury she had paid debts with it, and, as far as her means extended, she had replaced chalices and roods in the parish churches. But, if she was poor, five millions of gold had just arrived in Spain from the New World ; and, as the Emperor suggested, her credit was good at Antwerp from her honesty. Lazarus Tucker came again to the rescue. In November, Lazarus provided 50,000*l.* for her at fourteen per cent. In January she required 100,000*l.* more, and she ordered Gresham to find it for

---

<sup>1</sup> Charles V to Renard, December 24. *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V, December 20. *Ibid.*

her at low interest or high.<sup>1</sup> Fortunately for Mary the project of a standing army could not be carried out by herself alone, and the passive resistance of the council saved her from commencing the attempt. Neither Irish mercenaries, nor Flemish, nor Welsh, as two months after she was proposing to herself, were permitted to irritate England into madness.

While Mary was thus buffeting with the waves, on the 23rd, Count Egmont and his three companions arrived at Calais. The French had threatened to intercept the passage, and four English ships-of-war had been ordered to be in waiting as their escort. These ships, however, had not left the Thames, being detained either by weather, as the admiral pretended, or by the ill-humour of the crews, who swore they would give the French cruisers small trouble, should they present themselves.<sup>2</sup> On Christmas-day ill-looking vessels were hanging in mid-channel, off Calais harbour, but the ambassadors were resolved to cross at all risks. They stole over in the darkness on the night of the 26th, and were at Dover by nine in the morning. Their retinue, a very large one, was sent on at once to London; snow was on the ground, and the boys in the streets saluted the first comers with showers of balls. The ambassadors followed the next day, and were received in silence, but without active insult. The Emperor's choice of persons for his purpose had been judicious.

---

<sup>1</sup> The Queen to Sir Thomas Gresham. *Flanders MSS. Mary*, State Paper Office.

<sup>2</sup> Noailles to the King of France, December 6. *Ambassades*, vol. II.

The English ministers intended to be offensive, but they were disarmed by the courtesy of Egmont, who charmed every one. In ten days the business connected with the treaty was concluded. The treaty itself was sent to Brussels to be ratified, and the dispensations from Rome, and the necessary powers from the Prince of Spain, were alone waited for that the marriage might be concluded in public or in private, whichever way would be most expeditious. The Queen cared only for the completion of the irrevocable ceremony, which would bring her husband to her side before Lent.<sup>1</sup>

The interval of delay was consumed in hunting-parties<sup>2</sup> and dinners at the palace, where the courtiers played off before the guests the passions of their eager mistress<sup>3</sup>. The enemies of the marriage, French and English, had no time to lose, if they intended to prevent the completion of it.

When the Queen's design was first publicly announced, the King of France directed No-

1554  
Jan 10

<sup>1</sup> The Bishop of Arras to the Ambassadors in England. *Granvelle Papers*, vol iv p. 181, &c

<sup>2</sup> The 10th day of January the ambassadors rode unto Hampton Court, and there they had as great cheer as could be had, and hunted and killed, tag and rag, with hounds and swords — *MACHEN'S Diary*.

<sup>3</sup> After dinner Lord William Howard entered, and, seeing the Queen pensive, whispered something to her in English, then turning to

us, he asked if we knew what he had said. The Queen bade him not tell, but he paid no attention to her. He told us he had said he hoped soon to see somebody sitting there, pointing to the chair next her Majesty. The Queen blushed, and asked him how he could say so. He answered that he knew very well she liked it; whereat her Majesty laughed, and the Court laughed, &c — Egmont and Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS.*

ailles to tell her frankly the alarm with which it was regarded at Paris. Henry and Montmorency said the same repeatedly, and at great length, to Dr Wotton. The Queen might have the best intentions of remaining at peace, but events might be too strong for her, and they suggested, at last, that she might give a proof of the good-will which she professed by making a fresh treaty with them.<sup>1</sup> That a country should be at peace while its titular king was at war, was a situation without a precedent. Intricate questions were certain to arise; for instance, if a mixed fleet of English and Spanish ships should escort the Prince, or convoy his transports or treasure, or if English ships having Spaniards on board should enter French harbours. A thousand difficulties such as these might occur, and it would be wise to provide for them beforehand.

The uneasiness of the Court of Paris was not allayed when the Queen met this most reasonable proposal with a refusal.<sup>2</sup> A clause, she replied, was added to the marriage articles for the maintenance of the existing treaties with France, and with that and with her own promises the French Government ought to be content. In vain Noailles pointed out that the existing treaties would not meet the new conditions, she was obstinate, and both Noailles and the King of France placed the worst interpretation upon her attitude. Philip, after his arrival, would unquestionably drag or lead her into his quarrels; and they determined, therefore, to employ

---

<sup>1</sup> NOAILLES.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

all means, secret and open, to prevent his coming, and to co-operate with the English opposition.

The time to act had arrived. Rumours were industriously circulated that the Prince of Spain was already on the seas, bringing with him ten thousand Spaniards, who were to be landed at the Tower, and that eight thousand Germans were to follow from the Low Countries. Noailles and M. d'Oysel, then on his way through London to Scotland, had an interview with a number of lords and gentlemen, who undertook to place themselves at the head of an insurrection, and to depose the Queen. The whole country was crying out against her, and the French ministers believed that the opposition had but to declare itself in arms to meet with universal sympathy. They regarded the persons with whom they were dealing as the representatives of the national discontent; but on this last point they were fatally mistaken.

Noailles spoke generally of lords and gentlemen; but those with whom d'Oysel and himself had communicated were a party of ten or twelve of the pardoned friends of the Duke of Northumberland, or of men otherwise notorious among the ultra-Protestants; the Duke of Suffolk and his three brothers, Lord Thomas, Lord John, and Lord Leonard Grey; the Marquis of Northampton; Sir Thomas Wyatt, son of the poet; Sir Nicholas Throgmorton; Sir Peter Carew; Sir Edmund Warner, Lord Cobham's brother-in-law; and Sir James Crofts, the late Deputy of Ireland.<sup>1</sup> Courtenay, who

---

<sup>1</sup> Noailles and d'Oysel to the King of France, January 15 *Am-  
bassades*, vol. iii.

had affected orthodoxy as long as he had hopes of the Queen, was admitted into the confederacy. Cornwall and Devonshire were to be the first counties to rise, where Courtenay would be all-powerful by his name Wyatt undertook to raise Kent, Sir James Crofts the Severn border, Suffolk and his brothers the midland counties. Forces from these four points were to converge on London, which would then stir for itself. The French Admiral Villegaignon promised to keep a fleet on the seas, and to move from place to place among the western English harbours, wherever his presence would be most useful. Plymouth had been tampered with, and the mayor and aldermen, either really or as a ruse to gain information, affected a desire to receive a French garrison<sup>1</sup>. For the sake of their cause the Protestant party were prepared to give to France an influence in England as objectionable in itself, and as offensive to the majority of the people, as the influence of Spain, and the management of the opposition to the Queen was snatched from the hands of those who might have brought it to some tolerable issue, by a set of men to whom the Spanish marriage was but the stalking-horse for the reimposition of their late tyranny. If the Duke

<sup>1</sup> 'Sire, tout maintenant en achevant cette lettre, les maue et aldermans de Plymouth, m'ont envoyé prier de vous supplier les vouloir prendre en votre protection, voulans et deliberans mettre leur ville entre vos mains, et y recepvour dedans telle garrison qu'il vous plaura y envoyer, n'estans resoubz

de ne recevoir aucunement le Prince d'Espagne, ne s'asservir en façon que ce soit à ses commandemens, et s'asseurans que tous les gentilhommens de l'entour d'icy en feroient de mesme.'—Noailles to the King of France *Ambassades*, vol. II. p. 342.

of Northumberland, instead of setting up a rival to Mary, had loyally admitted her to the throne which was her right, he might have tied her hands, and secured the progress of moderate reform. Had the great patriotic anti-papal party been now able to combine, with no disintegrating element, they could have prevented the marriage or made it harmless. But the ultra-party plunged again into treason, in which they would succeed only to restore the dominion of a narrow and blighting sectarianism.<sup>1</sup>

The conspirators remained in London till the second week in January. Wyatt went into Kent, Peter Carew ran down the Channel to Exmouth in a vessel of his own, and sent relays of horses as far as Andover for Courtenay, Sir Nicholas Throgmorton undertaking to see the latter thus far upon his way. The disaffection was already simmering in Devonshire. There was a violent scene among the magistrates at the Christmas quarter-sessions at Exeter. A countryman came in, and reported that he had been waylaid and searched by a party of strange horsemen in steel saddles, 'under the gallows at the hill top,' at Fair-mile, near Sir Peter Carew's house. His person had been mistaken, it seemed, but questions were asked, inquiries made, and ugly language had been used about the Queen. On Carew's arrival the ferment increased. One of his lacqueys,

<sup>1</sup> One of the projects mooted was the Queen's murder; a scheme suggested by a man from whom better things might have been expected, William Thomas, the late Clerk of the Council. Wyatt, however, would not stain the cause with dark crimes of that kind, and threatened Thomas with rough handling for his proposal. c

mistaking intention for fact, whispered in Exeter that 'my Lord of Devonshire was at Mohun's Ottery.'<sup>1</sup> Six horses heavily loaded passed in, at midnight, through the city gates. The panniers were filled with harness and hand-guns from Sir Peter's castle at Dartmouth.<sup>2</sup> Sir John Chichester, Sir Arthur Champernowne, Peter and Gawen Carew, and Gybbes of Silverton had met in private, rumour said for no good purpose; and the Exeter Catholics were anxious and agitated. They had been all disarmed after the insurrection of 1549, the castle was in ruins, the city walls were falling down. Should Courtenay come, the worst consequences were anticipated.

But Courtenay did not come. After Carew had left London he became nervous; when the horses were reported to be ready, he lingered about the Court; he flattered himself that the Queen had changed her mind in his favour, and two nights before the completion of the treaty he sat up, affecting to expect to be sent for to marry her on the spot.<sup>3</sup> Finding the message did not arrive, he gave an order to his tailor to prepare a splendid Court costume, adding perhaps some boasting words, which were carried to Gardiner. The chancellor's regard for him was sincere, and went beyond a desire to make him politically useful. He sent for him, cross-questioned him, and by the influence of a strong

<sup>1</sup> The house of Sir Peter Carew

*memoirs, Mary*, vol. ii. State Paper Office

<sup>2</sup> Miscellaneous Depositions on the State of Devonshire *MS Dep.*

<sup>3</sup> Instructions to la Marque NOAILLES, vol. iii p 25, &c



mind over a weak one, drew out as much as Courtenay knew of the secrets of the plot.<sup>1</sup>

The intention was to delay, if possible, an open declaration of rebellion a few weeks longer—till the Prince of Spain's arrival should raise the ferment to boiling point. Gardiner, who was determined, at all events, to prevent the Protestants from making head, informed the Queen, without mentioning Courtenay's name, that he had cause to suspect Sir Peter Carew. A summons was despatched to Devonshire to require Sir Peter and his brother to return to London: and thus either to compel them to rise prematurely, without Courtenay's assistance, or, if they complied, to enable the Court to secure their persons. The desired effect was produced; Carew had waded too deep in treason to trust himself in Gardiner's hands. He wrote an excuse, yet protesting his loyalty; and he invited the inhabitants of Exeter to join in a petition to the Crown against the marriage, as a first-step towards a rising.

But the Carews were notorious and unpopular; the justices of the peace at the sessions had been just occupied with a Protestant outrage committed by one of their nearest friends,<sup>2</sup> and their true object was sus-

- Noailles to the King of France: *Ambassades*, vol iii p 31

<sup>2</sup> 'On the morning of Christmas-day came twelve neighbours of Silvertown, being the parish where Mr Gybbes dwelleth, and they complained to me of a cross of latten,

the church before that time, and that the cross was set up upon a gate or upon a hedge by the way, where the picture of Christ was dressed with a paste or such like tyre, and the picture of our Lady and St John tied by threads to the

pected. The barns of Crediton were not forgotten, nor the massacre of the prisoners at Clyst, and without Courtenay they were powerless. Their invitation met with no response; and Chichester and Champernowne, seeing how the tide was setting, washed their hands of the connection. Sir Thomas Dennys, a Catholic gentleman of the county, took command of Exeter, sent express for the sheriff, Sir Richard Edgecumbe, of Cotteyll, to come to his help, and as well as he could he put the city in a state of defence.<sup>1</sup> Carew retired to Mohun's Ottery, when an order came to Dennys from the Court for his arrest.

Dennys, who desired Carew's escape more than his capture, replied that for the moment he could not execute the order. Mohun's Ottery could not be taken without cannon, and wet weather had made the roads impassable. Meantime he gave Sir Peter notice of his danger; and Sir Peter, disposing in haste of his farm stock to raise a supply of money, crossed the country to Weymouth, embarked in a vessel which 'Mr Walter Raleigh' had brought round to meet him, and sailed for France.<sup>2</sup>

One arm of the conspiracy was thus lopped off at the first blow. But, although Courtenay's treachery was known, some days elapsed before the ill success of Carew

'Mr Gybbes,' could not be actually convicted of having been the perpetrator, but he was 'vehemently suspected,' and, when examined, had used 'vile words.'—Depositions of John Prideaux. *MS. Mary, Domes-*

*tic*, vol. 11 State Paper Office.

<sup>1</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>2</sup> Depositions of John Prideaux *MS. Mary, Domestic*, vol. 11. State Paper Office

was heard of in London. Courtenay had been trusted only so far as his intended share in the action had made it necessary to trust him, and the confederates were chiefly anxious that, having broken down, he should be incapacitated from doing further mischief by being restored to the Tower. Courtenay, wrote Noailles, has thrown away his chance of greatness, and will now probably die miserably. Lord Thomas Grey was heard to say that, as Courtenay had proved treacherous he would take his place, and run his chance for the crown or the scaffold.<sup>1</sup>

They would, perhaps, have still delayed till they had received authentic accounts from Devonshire; but the arrest of Sir Edmund Warner, and one or two others, assured them that too much of their projects  
Jan 22.  
had transpired; and on the 22nd of January

Sir Thomas Wyatt called a meeting of his friends at Allingham Castle, on the Medway. The commons of Kent were the same brave, violent, and inflammable people whom John Cade, a century before, had led to London; the country gentlemen were generally under Wyatt's influence. Sir R. Southwell, the sheriff for the year, had been among the loudest objectors in Parliament to the marriage; and if Southwell joined in the rising he would bring with him Lord Abergavenny<sup>2</sup> Lord Cobham, Wyatt's uncle, was known to wish him well. Sir Thomas Cheyne, the only other person of

---

<sup>1</sup> NOAILLES.

<sup>2</sup> Confession of Anthony Norton. *MS. Mary, Domestic*, vol. iii. State

weight in the county, would be loyal to the Queen, but Wyatt had tampered with his tenants; Cheyne could bring a thousand men into the field, but they would desert when led out, and there was nothing to fear from them. Whether Southwell and Cobham would act openly on Wyatt's side was the chief uncertainty; it was feared that Southwell might desire to keep within the limits of loyal opposition; Cobham offered to send his sons, but 'the sending of sons,' some member of the meeting said, 'was the casting away of the Duke of Northumberland; their lives were as dear to them as my lord Cobham's was to him; let him come himself and set his foot by them.'<sup>1</sup> The result of the conference was a determination to make the venture. Thursday the 25th was the day agreed on for the rising, and the gentlemen present went in their several directions to prepare the people.

Meantime Gardiner was following the track which Courtenay had opened. He knew generally the leaders of the conspiracy, yet uncertain, in the universal perplexity, how any one would act, he knew not whom to trust. To send Courtenay out of the way, he  
Jan. 23 allowed a project to be set on foot for despatching him on an embassy to Brussels; and anxious, perhaps, not to alarm Mary too much, he simply told her what she and Renard knew already, that treasonable designs were on foot to make Elizabeth Queen. In a conversation about Elizabeth the chancellor agreed

---

<sup>1</sup> Confession of Anthony Norton. *MS. Mary, Domestic*, vol. iii State Paper Office.

with Renard that it would be well to arrest her without delay. 'Were but the Emperor in England,' Gardiner said, 'she would be disposed of with little difficulty.'<sup>1</sup> Unfortunately, the spies had as yet detected no cause for suspicion on which the Government could act legitimately.

Mary, ignorant that she was in immediate danger, and only vaguely uneasy, looked to Philip's coming as the cure of her discomforts. 'Let the Prince come,' she said to Renard, 'and all will be well.' She said she would raise eight thousand men and keep them in London as his guard and hers; she would send a fleet into the Channel and sweep the French into their harbours; only let him come before Lent, which was now but a fortnight distant: 'give him my affectionate love,' she added; 'tell him that I will be all to him that a wife ought to be; and tell him, too [delightful message to an already hesitating bridegroom], tell him to bring his own cook with him' for fear he should be poisoned.<sup>2</sup> The ceremony, could it have been accomplished, would have been a support to her; but the forms from Rome were long in coming. On the 24th the Em-  
peror was at last able to send a brief, which, Jan 24  
in the absence of the bulls, he trusted might be enough to satisfy the Queen's scruples. Cuthbert Tunstal, who had been consecrated before the schism, might officiate, and the Pope would remove all irregularities afterwards.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> Ibid

<sup>3</sup> Charles V to the Ambassadors in England, January 24: *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv.

But when the letter and the brief arrived Mary was at no leisure to be married.

Wyatt, having arranged the day for the rising, sent notice to the Duke of Suffolk, who was still in London.

Jan. 25 On the morning of the 25th an officer of the

Court appeared at the Duke's house, with an intimation that he was to repair to the Queen's presence. Suffolk was in a riding dress—'Marry!' he said, 'I was coming to her Grace; ye may see I am booted and spurred; I will but break my fast and go.'<sup>1</sup> The officer retired. The Duke collected as much money as he could lay hands on—sent a servant to warn his brothers, and, though in bad health, mounted his horse and rode without stopping to Lutterworth, where on the Sunday following, Lord John and Lord Thomas Grey joined him.

The same morning of the 25th an alarm was rung on the church bells in the towns and villages in all parts of Kent; and copies of a proclamation were scattered abroad, signifying that the Spaniards were coming to conquer the realm, and calling on loyal Englishmen to rise and resist them. Wyatt's standard was raised at Rochester, the point at which the insurgent forces were to unite; his friends had done their work well, and in all directions the yeomen and the peasants rose in arms.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Chronicle of Queen Mary* | tion taken to send a force against  
 Baocardo says that Suffolk was sent | him. Noaples is, doubtless, right  
 for to take command of the force | in saying that he was to have been  
 which was to be sent against Wyatt | arrested — *Ambassades*, vol. iii p.  
 But Wyatt's insurrection had not | 48  
 commenced, far less was any resolu-

Oheyne threw himself into Dover Castle: Southwell and Abergavenny held to the Queen as had been feared. Abergavenny raised two thousand men, and attacked and dispersed a party of insurgents under Sir Henry Isly on Wrotham Heath; but Abergavenny's followers deserted him immediately afterwards, and marched to Rochester to Wyatt. Southwell could do nothing; he believed that the rebellion would spread to London, and that Mary would be lost.<sup>1</sup>

On the 26th, Wyatt, being master of Ro- Jan 26.  
chester and the Medway, seized the Queen's ships that were in the river, took possession of their guns and ammunition, proclaimed Abergavenny, Southwell, and another gentleman traitors to the commonwealth,<sup>2</sup> and set himself to organize the force which continued to pour in upon him. Messengers, one after another, hurried to London with worse and worse news; Northampton was arrested and sent to the Tower, but Suffolk and his brothers were gone; and, after all which had

<sup>1</sup> Southwell to Sir William Petre. *MS. Mary, Domestic*, State Paper Office.

<sup>2</sup> 'You shall understand that Henry Lord of Abergavenny, Robert Southwell, knight, and George Clarke, gentleman, have most traitorously, to the disturbance of the commonwealth, stirred and raised up the Queen's most loving subjects of this realm, to [maintain the] most wicked and devilish enterprise of certain wicked and perverse councillors, to the utter confusion of

this her Grace's realm, and the perpetual servitude of all her most loving subjects. In consideration whereof, we Sir Thos Wyatt, knight, Sir George Harper, knight, Anthony Knyvet, esq., with all the faithful gentlemen of Kent, with the trusty commons of the same, do pronounce and declare the said Henry Lord of Abergavenny, Robert Southwell, and George Clarke to betrayers to God, the Crown, and the commonwealth.'

—*MS. Ibid.*

been said of raising troops, when the need came for them there were none beyond the ordinary guard. The Queen had to rely only on the musters of the city and the personal retainers of the council and the other peers ; both of which resources she had but too much reason to distrust. In fact, the council, dreading the use to which the Queen might apply a body of regular troops, had resisted all her endeavours to raise such a body ; Paget had laboured loyally for a fortnight, and at the end he assured the Queen on his knees that he had not been allowed to enlist a man.<sup>1</sup> Divided on all other points, the motley group of ministers agreed to keep Mary powerless ; with the exception of Gardiner and Paget, they were all, perhaps, unwilling to check too soon a demonstration which, kept within bounds, might prove the justice of their own objections.

Jan 27. The Queen, however, applied to the corporation of the city, and obtained a promise of five hundred men ; she gave the command to the Duke of Norfolk, on whose integrity she knew that she could rely ; and, sending a herald to Rochester with a pardon, if the rebels would disperse, she despatched Norfolk, Sir Henry Jerningham, and the young Lord Ormond, to Gravesend without waiting for an answer. The city bands were to follow them immediately. Afraid that Elizabeth would fly before she could be secured, the Queen wrote a letter to her studiously gracious, in which she told her that, in the disturbed state of the

---

<sup>1</sup> Record to Charles V., *Rolls House MSS.*



country, she was uneasy for her safety, and recommended her to take shelter with herself in the palace.<sup>1</sup> Had Elizabeth obeyed, she would have been instantly arrested; but she was ill, and wrote that she was unable to move. The next day evidence came into Gardiner's hands which he trusted would consign her at last to the scaffold.

The King of France had sent a message to the confederates that he had eighty vessels in readiness, with eighteen companies of infantry, and that he waited to learn on what part of the coast they should effect a landing.<sup>2</sup> The dangerous communication had been made known to the Court. The French ambassador had been narrowly watched, and one of his couriers who left London on the 26th with despatches for Paris was followed to Rochester, where he saw, or attempted to see, Wyatt. The courier, after leaving the town, was waylaid by a party of Lord Cobham's servants in the disguise of insurgents; his despatches were taken from him and sent to the chancellor, who found in the packet a letter of Noailles to the King in cypher, and a copy of Elizabeth's answer to the Queen. Although in the lat-

<sup>1</sup> STYVE, vol. v. p. 127 Mr Tytler appeals to this letter as an evidence of the good feeling of the Queen towards her sister; but many and genuine as were Mary's good qualities, she may not be credited with a regard for Elizabeth. Renard's letters explain her real sentiments, and account for her outward graciousness. She had already con-

sulted with Renard and Gardiner on the necessity of sending her to the Tower; and, on the 29th of January, as the princess did not avail herself of the Queen's proposal, Renard describes himself to the Emperor as pressing her immediate arrest.—*Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V, January 29. *Rolls House MSS*

ter there was no treason, yet it indicated a suspicious correspondence. The cypher, could it be read, might be expected to contain decisive evidence against her.<sup>1</sup>

Saturday, Meantime the herald had not been admit-  
Jan. 27. ted into Rochester. He had read the Queen's message on the bridge, and, being answered by Wyatt's followers that they required no pardon, for they had done no wrong, he retired. Sir George Harper, who was joint commander with Wyatt, stole away the same evening to Gravesend, and presented himself to Norfolk. The rebels, he said, were discontented and irresolute; for himself he desired to accept the Queen's pardon, which he was ready to earn by doing service against them; if the Duke would advance without delay, he would find no resistance, and Wyatt would fall into his hands.

Sunday, The London bands arrived the following  
Jan. 28. afternoon, and Norfolk determined to take Harper's advice. The weather was 'very terrible.'

<sup>1</sup> A letter from Gardner to Sir William Petre is in the State Paper Office, part of which he wrote with the cypher open under his eyes in the first heat of the discovery. The breadth and depth of the pen-strokes express the very pulsation of his passion —

'As I was in hand with other matters,' the paragraph runs, 'was delivered such letters as in times past I durst not have opened; but now, somewhat heated with these treasons, I waxed bolder, wherein I trust I shall be borne with; wherein hap helpeth me, for they be worsh

the breaking up an I could wholly decypher them, wherein I will spend somewhat of my leisure, if I can have any. But this appeareth, that the letter written from my Lady Elizabeth to the Queen's Highness, now late in her excuse, is taken a matter worthy to be sent into France, for I have the copy of it in the French Ambassador's packet. I will know what can be done in the decyphering, and to-morrow remit that I cannot do unto you.'—Gardner to Petre: *MS. Mary, Domestie*, State Paper Office.

On Monday morning it blew so hard that no boat could live; Wyatt, therefore, would be unable to escape by the river, and an immediate advance was resolved upon. Sir Thomas Cheyne was coming up from Dover; Lord William Howard was looked for hourly, and Abergavenny was again exerting himself: Lord Cobham had urged the Duke to wait a few days, and had told him that he had certain knowledge from Wyatt himself that 'the Londoners would not fight.'<sup>1</sup> but Norfolk was confident; the men had assured him of their loyalty; and at four o'clock on Monday afternoon he was on the sloping ground facing towards Rochester, within cannon-shot of the bridge. The Duke was himself in front, with Ormond, Jerningham, and eight 'field-pieces,' which he had brought with him. A group of insurgents were in sight across the water, a gun was placed in position to bear upon them; and the gunner was blowing his match, when Sir Edward Bray galloped up, crying out that the 'white coats,' as the London men were called, were changing sides. The Duke had fallen into a trap which Harper had laid for him. Turning round he saw Brett, the London captain, with all his men, and with Harper at his side, advancing and shouting, 'A Wyatt! a Wyatt! we are all Englishmen!' The first impulse was to turn the gun upon them; the second, and more prudent, was to spring on his horse, and gallop with half a dozen others for his life. His whole force had deserted, and guns, money,

<sup>1</sup> Norfolk to the Council from Gravesend, Sunday, January 28, Monday, January 29. *MS. Domestica, Mary*, State Paper Office.

baggage, and five hundred of the best troops in London fell into the insurgents' hands, and swelled their ranks.

No sooner was the Duke gone, than Wyatt in person came out over the bridge. 'As many as will tarry with us,' he cried, 'shall be welcome; as many as will depart, let them go.' Very few accepted the latter offer. Three parts, even of Norfolk's private attendants, took service with the rebel leader.

The prestige of success decided all who were wavering in the county. Abergavenny was wholly forsaken; Southwell escaped to the Court; Cheyne wrote to the council that he was no longer sure of any one; 'the abominable treason of those that came with the Duke of Norfolk had infected the whole population.'<sup>1</sup> Cobham continued to hold off, but his sons came into Rochester the evening of the Duke's flight; and Wyatt sent a message to the father expressing his sorrow that he had been hitherto backward; promising to forgive him, however, and requiring him to be in the camp the next day, when the army would march on London. Cobham still hesitating, two thousand men were at the gates of his house<sup>2</sup> by day-

break the next morning. He refused to lower the drawbridge, but the chains were cut with a cannon-shot, the gates were blown open, and the

---

<sup>1</sup> 'It is a great deal more than strange,' he added, 'to see the beastliness of the people, to see how earnestly they be bent in this their most devilish enterprise, and will by no means be persuaded the contrary but that it is for the commonweal of

all the realm'—Cheyne to the Council *MS Mary, Domestic*, vol. III

<sup>2</sup> Cowling Castle, a place already famous in English Reforming history as the residence of Sir John Oldcastle.

rebels were storming in when his servants forced him to surrender. The house was pillaged; an oath was thrust on Cobham that he would join, which he took with the intention of breaking it; and the rebels, perhaps seeing cause to distrust him, carried him off to Wyatt as a prisoner<sup>1</sup> That night the insurgents rested at Gravesend. The next day Jan. 31. they reached Dartford. Their actual numbers were insignificant, but their strength was the disaffection of London, where the citizens were too likely to follow the example which had been set at Rochester.

Mary's situation was now really alarming: she was without money, notwithstanding the Jews: she had no troops; of all her ministers Paget alone was sincerely anxious to do her service, for Gardiner, on the subject of the marriage, was as unwilling as ever. It was rumoured that the King of Denmark intended to unite with the French in support of the revolutionists, and Renard began calmly to calculate that, should this report prove true, the Queen could not be saved. Pembroke and Clinton offered to raise another force in the

---

<sup>1</sup> He contrived to send a letter to the Queen the evening of the day on which his house was taken. After describing the scene, he added 'If your Grace will assemble forces in convenient numbers, they not being above 2000 men, and yet not 500 of them able and good aimed men, but rascals and rakehells such as live by spoil, I doubt not but your Grace shall have the victory.' —Cobham to the Queen *MS State Paper Office* But Cobham under-estimated the numbers, and undervalued the composition of Wyatt's forces, perhaps intentionally. Renard, who is generally accurate, says that the rebels at this time amounted to three thousand; Noailles says, twelve or fifteen thousand.

city and fight Wyatt; but so far as Mary could tell, they would be as likely to turn against her as to fight in her defence; and she declined their services. Renard offered Gardiner assistance from the Low Countries—Gardiner replied with extreme coldness that he had no desire to see Flemish soldiers in England—and the council generally were ‘so strange’ in their manner, and so languid in their action, that the ambassador could not assure himself that they were not Wyatt’s real instigators. Not a man had been raised to protect the Queen, and part of her own guard had been among the deserters at Rochester. She appealed to the honour of the Lords to take measures for her personal safety; but they did nothing, and, it seemed, would do nothing; if London rose, they said merely, she must retire to Windsor.

The aspect of affairs was so threatening that Renard believed that the marriage at least would have to be relinquished. It seemed as if it could be accomplished only with the help of an invading army; and although Mary would agree to any measure which would secure Philip, the presence of foreign troops, as the Emperor himself was aware, could only increase the exasperation<sup>1</sup>. The Queen’s resolution, however, grew with her difficulties. If she could not fight she would not yield; and, taking matters into her own hands, she sent Sir Thomas Cornwallis and Sir Edward Hastings to Dartford, with directions to speak with Wyatt, if possible,

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to the Emperor, Janu- | Emperor to Renard, February 4  
ary 29. *Rolls House MSS.* The | *Granville Papers*, vol. iv p. 204

alone; to tell him that she 'marvelled at his demeanour,' 'rising as a subject to impeach her marriage;' she was ready to believe, however, that he thought himself acting in the interests of the commonwealth; she would appoint persons to talk over the subject with him, and if it should appear that the marriage would not, as she supposed, be beneficial to the realm, she would sacrifice her wishes.<sup>1</sup>

The message was not strictly honest, for the Queen had no real intention of sacrificing anything. She desired merely to gain time; and, should Wyatt refuse, as she expected, she wished to place herself in a better position to appeal to her subjects for help.<sup>2</sup> But the move under this aspect was skilful and successful, when Cornwallis and Hastings discharged their commission, Wyatt replied that he would rather be trusted than trust; he would argue the marriage with pleasure, but he required first the custody of the Tower, and of the Queen's person, and four of the council must place themselves in his hands as hostages.<sup>3</sup>

Had Wyatt, said Noailles, been able to reach London simultaneously with this answer, he would have found the gates open and the whole population eager to give him welcome. To his misfortune he lingered on the way, and the Queen had time to use his words against him. The two gentlemen returned indignant

---

<sup>1</sup> Instructions to Sir Thomas Cornwallis and Sir Edward Hastings *MS State Paper Office*.

<sup>2</sup> Renard to the Emperor *Rolls House MFS*

<sup>3</sup> HOLINSHEAD, NOAILLES.

at his insolence. The next morning Count  
 Feb. 1. Egmont waited on Mary to say that he and  
 his companions were at her service, and would stand by  
 her to their death. Perplexed as she was, Egmont said  
 he found her 'marvellously firm.' The marriage, she  
 felt, must, at all events, be postponed for the present;  
 the Prince could not come till the insurrection was at an  
 end; and, while she was grateful for the offer, she not  
 only thought it best to decline the ambassador's kind-  
 ness, but she recommended them, if possible, to leave  
 London and the country without delay. Their party  
 was large enough to irritate the people, and too small  
 to be of use. She bade Egmont, therefore, tell the  
 Emperor that from the first she had put her trust in  
 God, and that she trusted in Him still; and for them-  
 selves, she told them to go at once, taking her best  
 wishes with them. They obeyed. Six Antwerp mer-  
 chant sloops were in the river below the bridge, waiting  
 to sail. They stole on board, dropped down the tide,  
 and were gone.

The afternoon of the same day the Queen herself,  
 with a studied air of dejection,<sup>1</sup> rode through the streets  
 to the Guildhall, attended by Gardiner and the remnant  
 of the guard. In St Paul's Churchyard she met Pem-  
 broke, and slightly bowed as she passed him. Gardiner  
 was observed to stoop to his saddle. The hall was

<sup>1</sup> Vous, asseurant, sire, comme  
 celluy qui l'a veu, que scachant la  
 dicta dame aller au dict lieu, je me  
 deliberay en ceste de veoir de quelle  
 visage elle et sa compaignie y alloi-  
 ent; que se congner estre aussy  
 triste et desplorée qu'il se peult pen-  
 ser —Noailles to the King of France,  
 Feb 1.





crowded with citizens · some brought there by hatred, some by respect, many by pity, but more by curiosity. When the Queen entered she stood forward on the steps, above the throng, and, in her deep man's voice, she spoke to them <sup>1</sup>

Her subjects had risen in rebellion against her, she said ; she had been told that the cause was her intended marriage with the Prince of Spain ; and, believing that it was the real cause, she had offered to hear and to respect their objections. Their leader had betrayed in his answer his true motives ; he had demanded possession of the Tower of London and of her own person. She stood there, she said, as lawful Queen of England, and she appealed to the loyalty of her great city to save her from a presumptuous rebel, who, under specious pretences, intended to 'subdue the laws to his will, and to give scope to rascals and forlorn persons to make general havoc and spoil.' As to her marriage, she had supposed that so magnificent an alliance could not have failed to be agreeable to her people. To herself, and, she was not afraid to say, to her council, it seemed to promise high advantage to the commonwealth. Marriage, in itself, was indifferent to her ; she had been invited to think of it by the desire of the country that she should have an heir ; but she could continue happy in the virgin state in which she had hitherto passed her life. She would call a Parliament and the subject should be considered in all its bearings if, on mature

---

<sup>1</sup> La voce grossa et quasi di huomo — Giovanni Michele ELLIS, vol. II. series II

consideration, the Lords and Commons of England should refuse to approve of the Prince of Spain as a fitting husband for her, she promised, on the word of a Queen, that she would think of him no more.

The spectacle of her distress won the sympathy of her audience; the boldness of her bearing commanded their respect; the promise of a Parliament satisfied, or seemed to satisfy, all reasonable demands: and among the wealthy citizens there was no desire to see London in possession of an armed mob, in whom the Anabaptist leaven was deeply interfused. The speech, therefore, had remarkable success. The Queen returned to Westminster, leaving the corporation converted to the prudence of supporting her. Twenty-five thousand men were enrolled the next day for the protection of the Crown and the capital; Lord William Howard was associated with the mayor in the command; and Wyatt, who had reached Greenwich on Thursday, and had wasted two days there, uncertain whether he should not cross the river in boats to Blackwall, arrived Saturday, on Saturday morning at Southwark, to find Feb 3 the gates closed on London Bridge, and the drawbridge flung down into the water.

Noailles, for the first time, believed now that the insurrection would fail. Success or failure, in fact, would turn on the reception which the midland counties had given to the Duke of Suffolk; and of Suffolk authentic news had been brought to London that morning.

On the flight of the Duke being known at the Court,

it was supposed immediately that he intended to proclaim his daughter and Guilford Dudley Rumour, indeed, turned the supposition into fact,<sup>1</sup> and declared that he had called on the country to rise in arms for Queen Jane But Suffolk's plan was identical with Wyatt's, he had carried with him a duplicate of Wyatt's proclamation, and accompanied by his brother, he presented himself in the market-place at Leicester on the morning of Monday the 29th. Lord Hunt-  
 ingdon had followed close upon his track from Monday, Jan 29.

London, but he assured the Mayor of Leicester that the Earl of Huntingdon was coming, not to oppose, but to join with him No harm was intended to the Queen; he was ready to die in her defence, his object was only to save England from the dominion of foreigners.

In consequence of these protestations, he was allowed to read his proclamation, the people were indifferent, but he called about him a few scores of his tenants and retainers from his own estates in the country; and on Tuesday morning, while the insurgents in Kent were attacking Cowling Castle, Suffolk rode out of Leicester, in full armour, at the head of his troops, intending first to move on Coventry, then to take Kenilworth and Warwick, and so to advance on London. The garrison at Warwick had been tampered with, and was reported to be ready to rise. The gates of Coventry he expected

<sup>1</sup> 'The Duke has raised evil-disposed persons, minding her Grace's destruction, and to advance the Lady Jane, his daughter, and Guilford Dudley, her husband'—Royal Proclamation *MS State Paper Office*. Printed in the additional Notes to Mr NICHOLS's *Chronicle of Queen Mary* Bacardo says that the Duke actually proclaimed Lady Jane.

to find open. He had sent his proclamation thither the day before, by a servant, and he had friends within the walls who had undertaken to place the town at his disposal.

The state of Coventry was probably the state of most other towns in England. The inhabitants were divided. The mayor and aldermen, the fathers of families, and the men of property, were conservatives, loyal to the Queen, to the mass, and to 'the cause of order.' The young and enthusiastic, supported by others who had good reasons for being in opposition to established authorities, were those who had placed themselves in correspondence with the Duke of Suffolk.

Suffolk's servant (his name was Thomas Rampton), on reaching the town, on Monday evening, made a mistake in the first person to whom he addressed himself, and received a cold answer. Two others of the townsmen, however, immediately welcomed him, and told him that 'the whole place was at his lord's commandment, except certain of the town council, who feared that, if good fellows had the upper hand, their extremities heretofore should be remembered.'<sup>1</sup> They took Rampton into a house, where, presently, another man entered of the same way of thinking, and, in his own eyes, a man of importance. 'My Lord's quarrel is right well known,' this person said, 'it is God's quarrel, let him come; let him come, and make no stay, for this

---

<sup>1</sup> Rampton's Confession : *MS Domestic, Mary*, vol. vii. State Paper Office.

town is his own I say to you assuredly this town is his own. I am it.'

It was now night; no time was to be lost, the townsmen said. They urged Rampton to return at once to Suffolk, and hasten his movements. They would themselves read the proclamation at the market-cross forthwith, and raise the people. Rampton, who had ridden far, and was weary, wished to wait till the morning; if they were so confident of success, a few hours could make no difference: but it appeared shortly that the 'good fellows' in Coventry were not exclusively under the influence of piety and patriotism. If a rising commenced in the darkness, it was admitted that 'undoubted spoil and peradventure destruction of many rich men would ensue,' and with transactions of this kind the Duke's servant was unwilling to connect himself.

Thus the hours wore away, and no resolution was arrived at; and, in the mean time, the town council had received a warning to be on their guard. Before day-break the constables were on the alert, the decent citizens took possession of the gates, and the conspirators had lost their opportunity. In the afternoon Suffolk arrived with a hundred horse under the walls, but there was no admission for him. Whilst he was hesitating what course to pursue, a messenger came in to say that the Earl of Huntingdon was at Warwick. The plot for the revolt of the garrison had been detected, and the whole country was on the alert. The people had no

farmers and burgesses would not rise at the call of the friend of Northumberland, and assist in bringing back the evil days of anarchy.

The Greys had now only to provide for their personal safety.

Suffolk had an estate a few miles distant, called Astley Park, to which the party retreated from Coventry. There the Duke shared such money as he had with him among his men, and bade them shift for themselves. Lord Thomas Grey changed coats with a servant, and rode off to Wales to join Sir James Crofts. Suffolk himself, who was ill, took refuge with his brother, Lord John, in the cottage of one of his gamekeepers, where they hoped to remain hidden till the hue and cry should be over, and they could escape abroad.

The cottage was considered insecure. Two bowshots south of Astley Church there stood in the park an old decaying tree, in the hollow of which the father of Lady Jane Grey concealed himself; and there, for two winter days and a night, he was left without food. A pro-

Jan. 30 clamation had been put out by Huntingdon for Suffolk's apprehension, and the keeper, either tempted by the reward, or frightened by the menace against all who should give him shelter, broke his trust—a rare example of disloyalty—and going to Warwick Castle, undertook to betray his master's hiding-place. A party of troopers were despatched, with the keeper for a guide; and, on arriving at Astley, they found that the Duke, unable to endure the cold and hunger longer, had crawled out of the tree, and was warming himself

by the cottage fire. Lord John was discovered buried under some bundles of hay.<sup>1</sup> They were carried off at once to the Tower, whither Lord Thomas Grey and Sir James Crofts, who had failed as signally in Wales, soon after followed them.<sup>2</sup>

The account of his confederates' failure saluted Wyatt on his arrival in Southwark, on the Saturday, 3rd of February. The intelligence was being <sup>Feb. 3.</sup> published, at the moment, in the streets of London; Wyatt himself, at the same time, was proclaimed traitor, and a reward of a hundred pounds was offered for his capture, dead or alive. The peril, however, was far from over; Wyatt replied to the proclamation by wearing his name, in large letters, upon his cap; the success of the Queen's speech in the city irritated the council, who did not choose to sit still under the imputation of having approved of the Spanish marriage. They declared everywhere, loudly and angrily, that they had not approved of it, and did not approve; in the city itself public feeling again wavered, and fresh parties of the train-bands crossed the water and deserted. The behaviour of Wyatt's followers gave the lie to the Queen's charges against them: the prisons in Southwark were not opened; property was respected scrupulously; the only attempt at injury was at Winchester House, and there it was instantly repressed; the in-

<sup>1</sup> Renard to the Emperor? *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> I follow Bacardo in the account of the Duke's capture. Renard says that he was found in the

tree by a little dog: 'qu'a esté grand commencement du miracle pour le succès prospere des affaires de la dite dame'—Renard to the Emperor, February 8. *MS.*

habitants of the Borough entertained them with warm hospitality; and the Queen, notwithstanding her efforts, found herself as it were besieged, in her principal city, by a handful of commoners, whom no one ventured, or no one could be trusted, to attack. So matters continued through Saturday, Sunday, Monday, and Tuesday. The lawyers at Westminster Hall pleaded in harness, and the judges wore harness under their robes; Doctor Weston sang mass in harness before the Queen; tradesmen attended in harness behind their counters. The metropolis, on both sides of the water, was in an attitude of armed expectation, yet there was no movement, no demonstration on either side of popular feeling. The ominous strangeness of the situation appalled even Mary herself.<sup>1</sup>

Feb 5 By this time the intercepted letter of Noailles had been decyphered. It proved, if more proof was wanted, the correspondence between the ambassador and the conspirators; it explained the object of the rising—the Queen was to be dethroned in favour of her sister; and it was found, also, though names were not mentioned, that the plot had spread far upwards among the noblemen by whom Mary was surrounded. Evidence of Elizabeth's complicity it did not contain; while, to Gardiner's mortification, it showed that Courtenay, in his confessions to himself, had betrayed the guilt of others, but had concealed part of his own. In an anxiety to shield him the chancellor pronounced the cypher of Courtenay's name to be unintelligible. The



Queen placed the letter in the hands of Renard, by whom it was instantly read, and the chancellor's humour was not improved; Mary had the mortification of feeling that she was herself the last object of anxiety either to him or to any of her council; though Wyatt was at the gates of London, the council could only spend the time in passionate recriminations; Paget blamed Gardiner for his religious intolerance; Gardiner blamed Paget for having advised the marriage; some exclaimed against Courtenay, some against Elizabeth; but, of acting, all alike seemed incapable. If the Queen was in danger, the council said, she might fly to Windsor, or to Calais, or she might go to the Tower 'Whatever happens,' she exclaimed to Renard, 'I am the wife of the Prince of Spain; crown, rank, life, all shall go before I will take any other husband.'<sup>1</sup>

The position, however, could not be of long continuance. Could Wyatt once enter London, he assured himself of success; but the gates on the Bridge continued closed. Cheyne and Southwell had collected a body of men on whom they could rely, and were coming up behind from Rochester. Wyatt desired to return and fight them, and then cross the water at Greenwich, as had been before proposed; but his followers feared that he meant to escape; a backward movement would not be permitted, and his next effort was to ascertain whether the passage over the Bridge could be forced.

London Bridge was then a long, narrow street. The

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V., *Rolls House MSS* February 5

gate was at the Southwark extremity; the drawbridge was near the middle. On Sunday or Monday night Wyatt scaled the leads of the gatehouse, climbed into a window, and descended the stairs into the lodge. The porter and his wife were nodding over the fire. The rebel leader bade them on their lives be still, and stole along in the darkness to the chasm from which the drawbridge had been cut away. There, looking across the black gulf where the river was rolling below, he saw the dusky mouths of four gaping cannon, and beyond them, in the torch-light, Lord Howard himself, keeping watch with the guard: neither force nor skill could make a way into the city by London Bridge.

The course which he should follow was determined for him. The Lieutenant of the Tower, Sir John Brydges, a soldier and a Catholic, had looked over the water with angry eyes at the insurgents collected within reach of his guns, and had asked the Queen for permission to fire upon them. The Queen, afraid of provoking the people, had hitherto refused; on the Monday, however, a Tower boat, passing the Southwark side of the water, was hailed by Wyatt's sentries, the watermen refused to stop, the sentries fired, and one of the

Feb 6      men in the boat was killed. The next morning (whether permission had been given at last, or not, was never known), the guns on the White Tower, the Devil's Tower, and all the bastions, were loaded and aimed, and notice was sent over that the fire was about to open. The inhabitants addressed themselves, in agitation, to Wyatt; and Wyatt, with a sudden resolu-

tion, half felt to be desperate, resolved to march for Kingston Bridge, cross the Thames, and come back on London. His friends in the city promised to receive him, could he reach Ludgate by daybreak on Wednesday.

On Tuesday morning, therefore, Shrove Tuesday, which the Queen had hoped to spend more happily than in facing an army of insurgents, Wyatt, accompanied by not more than fifteen hundred men, pushed out of Southwark. He had cannon with him, which delayed his march, but at four in the afternoon he reached Kingston. Thirty feet of the bridge were broken away, and a guard of three hundred men were on the other side; but the guard fled after a few rounds from the guns, and Wyatt, leaving his men to refresh themselves in the town, went to work to repair the passage. A row of barges lay on the opposite bank; three  
Feb 7.  
sailors swam across, attached ropes to them, and towed them over; and, the barges being moored where the bridge was broken, beams and planks were laid across them, and a road was made of sufficient strength to bear the cannon and the waggons.

By eleven o'clock at night the river was crossed, and the march was resumed. The weather was still wild, the roads miry and heavy, and through the winter night the motley party plunged along. The Rochester men had, most of them, gone home, and those who remained were the London deserters, gentlemen who had compromised themselves too deeply to hope for pardon, or fanatics, who believed they were fighting the Lord's

battle, and some of the Protestant clergy. Ponet, the late Bishop of Winchester, was with them; William Thomas, the late clerk of the council; Sir George Harper, Anthony Knyvet, Lord Cobham's sons, Pelham, who had been a spy of Northumberland's on the Continent,<sup>1</sup> and others more or less conspicuous in the worst period of the late reign.

From the day that Wyatt came to Southwark the whole guard had been under arms at Whitehall, and a number of them, to the agitation of the Court ladies, were stationed in the Queen's ante-chamber. But the guard was composed of dangerous elements. Sir Humphrey Radcliff, the lieutenant, was a 'favourer of the gospel';<sup>2</sup> and the 'Hot Gospeller' himself, on his recovery from his fever, had returned to his duties.<sup>3</sup> No

<sup>1</sup> The Regent Mary to the Ambassadors in England. *Granville Papers*, vol. iv.

<sup>2</sup> UNDERHILL'S *Narrative*

<sup>3</sup> Underhill, however, was too notorious a person to be allowed to remain on duty at such a time of danger

'When Wyatt was come to Southwark,' he says, 'the pensioners were commanded to watch in armour that night at the Court . . . After supper, I put on my armour, as the rest did, for we were appointed to watch all the night. So, being all armed, we came up into the chamber of presence with our pole-axes in our hands, wherewith the ladies were very fearful. Some lamenting, crying, and wringing their

hands, said, Alas! there is some great mischief toward. we shall all be destroyed this night. What a sight is this, to see the Queen's chamber full of armed men: the like was never seen nor heard of.' Mr Norris, chief usher of Queen Mary's privy chamber, was appointed to call the watch to see if any were lacking; unto whom, Moore, the clerk of our check, delivered the book of our names, and when he came to my name, What, said he, what doth he here? Sir, said the clerk, he is here ready to serve as the rest be. Nay, by God's body, said he, that heretic shall not watch here. Give me a pen. So he struck my name out of the book.'

additional precautions had been taken, nor does it seem that, on Wyatt's departure, his movements were watched. Kingston Bridge having been broken, his immediate approach was certainly unlooked for; nor was it till past midnight that information came to the palace that the passage had been forced, and that the insurgents were coming directly back upon London. Between two and three in the morning the Queen was called from her bed. Gardiner, who had been, with others of the council, arguing with her in favour of Courtenay the preceding day, was in waiting; he told her that her barge was at the stairs to carry her up the river, and she must take shelter instantly at Windsor.

Without disturbing herself, the Queen sent for Renard. Shall I go or stay? she asked

Unless your Majesty desire to throw away your crown, Renard answered, you will remain here till the last extremity; your flight will be known, the city will rise, seize the Tower, and release the prisoners; the heretics will massacre the priests, and Elizabeth will be proclaimed Queen.

The Lords were divided. Gardiner insisted again that she must and should go. The others were uncertain, or inclined to the opinion of Renard. At last Mary said that she would be guided by Pembroke and Clinton. If those two would undertake to stand by her, she would remain and see out the struggle.<sup>1</sup>

They were not present, and were sent for on the

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, February 8. *Rolls House MSS*

spot. Pembroke for weeks past had certainly wavered; Lord Thomas Grey believed at one time that he had gained him over, and to the last felt assured of his neutrality. Happily for Mary, happily, it must be said, for England—for the Reformation was not a cause to be won by such enterprises as that of Sir Thomas Wyatt—he decided on supporting the Queen, and promised to defend her with his life. At four o'clock in the morning drums went round the city, calling the train-bands to an instant muster at Charing Cross. Pembroke's conduct determined the young lords and gentlemen about the Court, who with their servants were swiftly mounted and under arms; and by eight, more than ten thousand men were stationed along the ground, then an open field, which slopes from Piccadilly to Pall Mall. The road or causeway on which Wyatt was expected to advance, ran nearly on the site of Piccadilly itself. An old cross stood near the head of St James's Street, where guns were placed; and that no awkward accident like that at Rochester might happen on the first collision, the gentlemen, who formed four squadrons of horse, were pushed forwards towards Hyde Park Corner.

Wyatt, who ought to have been at the gate of the city two hours before, had been delayed in the mean time by the breaking down of a gun in the heavy road at Brentford. Brett, the captain of the city deserters, Ponet, Harper, and others, urged Wyatt to leave the gun where it lay and keep his appointment. Wyatt, however, insisted on waiting till the carriage could be

repaired, although in the eyes of every one but himself the delay was obvious ruin. Harper, seeing him obstinate, stole away a second time to gain favour for himself by carrying news to the Court. Ponet, unambitious of martyrdom, told him he would pray God for his success, and, advising Brett to shift for himself, made away with others towards the sea and Germany.<sup>1</sup> It was nine o'clock before Wyatt brought the draggled remnant of his force, wet, hungry, and faint with their night march, up the hill from Knightsbridge. Near Hyde Park Corner a lane turned off, and here Pembroke had placed a troop of cavalry. The insurgents straggled on without order. When half of them had passed, the horse dashed out, and cut them in two, and all who were behind were dispersed or captured. Wyatt, caring now only to press forward, kept his immediate followers together, and went straight on. The Queen's guns opened, and killed three of his men; but, lowering his head, he dashed at them and over them; then, turning to the right, to avoid the train-bands, he struck down towards St James's, where his party again separated. Knyvet, and the young Cobhams, leaving St James's to their left, crossed the park to Westminster. Wyatt went right along the present Pall-Mall, past the line of the citizens. They had but to move a few steps to intercept his passage, close in, and take him; but not a man advanced, not a hand was lifted; where the way was narrow they drew aside to let him pass. At

---

<sup>1</sup> Letter of William Markham: *Tanner MSS* Bodleian Library, Compare Stow.

Charing Cross Sir John Gage was stationed, with part of the guard, some horse, and among them Courtenay, who in the morning had been heard to say he would not obey orders; he was as good a man as Pembroke. As Wyatt came up Courtenay turned his horse towards Whitehall, and began to move off, followed by Lord Worcester. 'Fie! my Lord,' Sir Thomas Cornwallis cried to him, 'is this the action of a gentleman?'<sup>1</sup> But deaf, or heedless, or treacherous, he galloped off, calling Lost, lost! all is lost! and carried panic to the Court. The guard had broken at his flight, and came hurrying behind him. Some cried that Pembroke had played false. Shouts of treason rung through the palace. The Queen, who had been watching from the palace gallery, alone retained her presence of mind. If others durst not stand the trial against the traitors, she said, she herself would go out into the field and try the quarrel, and die with those that would serve her.<sup>2</sup>

At this moment Knyvet and the Cobhams, who had gone round by the old palace, came by the gates as the fugitive guard were struggling in. Infinite confusion followed. Gage was rolled in the dirt, and three of the judges with him. The guard shrunk away into the offices and kitchens to hide themselves. But Knyvet's men made no attempt to enter. They contented themselves with shooting a few arrows, and then hurried on to Charing Cross to rejoin Wyatt. At Charing Cross, however, their way was now closed by a company of

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, February 8. *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> HOLLINSHED.



archers, who had been sent back by Pembroke to protect the Court. Sharp fighting followed, and the cries rose so loud as to be heard on the leads of the White Tower. At last the leaders forced their way up the Strand, the rest of the party were cut up, dispersed, or taken<sup>1</sup>

Wyatt himself, meanwhile, followed by three hundred men, had hurried on through lines of men who still opened to give him passage. He passed Temple Bar, along Fleet Street, and reached Ludgate. The gate was open as he approached, when some one seeing a number of men coming up, exclaimed, 'These be Wyatt's antients' Muttered curses were heard among the by-standers; but Lord Howard was on the spot; the gates, notwithstanding the murmurs, were instantly closed; and when Wyatt knocked, Howard's voice answered, 'Avaunt! traitor; thou shalt not come in here.' 'I have kept touch,' Wyatt exclaimed; but his enterprise was hopeless now. He sat down upon a bench outside the Belle Sauvage Yard. His followers scattered from him among the by-lanes and streets, and, of the three hundred, twenty-four alone remained, among whom were now Knyvet and one of the young Cobhams. With these few he turned at last, in the forlorn hope that the train-bands would again open to let him pass. Some of Pembroke's horse were coming up. He fought

---

<sup>1</sup> The dress of the Londoners who came with Wyatt being the city uniform, they were distinguished by the dirt upon their legs from their night-march. The cry of Pembroke's men in the fight was 'Down with the daggle-tail!'

his way through them to Temple Bar, where a herald cried, 'Sir, ye were best to yield; the day is gone against you, perchance ye may find the Queen merciful.' Sir Maurice Berkeley was standing near him on horseback, to whom, feeling that further resistance was useless, he surrendered his sword; and Berkeley, to save him from being cut down in the tumult, took him up upon his horse. Others in the same way took up Knyvet and Cobham, Brett and two more. The six prisoners were carried through the Strand back to Westminster, the passage through the city being thought dangerous; and from Whitehall Stairs, Mary herself looking on from a window of the palace, they were borne off in a barge to the Tower.

The Queen had triumphed, triumphed through her own resolution, and would now enjoy the fruits of victory.

Had Wyatt succeeded, Mary would have lost her husband and her crown; and had the question been no more than a personal one, England could have well dispensed both with her and Philip. But Elizabeth would have ascended a throne under the shadow of treason. The Protestants would have come back to power in the thoughtless vindictiveness of exasperated and successful revolutionists; and the problem of the Reformation would have been farther than ever from a reasonable solution. The fanatics had made their effort, and they had failed; they had shaken the throne, but they had not overthrown it; the Queen's turn was come, and, as the danger had been great, so was the resentment. She

had Renard at one ear protesting that, while these turbulent spirits were uncrushed, the precious person of the Prince could not be trusted to her. She had Gardiner, who, always pitiless towards heretics, was savage at the frustration of his own schemes. Renard in the closet, Gardiner in the pulpit, alike told her that she must show no more mercy.<sup>1</sup> On Ash Wednesday evening, after Wyatt's surrender, a proclamation forbade all persons to shelter the fugitive insurgents under pain of death. The 'poor caitiffs' were brought out of the houses where they had hidden themselves, and were given up by hundreds. Huntingdon came in on Saturday with Suffolk and his brothers. Sir James Crofts, Sir Henry Isly, and Sir Gawen Carew followed. The common prisons overflowed into the churches, where crowds of wretches were huddled together till the gibbets were ready for their hanging, the Tower wards were so full that Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer were packed into a single cell; and all the living representatives of the families of Grey and Dudley, except two young girls, were now within the Tower walls, sentenced, or soon to be sentenced, to death

<sup>1</sup> 'On Sunday, the 11th of February, the Bishop of Winchester preached in the chapel before the Queen.' 'The preachers for the 7 years last past, he said, by dividing of words and other their own additions, had brought in many errors detestable unto the Church of Christ' 'He axed a boon of the Queen's Highness, that, like as she had beforetime extended her mercy

particularly and privately, [and] so through her lenity and gentleness much conspiracy and open rebellion was grown. . . she would now be merciful to the body of the commonwealth and conservation thereof, which could not be unless the rotten and hurtful members thereof were cut off and consumed'—*Chronicle of Queen Mary*, p 54

The Queen's blood is up at last, Renard wrote exultingly to the Emperor on the 8th of Feb.  
Feb. 8      ruary ;<sup>1</sup> 'the Duke of Suffolk, Lord Thomas Grey, and Sir James Crofts have written to ask for mercy, but they will find none ; their heads will fall, and so will Courtenay's and Elizabeth's. I have told the Queen that she must be especially prompt with these two. We have nothing now to hope for except that France will break the peace, and then all will be well.' On the 12th of February the ambassador was still better satisfied. Elizabeth had been sent for, and was on her way to London. A rupture with France seemed inevitable, and as to clemency, there was no danger of it. 'The Queen,' he said, 'had told him that Anne of Cleves was implicated ;' but for himself he was sure that the two centres of all past and all possible conspiracies were Elizabeth and Courtenay, and that when their heads, and the heads of the Greys, were once off their shoulders, she would have nothing more to fear. The prisoners were heretics to a man ; she had a fair plea to despatch them, and she would then settle the country as she pleased ;<sup>2</sup> 'The house of Suffolk would soon be extinct.'

The house of Suffolk would be extinct that too, or almost that, had been decided on. Jane Grey was guiltless of this last commotion ; her name had not been so much as mentioned among the insurgents ; but she was guilty of having been once called 'Queen, and Mary,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V., February 12. *Rolls House MSS*.

who before had been generously deaf to the Emperor's advice, and to Renard's arguments, yielded in her present humour. Philip was beckoning in the distance; and while Jane Grey lived, Philip, she was again and again assured, must remain for ever separated from her arms.

Jane Grey, therefore, was to die—her execution was resolved upon the day after the victory; and the first intention was to put her to death on the Friday immediately approaching. In killing her body, however, Mary desired to have mercy on her soul; and she sent the message of death by the excellent Feb 9. Feckenham, afterwards Abbot of Westminster, who was to bring her, if possible, to obedience to the Catholic faith

Feckenham, a man full of gentle and tender humanity, felt to the bottom of his soul the errand on which he was despatched. He felt as a Catholic priest—but he felt also as a man.

On admission to Lady Jane's room he told her that she was to die the next morning, and he told her, also, for what reason the Queen had selected him to communicate the sentence.

She listened calmly. The time was short, she said; too short to be spent in theological discussion; which, if Feckenham would permit, she would decline.

Believing, or imagining that he ought to believe, that, if she died unreconciled, she was lost, Feckenham hurried back to the Queen to beg for delay; and the Queen, moved with his entreaties, respited the execu-

tion till Monday, giving him three more days to pursue his labour. But Lady Jane, when he returned to her, scarcely appreciated the favour; she had not expected her words to be repeated, she said; she had given up all thoughts of the world, and she would take her death patiently whenever her Majesty desired.<sup>1</sup>

Feckenham, however, still pressed his services, and  
 Feb 12. courtesy to a kind and anxious old man, forbade her to refuse them. He remained with her to the end; and certain arguments followed on faith and justification, and the nature of sacraments; a record of which may be read by the curious in Foxe.<sup>2</sup> Lady Jane was wearied without being convinced. The tedium of the discussion was relieved, perhaps, by the now more interesting account which she gave to her unsuccessful confessor of the misfortune which was bringing her to her death.<sup>3</sup> The night before she suffered she wrote a few sentences of advice to her sister on the blank leaf of a New Testament. To her father, knowing his weakness, and knowing, too, how he would be worked upon to imitate the recantation of Northumberland, she sent a letter of exquisite beauty, in which the exhortations of a dying saint are tempered with the reverence of a daughter for her father.<sup>4</sup>

The iron-hearted Lieutenant of the Tower, Sir John

<sup>1</sup> BACARDO. The writer of the *Chronicle of Queen Mary*, says, 'She was appointed to have been put to death on Friday, but was stayed—for what cause is not known.' Bacardo supplies the explanation.

<sup>2</sup> Vol. vi pp 415—417.

<sup>3</sup> The story told by Bacardo, to whom, it would seem, Feckenham related it.

<sup>4</sup> FOXE, vol. vi.

Brydges, had been softened by the charms of his prisoner, and begged for some memorial of her in writing. She wrote in a manual of English prayers the following words :—

‘Forasmuch as you have desired so simple a woman to write in so worthy a book, good Master Lieutenant, therefore I shall, as a friend, desire you, and as a Christian, require you to call upon God to incline your heart to his laws, to quicken you in his way, and not to take the word of truth utterly out of your mouth. Live still to die, that by death you may purchase eternal life, and remember how Methuselah, who, as we read in the Scriptures, was the longest liver that was of a man, died at the last ; for, as the Preacher saith, there is a time to be born and a time to die ; and the day of death is better than the day of our birth. Yours, as the Lord knoweth, as a friend, Jane Dudley.’<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> *Chronicle of Queen Mary*, p 57, note In the same manual are a few words in Guilford Dudley’s hand, addressed to Suffolk, and a few words also addressed to Suffolk by Lady Jane. Mr Nichols supposes that the book (it is still extant among the *Harleian MSS*) was used as a means of communicating with the Duke when direct intercourse was unpermitted. If this conjecture is right, Lady Jane’s letter, perhaps, never reached her father at all. There is some difficulty about the memorial which the Lieutenant of the Tower obtained from her. BACARDO says, that she

gave him a book, in which she had written a few words in Greek, Latin, and English

‘La Greca era tale. La morte dara la pena al mio corpo del fallo ma la mia anima giustificara inanzi al conspetto di Dio la innocenza mia.

‘La Latina diceva. Se la giustizia ha luogo nel corpo mio l’anima mia l’havera nella misericordia di Dio.

‘La Inglese Il fallo e degno di morte ma il modo della mia ignoranza doueva meritar pietà e excusatione appresso il mondo e alle leggi.’

Her husband was also to die, and to die before her. The morning on which they were to suffer he begged for a last interview and a last embrace. It was left to herself to consent or refuse. If, she replied, the meeting would benefit either of their souls, she would see him with pleasure; but, in her own opinion, it would only increase their trial. They would meet soon enough in the other world.

He died, therefore, without seeing her again. She saw him once alive as he was led to the scaffold, and again as he returned a mutilated corpse in the death-cart. It was not wilful cruelty. The officer in command had forgotten that the ordinary road led past her window. But the delicate girl of seventeen was as masculine in her heart as in her intellect. When her own turn arrived, Sir John Brydges led her down to the green; her attendants were in an agony of tears, but her own eyes were dry. She prayed quietly till she reached the foot of the scaffold, when, she turned to Feckenham, who still clung to her side. 'Go now,' she said, 'God grant you all your desires, and accept my own warm thanks for your attentions to me; although, indeed, those attentions have tried me more than death can now terrify me'<sup>1</sup> She sprung up the steps, and said briefly that she had broken the law in accepting the crown; but as to any guilt of

---

<sup>1</sup> Andate che nostre Signore Dio vi contenti d'ogni vostro desiderio, e siate sempre infinitamente ringratiato della compagna che

m'havete fatta avenga che da quella sia stata molto piu noiata che hora non mi spaventa la morte —BAO-ARDO.



intention, she wrung her hands, and said she washed them clean of it in innocency before God and man. She entreated her hearers to bear her witness that she died a true Christian woman; that she looked to be saved only by the mercy of God and the merits of his Son: and she begged for their prayers as long as she was alive. Feckenham had still followed her, notwithstanding his dismissal. 'Shall I say the *Miserere* psalm?' she said to him.<sup>1</sup> When it was done she let down her hair with her attendants' help, and uncovered her neck. The rest may be told in the words of the chronicler:—

'The hangman kneeled down and asked her forgiveness, whom she forgave most willingly. Then he willed her to stand upon the straw, which doing, she saw the block. Then she said, I pray you despatch me quickly. Then she kneeled down, saying, Will you take it off before I lay me down? and the hangman answered, No, madam. She tied a kercher about her eyes; then, feeling for the block, she said, What shall I do; where is it? One of the bystanders guiding her thereunto, she laid her head down upon the block, and stretched forth her body, and said, Lord, into Thy hands I commend my spirit. And so ended.'<sup>2</sup>

The same day Courtenay was sent to the Tower, and a general slaughter commenced of the common prisoners. To spread the impression, gibbets were erected all over London, and by Thursday evening eighty or a hundred

---

<sup>1</sup> The 51st. 'Have mercy on me, oh Lord, after thy goodness.' | <sup>2</sup> *Chronicle of Queen Mary*, pp. 38, 59

bodies<sup>1</sup> were dangling in St Paul's Churchyard, on London Bridge, in Fleet Street, and at Charing Cross, in Southwark and Westminster. At all crossways and in all thoroughfares, says Noailles, 'the eye was met with the hideous spectacle of hanging men;' while Brett and a fresh batch of unfortunates were sent to suffer at Rochester and Maidstone. Day after day, week after week, commissioners sat at Westminster or at the Guildhall trying prisoners, who passed with a short shrift to the gallows. The Duke of Suffolk was sentenced on the 17th; on the 23rd he followed his daughter, penitent for his rebellion, but constant, as she had implored him to be, in his faith. His two brothers and Lord Cobham's sons were condemned. William Thomas, to escape torture, stabbed himself, but recovered to die at Tyburn. Lord Cobham himself, who was arrested notwithstanding his defence of his house, Wyatt, Sir James Crofts, Sir William St Lowe, Sir Nicholas Arnold, Sir Nicholas Throgmorton, and, as the council expressed it, 'a world more,' were in various prisons waiting their trials. Those who were suspected of being in Elizabeth's confidence were kept with their fate impending over them—to be tempted either with hopes of pardon, or fear of the rack, to betray their secrets.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Renard says 'A hundred were hanged in London and a hundred in Kent' Stow says, 'Eighty in London and twenty-two in Kent.' *The Chronicle of Queen Mary* does not mention the number of execu-

tions in London, but agrees with Stow on the number sent to Kent. The smaller estimate, in these cases, is generally the right one.

<sup>2</sup> On Sunday the 11th of February, the day on which he exhorted

But, sooner or later, the Queen was determined that every one who could be convicted should die,<sup>1</sup> and beyond, and above them all, Elizabeth. Elizabeth's illness, which<sup>2</sup> had been supposed to have been assumed, was real, and as the feeling of the people towards her compelled the observance of the forms of justice and decency, physicians were sent from the Court to attend upon her. On the 18th of February they Feb. 18. reported that she could be moved with safety; and, escorted by Lord William Howard, Sir Edward Hastings, and Sir Thomas Cornwallis, she was brought by slow stages, of six or seven miles a day, to London.<sup>3</sup> Renard had described her to the Emperor as probably *enceinte* through some vile intrigue, and crushed with remorse and disappointment.<sup>4</sup>

To give the lie to all such slanders, when she entered the city, the Princess had the covering of her litter thrown back; she was dressed in white, her face was pale from her illness, but the expression was lofty, scornful, and magnificent.<sup>4</sup> Crowds followed her along

the Queen to severity from the pulpit, Gardiner wrote to Sir William Petre, 'To-morrow, at your going to the Tower, it shall be good ye be earnest with one little Wyatt there prisoner, who by all likelihood can tell all. He is but a bastard, and hath no substance, and it might stand with the Queen's Highness's pleasure there were no great account to be made whether ye pressed him to say truth by sharp punishment or promise of life.' — *MS. Domestica, Mary*, vol. m. State Paper Office. I

do not know to whom Gardiner referred in the words 'little Wyatt'

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. . *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> The Order of my Lady Elizabeth's Grace's Voyage to the Court: *MS. Mary, Domestica*, vol. m. State Paper Office.

<sup>3</sup> Renard to Charles V Feb-  
ruary 17: *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>4</sup> 'Pour desguysier le regret qu'elle a,' says Renard, unable to relinquish his first conviction.

the streets to Westminster. The Queen, when she arrived at Whitehall, refused to see her; a suite of rooms was assigned for her confinement in a corner of the palace, from which there was no egress except by passing the guard, and there, with short attendance, she waited the result of Gardiner's investigations. Wyatt, by vague admissions, had already partially compromised her, and, on the strength of his words, and the discovery of the copy of her letter in the packet of Noailles, she would have gone direct to the Tower, had the Lords permitted. The Emperor urged instant and summary justice both on her and on Courtenay; the irritation, should irritation arise, could be allayed afterwards by an amnesty.<sup>1</sup> The Lords, however, insisted obstinately on the forms of law, the necessity of witnesses and of a trial; and Renard watched their unreasonable humours with angry misgivings. It was enough, he said, that the conspiracy was undertaken in Elizabeth's interests; if she escaped now, the Queen would never be secure.<sup>2</sup> In fact, while Elizabeth lived, the Prince could not venture among the wild English spirits, and Charles was determined that the marriage should not escape him.

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard was instructed to exhort the Queen 'Que l'exécution et chastoy de ceulx qui le meritent se face tost, usant à l'endroit de Madame Elizabeth et de Cortenay comme elle verra convenir à sa seureté, pour après user de clémence en l'endroit de ceulx qu'il luy semblera, afin de tost reassurer

le surplus'—Charles V to Renard. *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv. pp 224, 225.

<sup>2</sup> Il est certain l'entreprise estoit en sa faveur. Et certes, sire, si pendant que l'occasion s'adonne elle ne la punyt et Cortenay, elle ne sera jamais assurée.—Renard to Charles V.: *Tytler*, vol. ii p. 311.

As soon as the rebellion was crushed, Egmont, attended by Count Horn, returned to complete his work. He brought with him the dispensations in regular form. He brought also a fresh and pressing entreaty that Elizabeth should be sacrificed. An opportunity had been placed in the Queen's hand, which her duty to the Church required that she should not neglect; and Egmont was directed to tell her that the Emperor, in trusting his son in a country where his own power could not protect him, relied upon her honour not to neglect any step essential to his security.<sup>1</sup> Egmont gave his message. The unhappy Queen required no urging; she protested to Renard, that she could neither rest nor sleep, so ardent was her desire for the Prince's safe arrival.<sup>2</sup> Courtenay, if necessary, she could kill; against him the proofs were complete; as to Elizabeth, she knew her guilt; the evidence was growing; and she would insist to the council that justice should be done,

About the marriage itself, the Lords had by this time agreed to yield. Courtenay's pretensions could no longer be decently advanced, and Gardiner, abandoning a hopeless cause, and turning his attention to the restoration of the Church, would consent to anything, if, on his side, he might emancipate the clergy from the control of the civil power, and re-establish per-

<sup>1</sup> Renard to the Emperor, March 8. *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> La quelle me respondit et affirme qu'elle ne dort ny repose

pour le sceuy elle tient de la seuré venue de son Altesse — Renard to the Emperor. TYLER, vol II

secution. Two factions, distinctly marked, were now growing in the council—the party of the statesmen, composed of Paget, Sussex, Arundel, Pembroke, Lord William Howard, the Marquis of Winchester, Sir Edward Hastings, and Cornwallis: the party of the Church, composed of Gardiner, Petre, Rochester, Gage, Jerningham, and Bourne. Divided on all other questions, the rival parties agreed only no longer to oppose the coming of Philip. The wavering few had been decided by the presents and promises which Egmont brought with him from Charles. Pensions of two thousand crowns had been offered to, and were probably accepted by, the Earls of Pembroke, Arundel, Derby, and Shrewsbury; pensions of a thousand crowns were given to Sussex, Darcy, Winchester, Rochester, Petre, and Cheyne; pensions of five hundred crowns to Southwell, Waldegrave, Inglefield, Wentworth, and Grey,<sup>1</sup> ten thousand crowns were distributed among the officers and gentlemen who had distinguished themselves against Wyatt. The pensions were large, but, as Renard observed, when Charles seemed to hesitate, several of the recipients were old, and would soon die; and, as to the rest, things in England were changing from day to day, and means of some kind would easily be found to put an early end to the payments.<sup>2</sup>

Unanimity having been thus secured, Renard, on the day of Egmont's arrival, demanded an audience of the Lords, and in the Queen's presence requested their

---

<sup>1</sup> *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv p. 267.

<sup>2</sup> Renard to Charles V., March 8. *Rolls House MSS.*

opinion whether the condition of England allowed the completion of the contract. The life of the Prince of Spain was of great importance to Europe; should they believe in their hearts that he would be in danger, there was still time to close the negotiation. The rebellion having broken out and having failed, the Lords replied that there was no longer any likelihood of open violence. Arundel hinted, again, that the Prince must bring his own cook and butler with him;<sup>1</sup> but he had nothing else to fear, if he could escape the French cruisers

These assurances, combined with the Queen's secret promises about Elizabeth, were held sufficient; and on the 6th of March, at three o'clock in the after-  
noon, the ambassadors were conducted by  
Pembroke into the presence chamber. The Queen, kneeling before the sacrament, called it to witness that, in consenting to the alliance with the Prince of Spain, she was moved by no carnal concupiscence, but only by her zeal for the welfare of her realm and subjects; and then, rising up, with the bystanders all in tears, she gave her hand to Egmont as Philip's representative. The blessing was pronounced by Gardiner, and the proxy marriage was completed.<sup>2</sup> The Prince was to be

March 6.

<sup>1</sup> Arundel nous dit qu'il convenoit que son alteze amena ses cuyssemers, sommeliers du cave, et autres officiers pour son bouche, que quant aux autres luy y pourvoyeroit selon les coustumes d'Angleterre — Renard to Charles V : *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Puis par la main de l'Evesque de Winchester les promesses et paro-

les de præsenti, furent dictes et prononcées intelligiblement par la dict Egmont seul et la dict Dame — Ibid Compare TYTLER, vol 11 p. 327 The great value of Mr Tytler's work is diminished by the many omissions which he has permitted himself to make in the letters which he has edited.

sent for without delay, and Southampton was chosen as the port at which he should disembark, 'being in the country of the Bishop of Winchester,' where the people were, for the most part, good Catholics.

Parliament was expected to give its sanction without further difficulty; the opposition of the country having been neutralized by the same causes which had influenced the council. The Queen, indeed, in going through the ceremony before consulting Parliament, though she had broken the promise which she made in the Guildhall, had placed it beyond their power to raise difficulties; but other questions were likely to rise which would not be settled so easily. She herself was longing to show her gratitude to Providence by restoring the authority of the Pope; and the Pope intended, if possible, to recover his first-fruits and Peter's pence, and to maintain the law of the Church which forbade the alienation of Church property.<sup>1</sup> The English laity were resolute on their side to keep hold of what they had got; and to set the subject at rest, and to prevent unpleasant discussions on points of theology, Paget, with his friends, desired that the session should last but a few days, and that two measures only should be

---

<sup>1</sup> Pole's first commission granted him powers only 'concordandi et transgendi cum possessoribus bonorum ecclesiasticorum, (restitutis prius si expedire videtur immobilibus per eos indebite detentis,) super fructibus male perceptis ac bonis mobilibus consumptis'—Commission granted to Reginald Pole WILKINS'S *Concilia*, vol. iv Cardinal Morone, writing to Pole as late as June, 1554, said that the Pope was still unable to resolve on giving his sanction to the alienation—BURNET'S *Collectanea*



brought forward; the first for the confirmation of the treaty of marriage, the second to reassert the validity of the titles under which the Church estates were held by their present owners. If the Queen consented to the last, her title of Head of the Church might be dropped informally, and allowed to fall into abeyance.<sup>1</sup>

Gardiner, however, saw in the failure of the insurrection an opportunity of emancipating the Church, and of extinguishing heresy with fire and sword.<sup>2</sup> He was preparing a bill to restore the ancient rigorous tyranny of the ecclesiastical courts; and by his own authority he directed that, in the writs for the Parliament, the summons should be to meet at Oxford,<sup>3</sup> where the conservatism of the country would be released from the dread of the London citizens. The spirit which, thirteen years before, had passed the Six Articles Bill by acclamation, continued to smoulder in the slow minds of the country gentlemen, and was blazing freely among the lately persecuted priests. The Bishop of Winchester had arranged in his imagination a splendid melodrama. The session was to begin on the 2nd of April; and the ecclesiastical bill was to be the first to be passed. On the 8th of March, Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer were sent down to the University to be tried before a Committee of Convocation which had already decided on its verdict; and the Fathers of the Reformation were either to recant or to suffer the flam-

<sup>1</sup> Paget to Renard TYTLER, Charles V. March 14 *Rolls House MSS*, partially printed by TYTLER.

<sup>2</sup> *Par feug et sang* — Renard to

<sup>3</sup> *Ibid.*

ing penalties of heresy in the presence of the Legislature, as the first-fruits of a renovated Church discipline.

Vainly Renard protested. In the fiery obstinacy of his determination, Gardiner was the incarnate expression of the fury of the ecclesiastical faction, smarting, as they were, under their long degradation, and under the irritating consciousness of those false oaths of submission which they had sworn to a power which they loathed. Once before, in the first reaction against Protestant excesses, the Bishop of Winchester had seen the Six Articles Bill carried—but his prey had then been snatched from his grasp. Now, embittered by fresh oppression, he saw his party once more in a position to revenge their wrongs when there was no Henry any longer to stand between them and their enemies. He would take the tide at the flood, forge a weapon keener than the last, and establish the Inquisition.<sup>1</sup> Paget swore it should not be.<sup>2</sup> Charles V. himself, dreading a fresh interruption to the marriage, insisted that this extravagant fervour should be checked,<sup>3</sup> and the Bishop of Arras, the scourge of the Netherlands, interceded for moderation in England. But Gardiner and the clergy were not to be turned from the hope of their hearts by the private alarms of the Imperialists; and in the heart of the Queen religious orthodoxy was Philip's solitary

<sup>1</sup> Establr forme d'Inquisition contre les hérétiques.—Renard to Charles V. : *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid.*

<sup>3</sup> La chaleur exorbitante.—Charles V. to Renard: *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv. p. 229.

rival. Renard urged her to be prudent in religion and cruel to the political prisoners. Gardiner, though eager as Renard to kill Elizabeth, would buy the privilege of working his will upon the Protestants by sparing Courtenay and Courtenay's friends. Mary listened to the worst counsels of each, and her distempered humour settled into a confused ferocity. So unwholesome appeared the aspect of things in the middle of March that, notwithstanding the formal contract, Renard almost advised the Emperor to relinquish the thought of committing his son among so wild a people.<sup>1</sup>

As opposition to extreme measures was anticipated in the House of Lords, as well as among the Commons, it was important to strengthen the Bench of Bishops. The Pope had granted permission without difficulty to fill the vacant Sees; and on the 1st of April six new prelates were consecrated at St Mary Overies, while Sir John Brydges and Sir John Williams of Thame were raised to the peerage.

The Protestants, it must be admitted, had exerted themselves to make Gardiner's work easy to him. On the 14th of March the wall of a house in Aldgate became suddenly vocal, and seventeen thousand persons were collected to hear a message from Heaven pronounced by an angel. When the people said 'God save Queen Mary,' the wall was silent; when they said 'God save Queen Elizabeth,' the wall said 'Amen!' When

---

<sup>1</sup> Pour estre la plus part des Angloys sans foy, sans loy, confuz en la religion, doubles, inconstans, et de nature jaloux et abhorrissans estrangers — *Rolls House MSS.*

they asked, 'What is the mass?' the wall said, 'It is idolatry.' As the nation was holding its peace, the stones, it seemed, were crying out against the reaction. But the angel, on examination, turned out to be a girl concealed behind the plaster. Shortly after, the inhabitants of Cheapside, on opening their shop windows in the morning, beheld on a gallows, among the bodies of the hanged insurgents, a cat in priestly robes, with crown shaven, the fore-paws tied over her head, and a piece of paper clipped round between them, representing the wafer.

More serious were the doings of a part of the late conspirators who had escaped to France. Peter Carew, when he left Weymouth, promised soon to return, and he was received at Paris with a cordiality that answered his warmest hopes. Determined, if possible, to prevent Philip from reaching England, the French had equipped every vessel which they possessed available for sea, and Carew was sent again to the coast of the Channel to tempt across into the French service all those who, like himself, were compromised in the conspiracy, or whose blood was hotter than their fathers'. Every day the Queen was chafed with the news of desertions to the dangerous rendezvous. Young men of honourable families, Pickerings, Strangwayses, Killegrews, Staffords, Stauntons, Tremaynes, Courtenays, slipped over the water, carrying with them hardy sailors from the western harbours. The French supplied them with arms, ships, and money; and fast-sailing, heavily-armed privateers, officered by these young adventurers in the

cause of freedom, were cruising on their own account, plundering Flemish and Spanish ships, and swearing that the Prince of Spain should set no foot on English shores.<sup>1</sup>

<sup>1</sup> The French and Calais correspondence in the State Paper Office contains a vast number of letters on this subject. The following extracts are specimens —

On the 24th of March Thomas Corry writes to Lord Grey that 'two hundred vessels be in readiness' in the French harbours 'There is lately arrived at Caen in Normandy Sir Peter Carew, Sir William Pickering, Sir Edward Courtenay, John Courtenay, Brian Fitzwilliam, and divers other English gentlemen. It is thought Sir Peter Carew shall have charge of the fleet. There be three ships of Englishmen, which be already gone to sea with Killebrew, which do report that they serve the King to prevent the coming of the King of Spain'—*Calais MSS*

On the 28th of March, Edgar Hormolden writes from Guisnes to Sir John Bourne 'The number of Sir Peter Carew's retinue increaseth in France by the confluence of such English *qui potius alioyus præclari facinoris quam artis bonæ famam quærent*, and they be so entreated there as it cannot be otherwise conjectured but that they practise with France. insomuch I have heard credible intelligence that the said Carew used this persuasion, of late,

to his companions. Are not we, said he, allied with Normandy, yea 'what ancient house is either there or in France, but we claim by them and they by us' why should we not rather embrace their love than submit ourselves to the servitude of Spain'—*Ibid.*

April 17, Dr Wotton writes in cypher from Paris to the Queen 'Yesterday, an Italian brought a letter to my lodging, and delivered it to a servant of mine, and went his way, so that I know not what he is. The effect of his letter is, that for because he taketh it to be the part of every good Christian man to further your godly purpose and Catholic doings, he hath thought good to advertise me that those fugitives of England say to their friends here that they have intelligence of great importance in England with some of the chiefest on the realm, which shall appear on the arrival of the Prince of Spain. Within few days they go to Normandy to embark themselves there, so strong, that, if they do not let the Prince of Spain to land, as they will attempt to do, yet they will not fail, by the help of them that have intelligence with them, to let him come to London.—*French MSS. bundle xi.*

The Queen indignantly demanded explanations of Noailles, and, through her ambassador at Paris, she required the French Government to seize 'her traitors,' and deliver them to her. Noailles, alarmed, perhaps, for his own security, suggested that it might be well to conceal Carew, and to affect to make an attempt to arrest him. But Henry, at once more sagacious and more bold, replied to the ambassador that 'he was not the Queen's hangman:' 'these men that you require,' he said, 'deny that they have conspired anything against the Queen; marry, they say they will not be oppressed by mine enemy, and that is no just cause why I should owe them ill-will.'<sup>1</sup> He desired Noailles, with quiet irony, to tell her Majesty 'that there was nothing in the existing treaties to forbid his accepting the services of English volunteers in the war with the Emperor: her Majesty might remember that he had invited her to make a new treaty, and that she had refused:' 'he would act by the just letter of his obligations'<sup>2</sup>

Would her subjects have permitted, the Queen would have replied by a declaration of war. As it was, she could only relieve herself with indignant words.<sup>3</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Wotton to the Queen *French MSS* bundle xi. State Paper Office.

<sup>2</sup> Noailles to the King of France. *Ambasades*, vol. iii.

<sup>3</sup> 'When the Ambassador replied that his master minded to do justly, her Grace remembering how those traitors be there aided, especially such of them as had con-

spired her death and were in arms in the field against her; and being not able to bear those words, so contrary to their doings, told the Ambassador that, for her own part, her Majesty minded simply and plainly to perform as she had promised, and might with safe conscience swear she ever meant so, but, for their part, her Grace would not swear so,

But Carew and his friends might depend on support so long as they would make themselves useful to France. Possessed of ships and arms, they were a constant menace to the Channel, and a constant temptation to the disaffected; and, growing bitter at last, and believing that Elizabeth's life was on the point of being sacrificed, they were prepared to support Henry in a second attempt to seize the Isle of Wight, and to accept the French competitor for the English crown in the person of the Queen of Scots.<sup>1</sup> Thus fatally the friends of the Reformation played into the hands of its enemies. By the solid mass of Englishmen the armed interference of France was more dreaded than even a Spanish sovereign; and the heresy became doubly odious which was tampering with the hereditary enemies of the realm. In London only the revolutionary spirit continued vigorous, and broke out perpetually in unexpected forms. At the beginning of March three hundred schoolboys met in a meadow outside the city walls: half were for Wyatt and for France, half for the Prince of Spain; and, not

and being those arrant traitors so entertained there as they be, she could not have found in her heart to have used, in like matter, the semblable part towards his master for the gain of two realms, and with those words she departed '—Gardiner to Wotton. *French MSS.* bundle xi.

<sup>1</sup> On the 29th of April Wotton wrote in a cypher to Mary, 'Towards the end of the summer the French King, by Peter Carew's

provocation, intendeth to land the rebels, with a number of Scots, in Essex, and in the Isle of Wight, where they mean to land easily, and either go on, if any number of Englishmen resort unto them, as they say many will, or else fortify themselves there. They counsel the French King to make war against your Highness in the right and title of the young Queen of Scots'—*MS.* Ibid.

all in play (for evidently they chose their sides by their sympathies), they joined battle, and fought with the fierceness of grown men. The combat ended in the capture of the representative of Philip, who was dragged to a gallows, and would have been hanged upon it, had not the spectators interfered.<sup>1</sup> The boys were laid hands upon. The youngest were whipped, the elder imprisoned. It was said that the Queen thought of gibbeting one of these innocents in real fact, for an example; or, as Noailles put it, as an expiation for the sins of the people.<sup>2</sup>

Over Elizabeth, in the mean time, the fatal net appeared to be closing; Lord Russell had received a letter for her from Wyatt, which, though the Princess declared that it had never been in her hands, he said that he had forwarded; and Wyatt himself was flattered with hopes of life if he would extend his confession. Renard carried his ingenuity farther; he called in the assistance of Lady Wyatt, and promised her that her husband should be spared; he even urged the Queen to gain over, by judicious leniency, a man whose apostasy would be a fresh disgrace to his cause, and who might be as useful as a servant as he had been dangerous as a foe.<sup>3</sup> Wyatt, being a man without solidity of heart,

<sup>1</sup> The execution was commenced in earnest. The Prince, says Noailles, 'fust souldainement mesné au gibet par ceulx de la part du Roy et de M Wyatt, et sans quelques hommes qui tout à propos y accoururent, ils l'eussent estranglé, ce que se peult clairement juger par les marques

qu'il en a et aura encores d'icy à long temps au col'—Noailles to Montmorency *Ambassades*, vol. iii

<sup>2</sup> Dict on qu'elle veult que l'ung d'eulx soit sacrifié pour tout le peuple—*Ibid*

<sup>3</sup> Ce qui faict juger à beaulcoup de gens que Wyatt ne mourra point,



showed signs of yielding to what was required of him ; but his revelations came out slowly, and to quicken his confession he was brought to his trial on the 15th of March. He pleaded guilty to the indictment, and he then said that Courtenay had been the instigator of the conspiracy ; he had written to Elizabeth, he said, to advise her to remove as far as possible from London, and Elizabeth had returned him a verbal message of thanks. This being not enough, he was sentenced to death ; but he was made to feel that he might still earn his pardon if he would implicate Elizabeth more deeply ; and though he said nothing definite, he allowed himself to drop vague hints that he could tell more if he pleased.<sup>1</sup>

mais que la dicte dame le rendra tant son obligé par ceste grace de luy rendre la vie qu'elle en pourra tirer beaulcoup de bons et grandes services Ce qui se faict par le moyen dudict ambassadeur de l'Empereur par l'advis duquel se conduisent aujourd'hui toutes les opinions d'icelle dame, et lequel traicte ceste composition avecques la femme dudict Wyatt à laquelle comme l'on dict il a asseuré la vie de son dict mari. — Noailles to the Constable of France, March 31. Renard's secrets were betrayed to Noailles by 'a corrupt secretary' of the Flemish embassy — Wotton to the Queen *French MSS.* bundle xi State Paper Office

<sup>1</sup> Noailles says, Wyatt a esté condamné à mourir, toutesfois il n'est encores executé et avant que luy prononcer sa sentence on luy

avoit promis tant de belles choses que vaincu par leu doulces paroles outre sa delibération, il a accusé beaulcoup de personnages et parlé au desavantage de mylord de Courtenay et de Madame Elizabeth. — Noailles to d'Oysel, March 29 The different parties were so much interested in Wyatt's confession, that his very last words are so wrapped round with contradictions, that one cannot tell what they were. It is certain, however, that he did implicate Elizabeth to some extent, it is certain, also, that he did not say enough for the purposes of the Court, and that the Court believed he could say more if he would, for, on Easter Sunday he communicated, and the Queen was distressed that he should have been allowed to partake, while his confession was incomplete As to Courtenay, Renard said he

At all events, however, sufficient evidence had been obtained in the opinion of the Court for the committal of the Princess to the Tower. On the day of Wyatt's trial, the council met, but separated without a resolution; on Friday, the 16th, Elizabeth was examined before them in person, and when she withdrew, Gardiner required that she should be sent to the Tower instantly. Paget, supported by Sussex, Hastings, and Cornwallis, said that there was no evidence to justify so violent a measure.<sup>1</sup> Which of you, then, said Gardiner, with dexterous ingenuity, will be responsible for the safe keeping of her person?

The guardian of Elizabeth would be exposed to a hundred dangers and a thousand suspicions; the Lords answered that Gardiner was conspiring their destruction. No one could be found courageous enough to undertake the charge, and they gave their reluctant consent to his demand. The same night Elizabeth's attendants were removed, a hundred soldiers were picketed in the garden below her window, and on Saturday morning the Marquis of Winchester and Lord Sussex waited on her to communicate her destination, and to attend her to a barge.

had communicated enough, 'mais quant à Elizabeth l'on ne peut encores tomber en preuves suffisantes pour les loys d'Angleterre contre elle.'—Renard to Charles V. . *Rolls House MSS.*

<sup>1</sup> Holmshed says that a certain lord exclaimed that there would be no safety for the realm until Eliza-

beth's head was off her shoulders; and either Holmshed himself, or his editor, wrote in the margin opposite, the words 'The wicked advice of Lord Paget.'—Renard describes so distinctly the attitude of Paget, that there can be no doubt whatever of the injustice of such a charge against him.

The terrible name of the Tower was like a death-knell; the Princess entreated a short delay till she could write a few words to the Queen; the Queen could not know the truth, she said, or else she was played upon by Gardiner. Alas! she did not know the Queen: Winchester hesitated; Lord Sussex, more generous, accepted the risk, and promised, on his knees, to place her letter in the Queen's hands.

The very lines traced by Elizabeth in that bitter moment may still be read in the State Paper Office,<sup>1</sup> and her hand was more than usually firm.

'If ever any one,' she wrote, 'did try this old saying that a King's word was more than another man's oath, I most humbly beseech your Majesty to verify it in me, and to remember your last promise, and my last demand, that I be not condemned without answer and due proof, which it seems that I now am: for that without cause proved I am by your council from you commanded to go unto the Tower, a place more wonted for a false traitor than a true subject: which, though I know I deserve it not, yet in the face of all this realm appears that it is proved; which I pray God that I may die the shamefullest death that any died, afore I may mean any such thing: and to this present hour I protest, afore God who shall judge my truth, whatsoever malice shall devise, that I never practised, counselled, nor consented to anything that might be prejudicial to your person any way, or dangerous to the State by any means. And

---

<sup>1</sup> *MS. Mary, Domestic*, vol. iv Printed by ELGIS, 2nd series, vol. u  
p. 255

I therefore humbly beseech your Majesty to let me answer afore yourself, and not suffer me to trust to your councillors; yea, and that afore I go to the Tower, if it is possible; if not, afore I be further condemned. Howbeit, I trust assuredly your Highness will give me leave to do it afore I go, for that thus shamefully I may not be cried out on, as now I shall be, yea, and without cause. Let conscience move your Highness to take some better way with me, than to make me be condemned in all men's sight, afore my desert known. Also, I most humbly beseech your Highness to pardon this my boldness, which innocency procures me to do, together with hope of your natural kindness, which I trust will not see me cast away without desert which what it is I would desire no more of God than that you truly knew, which thing, I think and believe, you shall never by report know, unless by yourself you hear. I have heard in my time of many cast away for want of coming to the presence of their prince; and in late days I heard my Lord of Somerset say that, if his brother had been suffered to speak with him, he had never suffered, but the persuasions were made to him so great, that he was brought in belief that he could not live safely if the admiral lived, and that made him give his consent to his death. Though these persons are not to be compared to your Majesty, yet I pray God as evil persuasions persuade not one sister against the other, and all for that they have heard false reports, and not<sup>t</sup> hearken to the truth known; therefore, once again kneeling with all humbleness of my heart, because I am not suf-

ferred to bow the knees of my body, I humbly crave to speak with your Highness, which I would not be so bold to desire if I knew not myself most clear, as I know myself most true. And as for the traitor Wyatt, he might peradventure write me a letter, but on my faith I never received any from him, and for the copy of my letter sent to the French King, I pray God confound me eternally if ever I sent him word, message, token, or letter by any means <sup>1</sup> and to this my truth I will stand to my death your Highness's most faithful subject that hath been from the beginning, and will be to the end.

'ELIZABETH

'I humbly crave but one word of answer from yourself.'

Had Elizabeth known the history of those words of the Queen to her, to which she appealed, she would have spared herself the trouble of writing this letter. Sussex fulfilled his promise, and during the delay the tide turned, and the barge could not pass London Bridge till the following day. The Queen could not venture to send the Princess through the streets; and in dread lest, at the last moment, her prey should be snatched from her, she answered the appeal only by storming at the bearer, and at his friends in the council. 'They

---

<sup>1</sup> As soon as Noailles learnt that his enclosure formed part of the case against Elizabeth, he came forward to acquit her of having furnished him with it, 'jurant et blasphemant

tous les sermens du monde pour la justification de la dicte Dame Elizabeth'—Renaud to Charles V, April 3 *Rolls House MSS*

were going no good way,' she said, 'for their lives they durst not have acted so in her father's time; she wished that he was alive and among them but for a single month.'<sup>1</sup>

Palm  
Sunday, Palm Sunday—the two Lords returned to  
March 18. Elizabeth to tell her that her letter had failed.

At nine o'clock the next morning—it was As she crossed the garden to the water she threw up her eyes to the Queen's window, but there was no sign of recognition. What do the Lords mean, she said, that they suffer me thus to be led into captivity? The barge was too deep to approach sufficiently near to the landing-place at the Tower to enable her to step upon the causeway without wetting her feet; it was raining too, and the petty inconveniences, fretting against the dreadful associations of the Traitors' Gate, shook her self-command. She refused to land; then sharply rejecting an offer of assistance, she sprung out upon the mud. 'Are all those harnessed men *thère* for me?' she said to Sir John Gage, who was waiting with the Tower guard. 'No, madam,' Gage answered. 'Yes,' she said, 'I know it is so; it needed not for me, being but a weak woman. I never thought to have come in here a prisoner,' she went on, turning to the soldiers; 'I pray you all good fellows and friends, bear me witness that I come in no traitor, but as true a woman to the Queen's Majesty as any is now living, and thereon will I take my death.' She threw herself down upon a

---

<sup>1</sup> RENARD.

wet stone; Lord Chandos begged her to come under shelter out of the rain: 'better sitting here than in a worse place,' she cried; 'I know not whither you will bring me.'

But it was not in Elizabeth's nature to protract a vain resistance; she rose, and passed on, and as she approached the room intended for her, the heavy doors along the corridor were locked and barred behind her. At the grating of the iron bolts the heart of Lord Sussex sank in him: Sussex knew the Queen's true feelings, and the efforts which were made to lash her into cruelty; 'What mean ye, my Lords,' he said to Chandos and Gage, 'what will you do?' 'she was a King's daughter, and is the Queen's sister; go no further than your commission, which I know what it is'<sup>1</sup>

The chief danger was of murder—of some swift desperate act which could not be undone. the Lords who had so reluctantly permitted Elizabeth to be imprisoned would not allow her to be openly sacrificed, or indeed permit the Queen to continue in the career of vengeance on which she had entered. The executions on account of the rebellion had not ceased even yet. In Kent, London, and in the midland counties, day after day, one, two, or more persons had been put to death, six gentlemen were, at that very moment, on their way to Maidstone and Rochester to suffer. The Lords, on the day of Elizabeth's committal, held a meeting while Gardiner was engaged elsewhere; they determined to

---

<sup>1</sup> Contemporary Narrative *Harleian MSS.* 419. *Chronicle of Queen Mary*, p. 71. HOLINSHED.

remonstrate, and, if necessary, to insist on a change of course, and Paget undertook to be the bearer of the message. He found Mary in her oratory after vespers; he told her that the season might remind a sovereign of other duties besides revenge; already too much blood had been shed; the noble house of Suffolk was all but destroyed; and he said distinctly that if she attempted any more executions, he and his friends would interfere; the hideous scenes had lasted too long, and, as an earnest of a return to mercy, he demanded the pardon of the six gentlemen.

Mary, as she lamented afterwards to Renard, was unprepared, she was pressed in terms which showed that those who made the request did not intend to be refused — and she consented<sup>1</sup> The six gentlemen escaped, and, following up this beginning, the council, in the course of the week, extorted from her the release of Northampton, Cobham, and one of his sons, with five others. In a report to the Emperor, Renard admitted that, if the Queen attempted to continue her course of justice, there would be resistance; and the party of the chancellor, being the weakest, would in that case be overwhelmed. It was the more necessary, therefore, that, by one means or another, Elizabeth should be disposed of The Queen had condescended to apologize to him for her second act of clemency, which she excused as being an Easter custom He said that he had replied, It was not for him to find fault, if her Majesty was

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, March 22, *Rolls House MSS*



pleased to show mercy at the holy season, but it was his duty to remind her that he doubted whether the Prince could be trusted with her

This argument never failed to drive Mary to madness, and, on the other side, Renard applied to Gardiner to urge despatch in bringing Elizabeth to trial as long as she lived, there was no security for the Queen, for the Prince, or for religion. Gardiner echoed the same opinion. If others, he said, would go to work as roundly as himself, all would be well <sup>1</sup>

In this condition of the political atmosphere Parliament assembled on the 2nd of April. The Oxford scheme had been relinquished as impracticable <sup>April 2</sup> The Lord Mayor informed the Queen that he would not answer for the peace of the city in the absence of the Court; the Tower might be surprised and the prisoners released, and to lose the Tower would be to lose the crown. The Queen said that she would

---

<sup>1</sup> Il me rephqua que vivant Elizabeth il n'a espoi à la tranquillité du Royaulme, que quant à luy si chascun alloit si rondement en besoyen comme il fait, les choses se porteroient mieux — Renard to the Emperor, April 3 *Rolls House MSS* From these dark plotters, what might not be feared? Holmshed says that, while Elizabeth was in the Tower, a writ was sent down for her execution devised, as was believed, by Gardiner, and that Lord Chandos (Sir John Brydges, the Lieutenant of the Tower) refused to put it in force. The story has been treated as a fable,

and in the form in which it is told by Holmshed, it was very likely untrue yet, in the presence of these infernal conversations, I think it highly probable that, as the hope of a judicial conviction grew fainter, schemes were talked of, and were perhaps tried, for cutting the knot in a decisive manner. In revolutionary times men feel that if to-day is theirs, to-morrow may be their enemies', and they are not particularly scrupulous. The anxious words of Sussex did not refer to the merely barring a prisoner's door

not leave London while her sister's fate was undetermined.<sup>1</sup> The Houses met, therefore, as usual, at Westminster, and the speech from the throne was read in Mary's presence by the chancellor.

Since the last Parliament, Gardiner said, the people of England had given proofs of unruly humour. The Queen was their undoubted sovereign, and a measure would be submitted to the Lords and Commons to declare, in some emphatic manner, her claim to her subjects' obedience.

Her Majesty desiring, further, in compliance with her subjects' wishes, to take a husband, she had fixed her choice on the Prince of Spain, as a person agreeable to herself and likely to be a valuable friend to the realm. The people, however, had insolently and ignorantly presumed to mutiny against her intentions, and, in her affection for the commonwealth, her Majesty had consented to submit the articles of the marriage to the approval of Parliament.

Again, her Majesty would desire them to take into their consideration the possible failure of the blood royal, and adopt necessary precautions to secure an undisturbed succession to the crown. It would be for the Parliament to decide whether the privilege which had been granted to Henry VIII of bequeathing the crown by will might not be, with propriety, extended to her present Majesty.<sup>2</sup>

Finally, and at great length, the chancellor spoke

---

<sup>1</sup> RENARD

<sup>2</sup> NOAILLES, vol III p 141

of religion. The late rebellion, he said, was properly a religious rebellion : it was the work of men who despised the sacraments, and were the enemies of truth, order, and godliness. A measure would be laid before the legislature for the better restraint of irregular license of opinion.

The marriage was to pass quietly. Those of the Lords and Commons who persevered in their disapproval were a small minority, and did not intend to appear<sup>1</sup> The bill, therefore, passed both Houses by the 12th of April.<sup>2</sup> The marriage articles were those originally offered by the Emperor, with the English clauses attached, and some explanatory paragraphs, that no room might be left for laxity of interpretation<sup>3</sup> Lord Bedford and Lord Fitzwalter had already gone to Plymouth, where a ship was in readiness to carry them to Spain They waited only till the parliamentary forms were completed, and immediately sailed Lord William Howard would go to sea with the fleet, at his earliest convenience, to protect the passage, and the Prince might be expected in England by the end of May. The bill for the Queen's authority was carried also without objection The forms of English law running only in the name of a king, it had been pretended that a queen could not be a lawful sovereign. A declaratory statute explained that the kingly prerogative was the same, whether vested in male or female.<sup>4</sup> Here,

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, April 7.

<sup>2</sup> I Mary, cap 11

<sup>3</sup> See the treaty of marriage between Philip and Mary in RYMER

<sup>4</sup> I Mary, cap 1

however, unanimity was at an end. The paragraph about the succession in the Queen's speech being obviously aimed at Elizabeth, produced such an irritation in the council, as well as in Parliament, that Renard expected it would end in actual armed conflict.<sup>1</sup>

From the day of Elizabeth's imprisonment Gardiner had laboured to extort evidence against her by fair means or foul.<sup>2</sup> She had been followed to the Tower by her servants. Sir John Gage desired that her food should be dressed by people of his own. The servants refused to allow themselves to be displaced,<sup>3</sup> and, to the distress of Renard, angry words had been addressed to Gage by Lord Howard, so that they could not be removed by force.<sup>4</sup>

The temptation of life having failed, after all, to induce Wyatt to enlarge his confession beyond his first acknowledgments, it was determined to execute him.

On the 11th of April he was brought out of his cell, and on his way to the scaffold he was confronted with Courtenay, to whom he said something, but how much or what it is impossible to ascertain.<sup>5</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Y a telle confusion que l'on n'attend sinon que la querelle se demesle par les armes et tumults.—Renard to Charles V, April 22

<sup>2</sup> Holinshed says, Edmund Tre-mayne was racked, and I have already quoted Gardiner's letter to Petre, suggesting the racking of 'little Wyatt'.

<sup>3</sup> Her Grace's cook said to him, My Lord, I will never suffer any stranger to come about her diet but

her own sworn men as long as I live.—*Harleian MSS* 419, and see HOLINSHED

<sup>4</sup> L'Admiral s'est coleré au grand chamberlain de la Roïne que a la garde de la dicte Elizabeth et luy a dit qu'elle feroit encores trancher tant de testes que luy et autres s'en repentiroient.—Renard to Charles V, April 7 *Rolls House MSS*

<sup>5</sup> Lord Chandos stated the same day in the House of Lords that he

Finding that his death was inevitable, he determined to make the only reparation which was any longer in his power to Elizabeth. When placed on the platform, after desiring the people to pray for him, lamenting his crime, and expressing a hope that he might be the last person to suffer for the rebellion, he concluded thus —

‘Whereas it is said abroad that I should accuse my Lady Elizabeth’s Grace and my Lord Courtenay; it is not so, good people, for I assure you neither they nor any other now yonder in hold or durance was privy of my rising or commotion before I began’<sup>1</sup>

The words, or the substance of them, were heard by every one. Weston, who attended as confessor, shouted, ‘Believe him not, good people! he confessed otherwise before the council.’ ‘That which I said then I said,’ answered Wyatt, ‘but that which I say now is true.’ The executioner did his office, and Wyatt’s work, for good or evil, was ended.

All that the Court had gained by his previous con-

threw himself at Courtenay’s feet and implored him to confess the truth. The sheriffs of London, on the other hand, said that he entreated Courtenay to forgive him for the false charges which he had brought against him and against Elizabeth — FOXE, vol vi. *Complete Chronicle of Queen Mary*, p 72, note

<sup>1</sup> So far the *Chronicle of Queen Mary*, Holinshed, Stow, and the narratives among the *Harleian MSS* essentially agree. But the chronicle followed by Stow makes Wyatt add,

‘As I have declared no less to the Queen’s council,’ whereas Foxe says that he admitted that he had spoken otherwise to the council, but had spoken untruly. Noailles tells all that was really important in a letter to d’Oysel. ‘M Wyatt eust la teste coupée, dischargeant avant que de mourir Madame Elizabeth et Courtenay qu’il avoit auparavant chargé de s’estre entendus en son entreprise sur promesses que l’on luy avoit faictes de luy sauver la vie’ — NOAILLES, vol iii

fessions was now more than lost. London rang with the story that Wyatt, in dying, had cleared Courtenay and Elizabeth.<sup>1</sup> Gardiner still thundered in the Star Chamber on the certainty of their guilt, and pilloried two decent citizens who had repeated Wyatt's words; but his efforts were vain, and the hope of a legal conviction was at an end. The judges declared that against Elizabeth there was now no evidence;<sup>2</sup> and, even if there had been evidence, Renard wrote to his master, that the Court could not dare to proceed further against her, from fear of Lord William Howard, who had the whole naval force of England at his disposal, and, in indignation at Elizabeth's treatment, might join the French and the exiles.<sup>3</sup> Perplexed to know how to dispose of her, the ambassador and the chancellor thought of sending her off to Pomfret Castle; doubtless, if once within Pomfret walls, to find the fate of the Second Richard there; but again the spectre of Lord Howard terrified them.

The threatened escape of her sister, too, was but the beginning of the Queen's sorrows. On the 17th of April Sir Nicholas Throgmorton was tried at the Guildhall for having been a party to the conspiracy. The

---

<sup>1</sup> Courtenay, however, certainly *was* guilty, and had Wyatt acquitted Elizabeth without naming Courtenay, his words would have been far more effective than they were. This, however, it was hard for Wyatt to do, as it would have been equivalent to a repetition of

his accusations.

<sup>2</sup> Les gens de loy ne treuvent matière pour la condamner — Renard to Charles V, April 22 TYTLER, vol II

<sup>3</sup> Ibid. And see a passage in the MS, which Mr Tytler has omitted.

confessions of many of the prisoners had more or less implicated Throgmorton. Cuthbert Vaughan, who was out with Wyatt, swore in the Court that Throgmorton had discussed the plan of the insurrection with him; and Throgmorton himself admitted that he had talked to Sir Peter Carew and Wyatt about the probability of a rebellion. He it was, too, who was to have conducted Courtenay to Andover on his flight into Devonshire; and the evidence<sup>1</sup> leaves very little doubt that he was concerned as deeply as any one who did not actually take up arms. Sir Nicholas, however, defended himself with resolute pertinacity, he fought through all the charges against him, and dissected the depositions with the skill of a practised pleader; and in the end the jury returned the bold verdict of 'Not guilty' Sir Thomas Bromley urged them to remember themselves. The foreman answered they had found the verdict according to their consciences.

Their consciences probably found less difficulty in the facts charged against Throgmorton than in the guilt to be attached to them. The verdict was intended as a rebuke to the cruelty with which the rebellion had been punished, and it was received as an insult to the Crown. The crowd, as Throgmorton left the Court, threw up their caps and shouted. The Queen was ill for three days with mortification,<sup>2</sup> and insisted that the jurors should be punished. They were arrested, and kept as

<sup>1</sup> It is printed at length in Ho-  
LINSHED | qu'elle a esté trois jours malade, et  
n'est encore bien d'elle — Renard to

<sup>2</sup> Que tant altère la dicte dame | Charles V. TYTLER, vol. II p. 374

prisoners till the following winter, when they were released on payment of the ruinous fine of 2000*l*. Throgmorton himself was seized again on some other pretext, and sent again to the Tower. The council, or Paget's party there, remonstrated against the arrest; they yielded, however, perhaps that they might make the firmer stand on more important matters.

Since Elizabeth could not be executed, the Court were the more anxious to carry the Succession Bill. Gardiner's first desire was that Elizabeth should be excluded by name; but Paget said that this was impossible<sup>1</sup>. As little could a measure be passed empowering the Queen to leave the crown by will, for that would be but the same thing under another form. Following up his purpose, notwithstanding, Gardiner brought out in the House of Lords a pedigree, tracing Philip's descent from John of Gaunt; and he introduced a bill to make offences against his person high treason. But at the second reading the important words were introduced, 'during the Queen's lifetime,'<sup>2</sup> the bill was read a third time, and then disappeared; and Paget had been the loudest of its opponents.<sup>3</sup>

Beaten on the succession, the chancellor, in spite of Renard's remonstrances, brought forward next his Re-

---

<sup>1</sup> He whom you wrote of comes to me with a sudden and strange proposal, that, since matters against Madame Elizabeth do not take the turn which was wished, there should be an Act brought into Parliament to disinherit her. I replied that I would give no consent to such a scheme—Paget to Renard. TYTLER, vol. II p. 382.

<sup>2</sup> *Lords' Journals* "

<sup>3</sup> Renard complains of Paget's conduct bitterly—Renard to Charles V., May 1. TYTLER, vol. II.



ligious Persecution Bills. The House of Commons went with him to some extent; and, to secure success in some form or other, he introduced three separate measures, either of which would answer his purpose—a Bill for the restoration of the Six Articles, a Bill to re-enact the Lollard Statute of Henry IV., *De Heretico Comburendo*, and a Bill to restore (in more than its original vigour) the Episcopal Jurisdiction. The Six Articles had so bad a name that the first bill was read once only, and was dropped; the two others passed the Commons,<sup>1</sup> and, on the 26th of April, the Bishops' Authority Bill came before the Lords. Lord Paget was so far in advance at his time that he could not hope to appeal with a chance of success to his own principles of judicious latitudinarianism; but he determined, if possible, to prevent Gardiner's intended cruelties from taking effect, and he spread an alarm that, if the bishops were restored to their unrestricted powers, under one form or other the holders of the abbey lands would be at their mercy. To allay the suspicion, another bill was carried through the Commons, providing expressly for the safety of the holders of those lands; but the tyranny of the Episcopal Courts was so recent, and the ecclesiastics had shown themselves uniformly so little capable of distinguishing between right and wrong when the interests of religion were at stake, that the jealousy, once aroused, could not be checked. The irritation became so hot and so general as to threaten again the most dangerous consequences;

---

<sup>1</sup> *Commons' Journals*

and Paget, pretending to be alarmed at the excitement which he had raised, urged Renard to use his influence with the Queen to dissolve Parliament.<sup>1</sup>

Renard, who was only anxious that the marriage should go off quietly, agreed in the desirableness of a dissolution. He told the Queen that the reform of religion must be left to a better opportunity; and the Prince could not, and should not, set his foot in a country where parties were for ever on the edge of cutting each other's throats. It was no time for her to be indulging Gardiner in humours which were driving men mad, and shutting her ears to the advice of those who could ruin her if they pleased; she must think first of her husband. The Queen protested that Gardiner was acting by no advice of hers; Gardiner, she said, was obstinate, and would listen to no one; she herself was helpless and miserable. But Renard was not to be moved by misery. At all events, he said, the Prince should not come till late in the summer, perhaps not till autumn, not, in fact, till it could be seen what form these wild humours would assume; summer was the dangerous time in England, when the people's blood was apt to boil<sup>2</sup>

Gardiner, however, was probably not acting without Mary's secret approbation. Both the Queen and the minister especially desired, at that moment, the passing

---

<sup>1</sup> Paget to Renard, TYTLER, vol II p 382. And compare Renard's correspondence with the Emperor during the month of April—*Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> Pour ce qui ordinairement les humeurs des Angloys bouillent plus en l'esté que en autre temps.

of the Heresy Bill, and Renard was obliged to content himself with a promise that the dissolution should be as early as possible. Though Parliament could not meet at Oxford, a committee of Convocation had been sitting there, with Dr Weston, the adulterous Dean of Windsor, for a president. Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer had been called upon to defend their opinions, which had been pronounced false and damnable. They had been required to recant, and, having refused, they were sentenced, so far as the power of the court extended, to the punishment of heretics. April 20

Cranmer appealed from the judgment to God Almighty, in whose presence he would soon stand.

Ridley said the sentence would but send them the sooner to the place where else they hoped to go.

Latimer said, 'I thank God that my life has been prolonged that I may glorify God by this kind of death.'

Hooper, Ferrars, Coverdale, Taylor, Philpot, and Sandars, who were in the London prisons, were to have been simultaneously tried and sentenced at Cambridge. These six, however, drew and signed a joint refusal to discuss their faith in a court before which they were to be brought as prisoners; and for some reason the proceedings against them were suspended. But whether they refused or consented was of little moment to the Bishop of Winchester; they were in his hands—he could try them when he pleased. A holocaust of heresiarchs was waiting to be offered up, and before a faggot could be lighted, the necessary powers had to be obtained from Parliament.

The Bishop, therefore, was determined, if possible, to obtain those powers. He had the entire bench of prelates on his side; and Lord Howard, the Earl of Bedford, and others of the lay lords who would have been on the side of humanity, were absent. The opposition had to be conducted under the greatest difficulties. Paget, however, fought the battle, and fought it on broad grounds: the Bishops' bill was read twice;

May 1. on the third reading, on the 1st of May, he

May 2 succeeded in throwing it out: the Lollards' bill came on the day after, and here his difficulty was far greater; for toleration was imperfectly understood by Catholic or Protestant, and many among the peers, who hated the bishops, equally hated heresy. Paget, however, spoke out his convictions, and protested against the iniquity of putting men to death for their opinions.<sup>1</sup> The bill was read a first time on the day on which it was introduced; on the 4th of May it was read again,<sup>2</sup> but it went no further. The next day Parliament was dissolved. The peers assured the Queen that they had no desire to throw a shield over heresy; the common law existed independent of statute, and the common law prescribed punishments which could still be inflicted.<sup>3</sup> But, so long as heresy was undefined, Ana-

<sup>1</sup> Quant l'on a parlé de la peyne des hérétiques, il a sollicité les sieurs pour non y consentir, y donner lieu à peyne de mort — Renard to Charles V, May 1

<sup>2</sup> *Lords' Journals*

<sup>3</sup> There can, I think, be no

doubt that it was this which the peers said. The statute of Henry IV was not passed, yet the Queen told Renard, "que le peyne antienne contre les hérétiques fut agréée par toute la noblesse, et qu'ilz farent dire expressement et publiquement

baptists, Socinians, or professors of the more advanced forms of opinion, could alone fall within the scope of punishments merely traditional.

Renard wrote that the tempers of men were never worse than at that moment. In the heat of the debate, on the 28th of April, Lord Thomas Grey was executed as a defiance to the liberal party. Gardiner persuaded the Queen, perhaps not without reason, that he was himself in danger of being arrested by Paget and Pembroke,<sup>1</sup> and an order was sent to the Lieutenant of the Tower that if the chancellor was brought thither under warrant of the council only, he was not to be received.<sup>2</sup>

On the other hand, twelve noblemen and gentlemen undertook to stand by Mary if she would arrest Paget and Pembroke. The chancellor, Sir Robert Rochester,

qu'ilz entendoient l'hérésie estre extirpée et punie' The chancellor informed Renard that, 'Although the Heresy Bill was lost, there were penalties of old standing against heretics which had still the form of law, and could be put in execution' And, on the 31d of May, the privy council directed the judges and the Queen's learned counsel to be called together, and their opinions demanded, 'what they think in law her Highness may do touching the cases of Cranmer, Ridley, Latimer, being already, by both the Universities of Oxford and Cambridge, judged to be obstinate heretics, which matter is the rather to be consulted upon, for that the said Cranmer is already at-

tainted' — *MS Privy Council Register*. The answer of the judges I have not found, but it must have been unfavourable to the intentions of the Court. Joan Bocher was burnt under the common law, for her opinions were condemned by all parties in the Church, and were looked upon in the same light as witchcraft, or any other profession definitely devilish. But it was difficult to treat as heresy, under the common law, a form of belief which had so recently been sanctioned by Act of Parliament.

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, May 13  
*Rolls House MSS*

<sup>2</sup> NOAILLES

and the Marquis of Winchester discussed the feasibility of seizing them ; but Lord Howard and the Channel fleet were thought to present too formidable an obstacle. With the Queen's sanction, however, they armed in secret. It was agreed that, on one pretence or another, Derby, Shrewsbury, Sussex, and Huntingdon should be sent out of London to their counties. Elizabeth, if it could be managed, should be sent to Pomfret, as Gardiner had before proposed ; Lord Howard should be kept at sea ; and, if opportunity offered, Arundel and Paget might, at least, be secured.<sup>1</sup>

But Pomfret was impossible, and vexation thickened on vexation. Lord Howard was becoming a bugbear at the Court. Report now said that two of the Staffords, whom he had named to command in the fleet, had joined the exiles in France, and for Lord Howard himself the Queen could feel no security, if he was provoked too far. She was haunted by a misgiving that, while the Prince was under his convoy, he might declare against her, and carry him prisoner to France, or if Howard could himself be trusted, his fleet could not. On the eve of sailing for the coast of Spain, a mutiny broke out at Plymouth. The sailors swore that if they were forced on a service which they detested, both the admiral and the Prince should rue it. Lord Howard, in reporting to the Queen the men's misconduct, said that his own life was at her Majesty's disposal, but he advised her to reconsider the prudence of placing the

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V, May 13 : *TITLER*, vol. II

Prince in their power Howard's own conduct, too, was far from reassuring. A few small vessels had been sent from Antwerp to join the English fleet, under the Flemish admiral Chappelle. Chappelle complained that Howard treated him with indifference, and insulted his ships by 'calling them cockle-shells' If the crews of the two fleets were on land anywhere together, the English lost no opportunity of making a quarrel, 'hustling and pushing' the Flemish sailors; and, as if finally to complete the Queen's vexation, Lord Bedford wrote that the Prince declined the protection of her subjects on his voyage, and that his departure was postponed for a few weeks longer

The fleet had to remain in the Channel; it could not be trusted elsewhere, and the necessity of releasing Elizabeth from the Tower was another annoyance to the Queen. A confinement at Woodstock was the furthest stretch of severity that the country would, for the present, permit. On the 19th of May, Elizabeth was taken up the river. The Princess believed herself that she was being carried off *tanquam ovis*, as she said—as a sheep for the slaughter. But the world thought that she was set at liberty, and as her barge passed under the Bridge Mary heard, with indignation, from the palace windows, three salvoes of artillery fired from the Steelyard, as a sign of the joy of the people.<sup>2</sup> A letter

<sup>1</sup> Les ont provoqué à débatz, les cerrans et poulans —Renard to Charles V. TYNLER, vol II p 413

<sup>2</sup> Samedy dermier Elizabeth fut

tnée de la Tour et menée a Richmond, et dois ledict Richmond l'on l'a cōduict à Woodstock pour y estre gaidée surement jusques l'on

from Philip would have been a consolation to her in the midst of the troubles which she had encountered for his sake; but the languid lover had never written a line to her; or, if he had written, not a line had reached her hand; only a ship which contained despatches from him for Renard had been taken, in the beginning of May, by a French cruiser, and the thought that precious words of affection had, perhaps, been on their way to her and were lost, was hard to bear.

In vain she attempted to cheer her spirits with the revived ceremonials of Whitsuntide. She marched, day after day, in procession, with canopies and banners, and bishops in gilt slippers, round St James's, round St Martin's, round Westminster<sup>1</sup>. Sermons and masses alternated now with religious feasts, now with *Diriges* for her father's soul. But all was to no purpose; she could not cast off her anxieties, or escape from the shadow of her subjects' hatred, which clung to her steps. Insolent pamphlets were dropped in her path and in the offices of Whitehall; she trod upon them in the passages of the palace, they were placed by mysterious hands in the sanctuary of her bedroom. At length, chafed with a thousand irritations, and craving for a husband who showed so small anxiety to come to her, she fled from

la fasse aller à Pomfret Et s'est  
resjouy le peuple de sa departye,  
pensant qu'elle fut en liberté, et  
passant par devant la Maison des  
Stillyards ilz tirerent trois coups  
d'artillerie en signe d'allégreie, que  
la reyne et son conseil ont prins'a

desplaisir et regret, et estimons que  
l'on en fera demonstration — Renard  
to Charles V *Grangelle Papers*,  
vol 1v

<sup>1</sup> Machyn's Diary, STRYPE'S  
*Memorials of the Reformation*



London, at the beginning of June, to Richmond June

The trials of the last six months had begun to tell upon Mary's understanding she was ill with hysterical longings, ill with the passions which Gardiner had kindled and Paget disappointed. A lady who slept in her room told Noailles that she could speak to no one without impatience, and that she believed the whole world was in a league to keep her husband from her. She found fault with every one—even with the Prince himself. Why had he not written? she asked again and again. Why had she never received one courteous word from him? If she heard of merchants or sailors arriving from Spain, she would send for them and question them, and some would tell her that the Prince was said to have little heart for his business in England, others terrified her with tales of fearful fights upon the seas, and others brought her news of the French squadrons that were on the watch in the Channel<sup>1</sup>. She would start out of her sleep at night, picturing a thousand terrors, and among them one to which all else were insignificant, that her Prince, who had taken such wild possession of her imagination, had no answering feeling

<sup>1</sup> Le doute luy est souvent augmentée par plusieurs marchands maritimes et autres malcontents de son mariage qui venans de France et d'Espagne luy desguisent et luy controuvent un infinité de nouvelles estranges, les uns du peu de volonté

que le prince a de venir par deçà, les autres d'avoir ouy et entendus combats sur la mer, et plusieurs d'avoir descouvert grand nombre de vaisles Françoises avec grand appareil — Noailles to, the King of France — *Ambassades*, vol iii p 253

for herself—that, with her growing years and wasted figure, she could never win him to love her<sup>1</sup>

‘The unfortunate Queen,’ wrote Henry of France, ‘will learn the truth at last. She will wake too late, in misery and remorse, to know that she has filled the realm with blood for an object which, when she has gained it, will bring nothing but affliction to herself or to her people.’<sup>2</sup>

But the darkest season has its days of sunshine, and Mary’s trials were for the present over. If the statesmen were disloyal, the clergy and the Universities appreciated her services to the Church, and, in the midst of her trouble, Oxford congratulated her on having been raised up for the restoration of life and light to England<sup>3</sup>. More pleasant than this pleasant flattery was the arrival, on the 19th of June, of the Marquis de las Navas from Spain, with the news that by that time the Prince was on his way.

It was even so. Philip had submitted to his un-

<sup>1</sup> L'on m'a dict que quelques heures de la nuict elle entre en telle reserve de ses amours et passions que bien souvent elle se met hors de soy, et croy que la plus grande occasion de sa douleur vient du desplaisir qu'elle a de veoir sa personne si diminuée et ses ans multiplier en telle nombre qu'ilz luy courent tous les jours à grande interest — Noailles to the King of France *Ambassades*, vol. III. p. 252

<sup>2</sup> Ibid p. 255

<sup>3</sup> Nuper cum litterarum studia

pene extincta jacerent cum salus omnium exigua spe dubiâque penderet quis non fortunæ incertos eventus extimescebat? Quis non ingemuit et arsit dolore? Pars studia deserere cogeantur, pars huc illucque quovis momento rapiantur, nec ulli certus ordo suumve propositum diu constabat — The happy change of the last year was then contrasted with proper point and prolixity — The University of Oxford to the Queen *MS Domestic, Mary*,

vol. IV

welcome destiny, and six thousand troops being required pressingly by the Emperor in the Low Countries, they attended him, for his escort. A paper of advices was drawn for the Prince's use by Renard, directing him how to accommodate himself to his barbarous fortune. Neither soldiers nor mariners would be allowed to land. The noblemen, therefore, who formed his retinue, were advised to bring Spanish musketeers, disguised in liveryes, in the place of pages and lacqueys. Their arms could be concealed amidst the baggage. The war would be an excuse for the noblemen being armed themselves, and the Prince, on landing, should have a shirt of mail under his doublet. As to manner, he must endeavour to be affable: he would have to hunt with the young lords, and to make presents to them, and, with whatever difficulty, he must learn a few words of English, to exchange the ordinary salutations. As a friend, Renard recommended Paget to him, he would find Paget 'a man of sense'.<sup>1</sup>

Philip, who was never remarkable for personal courage, may be pardoned for having come reluctantly to a country where he had to bring men-at-arms for servants, and his own cook for fear of being poisoned. The sea, too, was hateful to him, for he suffered miserably from sickness. Nevertheless, he was coming, and with him such a retinue of gallant gentlemen as the world has rarely seen together. The Marquis de los Valles, Gonzaga, d'Aguiar, Medina Celi, Antonio de

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Homme d'esprit' — Instruc- | d'Espagne *Granvelle Papers*, vol  
tous données à Philippe, Prince | iv p 267

Toledo, Diego de Mendoza, the Count de Feria, the Duke of Alva, Count Egmont, and Count Horn—men whose stories are written in the annals of two worlds—some in letters of glorious light, some in letters of blood which shall never be washed out while the history of mankind survives. Whether for evil or good, they were not the meek innocents for whom Renard had at one time asked so anxiously

In company with these noblemen was Sir Thomas Gresham, charged with half a million of money in bullion, out of the late arrivals from the New World; which the Emperor, after taking security from the London merchants, had lent the Queen, perhaps to enable her to make her marriage palatable by the restoration of the currency.<sup>1</sup>

Thus preciously freighted, the Spanish fleet, a hundred and fifty ships, large and small, sailed from Corunna at the beginning of July. The voyage was weary and wretched. The sea-sickness prostrated both the Prince and the troops, and to the sea-sickness was added the terror of the French—a terror, as it happened, needless, for the English exiles, by whom the Prince was to have been intercepted, had, in the last few weeks, melted away from the French service, with the exception of a few who were at Scilly. Sir Peter Carew, for some unknown reason, had written to ask for his pardon, and had gone to Italy;<sup>2</sup> but the change was recent and

---

<sup>1</sup> Gresham's 'Correspondence' in procession in carts through the  
*Flanders MSS.* State Paper Office London streets  
 The bullion was afterwards drawn | <sup>2</sup> Wotton's Correspondence. *French*

unknown, and the ships stole along in silence, the orders of the Prince being that not a salute should be fired to catch the ear of an enemy.<sup>1</sup> At last, on the 19th of July, the white cliffs of Freshwater were sighted, Lord Howard lay at the Needles with the English fleet; and on Friday, the 20th, at three o'clock in the afternoon, the flotilla was safely anchored in Southampton Water July 20

The Queen was on her way to Winchester, where she arrived the next morning, and either in attendance upon her, or waiting at Southampton, was almost the entire peerage of England. Having made up their minds to endure the marriage, the Lords resolved to give Philip the welcome which was due to the husband of their sovereign, and in the uncertain temper of the people, their presence might be necessary to protect his person from insult or from injury.

It was an age of glitter, pomp, and pageantry; the anchors were no sooner down, than a barge was in readiness, with twenty rowers in the Queen's colours of green and white; and Arundel, Pembroke, Shrewsbury, Derby, and other lords went off to the vessel which carried the royal standard of Castile. Philip's natural manner was cold and stiff, but he had been schooled into graciousness. Exhausted by his voyage, he accepted delightedly the instant invitation to go on shore,

MSS State Paper Office The title of the Queen of Scots was, perhaps, the difficulty, or Carew may have felt that he could do nothing of real consequence, while he might

increase the difficulty of protecting Elizabeth.

<sup>1</sup> Noailles to the King of France, July 23 *Ambassades*, vol. iii.

and he entered the barge accompanied by the Duke of Alva. A crowd of gentlemen was waiting to receive him at the landing-place. As he stepped out—not perhaps without some natural nervousness<sup>1</sup> and sharp glances round him—the whole assemblage knelt. A salute was fired from the batteries, and Lord Shrewsbury presented him with the order of the Garter<sup>1</sup>. An enthusiastic eye-witness thus describes Philip's appearance:—

‘Of visage he is well favoured, with a broad forehead and grey eyes, straight-nosed and of manly countenance. From the forehead to the point of his chin his face groweth small. His pace is princely, and gait so straight and upright as he loseth no inch of his height; with a yellow head and a yellow beard, and thus to conclude, he is so well proportioned of body, arm, leg, and every other limb to the same, as nature cannot work a more perfect pattern, and, as I have learned, of the age of 28 years. His Majesty I judge to be of a stout stomach, pregnant-witted, and of most gentle nature’<sup>2</sup>.

Sir Anthony Brown approached, leading a horse with a saddle-cloth of crimson velvet, embroidered with

<sup>1</sup> Antiquaries dispute whether Philip received the Garter on board his own vessel or after he came on shore. Lord Shrewsbury himself settles the important point. ‘I, the Lord Steward,’ Shrewsbury wrote to Wotton, ‘at his coming to land, presented the Garter to him’—*French MSS Mary*, State Paper

Office

<sup>2</sup> John Elder to the Bishop of Caithness *Queen Jane and Queen Mary*, appendix 10. Elder adds that his stature was about that of a certain ‘John Hume, my Lord of Jedward’s kinsman,’ which does not help our information. Philip, however, was short.

gold and pearls. He presented the steed with a Latin speech, signifying that he was his Highness's Master of the Horse, and Philip mounting, went direct to Southampton church, the English and Spanish noblemen attending bareheaded, to offer thanks for his safe arrival. From the church he was conducted to a house which had been furnished from the royal stores for his reception. Everything was, of course, magnificent. Only there had been one single oversight. Wrought upon the damask hangings, in conspicuous letters, were observed the ominous words, 'Henry, by the Grace of God, King of England, France, and Ireland, and Supreme Head of the Church of England'<sup>1</sup>

Here the Prince was to remain till Monday to recover from his voyage; perhaps to ascertain, before he left the neighbourhood of his own fleet, the humour of the barbarians among whom he had arrived. In Latin (he was unable to speak French) he addressed the Lords on the causes which had brought him to England, the chief among those causes being the manifest will of God, to which he felt himself bound to submit. It was noticed that he never lifted his cap in speaking to any one,<sup>2</sup> but he evidently endeavoured to be courteous. With a stomach unrecovered from the sea, and disdaining precautions, he sat down on the night of his arrival to a public English supper; he even drained a tankard of ale, as an example, he said, to his Spanish companions<sup>3</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> BAOARDO

<sup>2</sup> Non havendo mai levato la berretta a persona — BAOARDO

<sup>3</sup> NOAILLES

The first evening passed off well, and he retired to seek such rest as the strange land and strange people, the altered diet, and the firing of guns, which never ceased through the summer night, would allow him.

Another feature of his new country awaited

July 21

Philip in the morning; he had come from the sunny plains of Castile; from his window at Southampton he looked out upon a steady downfall of July rain. Through the cruel torrent<sup>1</sup> he made his way to the church again to mass, and afterwards Gardiner came to him from the Queen. In the afternoon the sky cleared, and the Duchess of Alva, who had accompanied her husband, was taken out in a barge upon Southampton Water. Both English and Spaniards exerted themselves to be mutually pleasing, but the situation was not of a kind which it was desirable to protract. Six thousand Spanish troops were cooped in the close uneasy transports, forbidden to land lest they should provoke the jealousy of the people; and when,

July 22

on Sunday, his Highness had<sup>2</sup> to undergo a public dinner, in which English servants only were allowed to attend upon him, the Castilian lords, many of whom believed that they had come to England on a bootless errand, broke out into murmurs<sup>2</sup>

July 23

Monday came at last, the rain fell again, and the wind howled. The baggage was sent

<sup>1</sup> Crudele pioggia —BAGARDO

<sup>2</sup> La Domenica Mattina se n' ando a messa et tornato a casa mangio in publico servito da gli officiali che gli haveva data la Reina con mala sa-

tisfazione degli Spagnuoli, i quali dubitando che la cosa non andasse a lungo, mormoravano assai tra di loro —BAGARDO



forward in the morning in the midst of the tempest Philip lingered in hopes of a change ; but no change came, and after an early dinner the trumpet sounded to horse. Lords, knights, and gentlemen had thronged into the town, from curiosity or interest, out of all the counties round. Before the Prince mounted it was reckoned, with uneasiness, that as many as four thousand cavaliers, under no command, were collected to join the procession.

A grey gelding was led up for Philip, he wrapped himself in a scarlet cloak, and started to meet his bride—to complete a sacrifice the least congenial, perhaps, which ever policy of state extracted from a prince.

The train could move but slowly. Two miles beyond the gates a drenched rider, spattered with chalk mud, was seen galloping towards them, on reaching the Prince he presented him with a ring from the Queen, and begged his Highness, in her Majesty's name, to come no further. The messenger could not explain the cause, being unable to speak any language which Philip could understand, and visions of commotion instantly presented themselves, mixed, it may be, with a hope that the bitter duty might yet be escaped. Alva was immediately at his master's side ; they reined up, and were asking each other anxiously what should next be done, when an English lord exclaimed in French, with courteous irony, ' Our Queen, sire, loves your Highness so tenderly that she would not have you come to her in such wretched weather ' <sup>1</sup> The hope, if hope there had

<sup>1</sup> ' Sire, la Nostra Reina ama tanto V'Altezza vostra ch'ella non vo-

been, died in its birth ; before sunset, with drenched garments and draggled plume, the object of so many anxieties arrived within the walls of Winchester

To the cathedral he went first, wet as he was. Whatever Philip of Spain was entering upon, whether it was a marriage or a massacre, a state intrigue or a midnight murder, his opening step was ever to seek a blessing from the holy wafer. He entered, kissed the crucifix, and knelt and prayed before the altar ; then taking his seat in the choir, he remained while the choristers sang a *Te Deum laudamus*, till the long aisles grew dim in the summer twilight, and he was conducted by torchlight to the Deanery

The Queen was at the Bishop's palace, but a few hundred yards distant. Philip, doubtless, could have endured the postponement of an interview till morning ; but Mary could not wait, and the same night he was conducted into the presence of his haggard bride, who now, after a life of misery, believed herself at the open gate of Paradise. Let the curtain fall over the meeting, let it close also over the wedding solemnities which followed with due splendour two days later. There are scenes in life which we regard with pity too deep for words. The unhappy Queen, unloved, unlovable, yet with her parched heart thirsting for affection, was flinging herself upon a breast to which an iceberg was warm ; upon a man to whom love was an unmeaning word, except as the most brutal of passions. For a few months

---

rebbe che pigliasse disagio di cammar per tempi così tristi '—BACCARDO.

she created for herself an atmosphere of unreality. She saw in Philip the ideal of her imagination, and in Philip's feelings the reflex of her own, but the dream passed away—her love for her husband remained, but remained only to be a torture to her. With a broken spirit and bewildered understanding, she turned to Heaven for comfort, and, instead of heaven, she saw only the false roof of her creed painted to imitate and shut out the sky.

The scene will change for a few pages to the Low Countries. Charles V. more than any other person was responsible for this marriage. He had desired it not for Mary's sake, not for Philip's sake, not for religion's sake; but that he might be able to assert a decisive preponderance over France; and, to gain his end, he had already led the Queen into a course which had forfeited the regard of her subjects. She had murdered Lady Jane Grey at the instigation of his ambassador, and under the same influence she had done her best to destroy her sister. Yet Charles, notwithstanding, was one of nature's gentlemen. If he was unscrupulous in the sacrifice of others to his purposes, he never spared himself; and in the days of his successes he showed to less advantage than now, when, amidst failing fortunes and ruined health, his stormy career was closing.

In the spring he had been again supposed to be dying. His military reputation had come out tarnished from his failure at Metz, and while he was labouring with imperfect success to collect troops for a summer's campaign, Henry of France, unable to prevent the

English marriage, was preparing to strike a blow so heavy, as should enable him to dictate peace on his own terms before England was drawn into the quarrel.

In June two French armies took the field. Pietro Strozzi advanced from Piedmont into Tuscany. Henry himself, with Guise, Montmorency, and half the peerage of France, entered the Low Countries, sweeping all opposition before him. First Marienbourg fell, then Dinant fell, stormed with especial gallantry. The young French nobles were taught that they must conquer or die. a party of them flinched in the breach at Dinant, and the next morning Henry sat in judgment upon them sceptre in hand, some were hanged, the rest degraded from their rank. 'and whereas one privilege of the gentlemen of France was to be exempt from *taylles* payable to the Crown, they were made *tayllable* as any other villains.'<sup>1</sup>

From Dinant the French advanced to Namur. When Namur should have fallen, Brussels was the next aim; and there was nothing, as it seemed, which could stop them. The Imperial army under the Prince of Savoy could but hover, far outnumbered, on their skirts. The reinforcements from Spain had not arrived, and a battle lost was the loss of Belgium.

In the critical temper of England, a decisive superiority obtained by France would be doubly dangerous; and Charles, seeing Philibert perplexed into uncertain movements which threatened misfortune, disregarding

---

<sup>1</sup> Wotton to the Queen, cypher. *French MSS. Mary*, bundle xi

the remonstrances of his physicians, his ministers, and his generals, started from his sick bed, flew to the head of his troops, and brought them to Namur, in the path of the advancing French. Men said that he was rushing upon destruction; that the headstrong humour which had already worked him so heavy injury was again dragging him into ruin.<sup>1</sup> But fortune had been disarmed by the greatness with which Charles had borne up against calamity, or else his supposed rashness was the highest military wisdom. Before Henry came up he had seized a position at an angle of the Meuse, where he could defend Namur, and could not be himself attacked, except at a disadvantage. The French approached only to retire, and, feeling themselves unable to force the Imperial lines, commenced a retreat. Charles followed cautiously. An attack on Renty

---

<sup>1</sup> 'You shall understand that the Emperor hath suddenly caused his army to march towards Namur, and that himself is gone after in person, the deliberation whereof, both of the one and the other, is against the advice of his council, and all other men to the staying of him. Wherein Albeit the Duke of Savoy, John Baptiste Castaldo, Don Hernando de Gonzaga, and Andrea Doria have done their best, as well by letter as by their coming from the camp to this town, *viva voce* alleging to him the puissance of his enemy, the un-ability as yet of his army to encounter with them, the danger of the chopping of them between him and this town, the hazard of himself, his estate, and all these countries, in case, being driven to fight, their army should have an overthrow, in the preservation whereof standeth the safety of the whole, and twenty other arguments. Yet was there no remedy, but forth he would, and commanded them that they should march *sans plus rephiquer*. His headiness hath often put him to great hindrance, specially at Metz, and another time at Algiers. This enterprise is more dangerous than they both. God send him better fortune than *multi ominantur*.'—Mason to Petie, Brussels, July 10, German MSS Mary, bundle 16, State Paper Office.

brought on an action in which the French claimed the victory; but the Emperor held his ground, and the town could not be taken; and Henry's army, from which such splendid results had been promised, fell back on the frontier and dispersed. The voices which had exclaimed against the Emperor's rashness were now as loud in his praise, and the disasters which he was accused of provoking, it was now found that he only had averted.<sup>1</sup> Neither the French nor the Imperialists, in their long desperate struggle, can claim either approval or sympathy, the sufferings which they inflicted upon mankind were not the less real, the selfishness of their rivalry none the less reprehensible, because the disunion of the Catholic powers permitted the Reformation to establish itself. Yet, in this perplexed world, the deeds of men may be without excuse, while, nevertheless, in the men themselves there may be something to love, and something more to admire

---

<sup>1</sup> 'The Emperor, in these nine or ten days following of his enemy, hath showed a great courage, and no less skilfulness in the war, but much more notably showed the same when, with so small an army as he then had, he entered into Namur, a town of no strength, but commodious for the letting of his enemy's purpose, against the advice and persua-

sion of all his captains, which, if he had not done, out of doubt first Liège, and after, these countries, had had such a foil as would long after have been remembered. By his own wisdom and unconquered courage the enemy's meaning that way was frustrated'—Mason to the Council, Aug 13 *German MSS Mary*, bundle 16, State Paper Office

## CHAPTER XXXII

### RECONCILIATION WITH ROME.

MARY had restored Catholic orthodoxy, and her passion for Philip had been gratified. To complete her work and her happiness, it remained to bring back her subjects to the bosom of the Catholic Church. Reginald Pole had by this time awakened from some part of his delusions. He had persuaded himself that he had but to appear with a pardon in his hand to be welcomed to his country with acclamation; he had ascertained that the English people were very indifferent to the pardon, and that his own past treasons had created especial objections to himself. Even the Queen herself had grown impatient with him. He had fretted her with his importunities, his presence in Flanders had chafed the Parliament and made her marriage more difficult, while he was supposed to share with the English nobles their jealousy of a foreign sovereign. So general was this last impression about him, that his nephew, Lord Stafford's son, who was one of the refugees, went to seek him in the expectation of countenance and

sympathy : and, further, he had been in correspondence with Gardiner, and was believed to be at the bottom of the chancellor's religious indiscretions.<sup>1</sup> Thus his anxiety to be in England found nowhere any answering desire, and Renard, who dreaded his want of wisdom, never missed an opportunity of throwing difficulties in the way. In the spring of 1554 Pole had gone to Paris, where, in an atmosphere of so violent opposition to the marriage, he had not thought it necessary to speak in favour of it. The words which Dr Wotton heard that he had used were reported to the Emperor, and, at last, Renard went so far as to suggest that the scheme of sending him to England had been set on foot at Rome by the French party in the Consistory, with a view of provoking insurrection and thwarting the Imperial policy.<sup>2</sup>

The Emperor, taught by his old experiences of Pole, acquiesced in the views of his ambassador. If England was to be brought back to its allegiance, the negotiation would require a delicacy of handling for which the present legate was wholly unfit; and Charles wrote at last to the Pope to suggest that the commission should be transferred to a more competent person. Impatient language had been heard of late from the legate's lips, contrasting the vexations of the world with the charms

<sup>1</sup> RENARD

<sup>2</sup> Que pouvoit estre l'on auroit mis en avant au consistoire cette commission par affection particulière pour plustôt nuire, que servir aux consciences, attendu qu'ilz sont

partiaulx pour les princes Chrestiens, et souvent meslent les choses séculières et profanes avec les conseils divins et ecclésiastiques — Renard to Philip *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv.



of devotional retirement To soften the harshness of the blow, the Emperor said that he understood Pole was himself weary of his office, and wished to escape into privacy

The respect of Julius for the legate's understanding was not much larger than the Emperor's; but he would not pronounce the recall without giving him an opportunity of explaining himself. Cardinal Morone wrote to him to inquire whether it was true that he had thought of retirement; he informed him of the Emperor's complaints; and, to place his resignation in the easiest light (while pointing, perhaps, to the propriety of his offering it), he hinted at Pole's personal unpopularity, and at the danger to which he would be exposed by going to England

But the legate could not relinquish the passionate desire of his life; while, as to the marriage, he was, after all, unjustly suspected. He requested Morone, in reply, to assure the Pope that, much as he loved retirement, he loved duty more. He appealed to the devotion of his life to the Church as an evidence of his zeal and sincerity; and, although he knew, he said, that God could direct events at his will and dispense with the service of men, yet, so long as he had strength to be of use, he would spend it in his Master's cause In going to England he was venturing upon a stormy sea; he knew it well;<sup>1</sup> but, whatever befell him, his life was in God's hands.

May 8

<sup>1</sup> He begged Morone not to suppose him ignorant, 'quale sia il mare d'Inghilterra nel quale io ho da navigare et che fortuna et tra-

A fortnight after, he wrote again, replying  
 May 25 more elaborately to the Emperor's charges.

It was true, he admitted, that in his letters to the Queen he had dwelt more upon her religious duties than upon her marriage. It was true that he had been backward in his demonstrations of pleasure, because he was a person of few words. But, so far from disapproving of that marriage, he looked upon it as the distinct work of God; and when his nephew had come with complaints to him, he had forbidden him his presence. He had spoken of the rule of a stranger in England as likely to be a lesson to the people, but he had meant only that, as their disasters had befallen them through their own King Henry, their deliverance would be wrought for them by one who was not their own. When the late Parliament had broken up without consenting to the restoration of union, he had consoled the Queen with assuring her that he saw in it the hand of Providence, the breach of a marriage between an English king and a Spanish princess had caused the wound which a renewed marriage of a Spanish King and an English Queen was to heal<sup>1</sup>

---

vagli potrei haver a sostenere per condurre la navi in porto.'—Pole to Morone. *Epist REG POL.* vol. iv. I have not seen Morone's first letter. The contents are to be gathered, however, from Pole's answer, and from a second letter of apology which Morone wrote two months later

<sup>1</sup> Scritti alla Regina non la

volendo contristare condolermi di cio, che io interpretava et intendeva che questa tardita non venisse tanto da lei quanto delle Providentia di Dio, il qual habbia ordinato che si come per discordia matrimoniale d'un Re Inglese et d'una Regina Hispana fu levata l'obedientia della chiesa de quel Regno cosi dalla concordia matrimoniale d'un Re His-

The defence was elaborate, and, on the whole, may have been tolerably true. The Pope would not take the trouble to read it, or even to hear it read,<sup>1</sup> but the substance, as related to him by Morone, convinced him that the Emperor's accusations were exaggerated: to recall a legate at the instance of a secular sovereign was an undesirable precedent,<sup>2</sup> and the commission was allowed to stand. Julius wrote to Charles, assuring him that he was mistaken in the legate's feelings, leaving the Emperor at the same time, however, full power to keep him in Flanders or to send him to England at his own discretion.

Pole was to continue the instrument of the reconciliation, the conditions under which the reconciliation could take place were less easy to settle. The Popes, whose powers are unlimited where the exercise of them is convenient for the interests of the Holy See, have uniformly fallen back upon their inability where they have been called on to make sacrifices. The canons of the Church forbade, under any pretext, the alienation of ecclesiastical property; and until Julius could relinquish *ex animo* all intention of disturbing the lay holders of the English abbey lands, there was not a chance that the question of his supremacy would

---

pano et d'una Regina Inglese ella vi dovesse ritornare — Pole to Morone *Epist REG POL vol iv*<sup>o</sup>

<sup>1</sup> E benchè S. S. S. non avesse pazienza secondo l'ordinario suo di leggere o di udire la lettera, nondimeno le dissi talmente la sum-

ma che mostro i restare satisfattissima, e disse esser piu che certa che quella non haveva dato causa ne all' Imperatore ne ad altri d'usar con lei termini così extravagant — Morone to Pole *BURNET'S Letters*

<sup>2</sup> Ibid

be so much as entertained by either Lords or Commons.

The vague powers originally granted to the legate were not satisfactory; and Pole himself, who was too sincere a believer in the Roman doctrines to endure that worldly objections should stand in the way of the salvation of souls, wrote himself to the Holy See, entreating that his commission might be enlarged. The Pope in appearance consented. In a second brief, dated June 28th, he extended the legate's dispensing powers to real property as well as personal, and granted him general permission to determine any unforeseen difficulties which might arise<sup>1</sup> Ormaneto, a confidential agent, carried the despatch to Flanders, and on Ormaneto's arrival, the legate, believing that his embarrassments were at last at an end, sent him on to the Bishop of Arras, to entreat that the perishing souls of the English people might now be remembered. The Pope had given way, the Queen was happily married, and the reasons for his detention were at an end.<sup>2</sup>

Both Arras and the Emperor, however, thought more of Philip's security than of perishing souls. Arras, who understood the ways of the Vatican better than the legate, desired that, before any steps were taken, he might be favoured with a copy of these enlarged powers. He wished to know whether the question of the property was fairly relinquished to the secular powers in England, and whether the Church had finally washed

---

<sup>1</sup> Powers granted by the Pope to Cardinal Pole. BURNET'S *Collectanea*.

<sup>2</sup> Charles V to Renard *Gravelle Papers*, vol. iv.

its hands of it;<sup>1</sup> at all events, he must examine the brief. On inspection, the new commission was found to contain an enabling clause indeed, as July. extensive as words could make it; but the See of Rome reserved to itself the right of sanctioning the settlement after it had been made;<sup>2</sup> and the reservation had been purposely made, in order to leave the Pope free to act as he might please at a future time. Morone, writing to Pole a fortnight after the date of the brief, told him that his Holiness was still unable to come to a resolution,<sup>3</sup> while Ormaneto said openly to Arras, that, although the Pope would be as moderate as possible, yet his moderation must not be carried so far as to encourage the rest of Christendom in an evil example. Catholics must not be allowed to believe that they could appropriate Church property without offence, nor must the Holy See appear to be purchasing by concessions the submission of its rebellious subjects.<sup>4</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Che gran differenza sarebbe se fosse stata commessa la cosa o al S. Cardinale, o alli Seienissimi Principi — Ormaneto to Piiuh, July 31. BURNET'S *Collectanea*

<sup>2</sup> Salvo tamen in his, in quibus propter rerum magnitudinem et gravitatem hæc sancta sedes merito tibi videretur consulenda, nostro et præfatæ sedis beneplacito et confirmatione — Powers granted by the Pope to Cardinal Pole. Ibid.

<sup>3</sup> Nondimeno non si risolveva in tutto, com anco non si risolveva nella materia delli beni ecclesiastici, sopra la qual sua Sanctità ha parlato

molte volte vauamente — Morone to Pole, July 13. Ibid.

<sup>4</sup> Il sçauroit bien user de modération quant aux biens occupez; mais que toutesfois il faudroit que se fust de sorte que la reste de la Chrestienté n'en print malvais exemple, et signamment que aucuns Catholiques qui tiennent biens ecclésiastiques soubz leur main ne voulsissent pretendre d'eulx approprier avec cest exemple, et que de vouloir laisser les biens à ceulx qui les occupent, il ne conuiendrait pour ce qu'il sembleroit que ce seroit racheter, comme à deniers comptans

This language was not even ambiguous;  
 August 3 Pole was desired to wait till an answer could be received from England; and the Emperor wrote to Renard, desiring him to lay the circumstances before the Queen and his son. He could believe, he said, that the legate himself meant well, but he had not the same confidence in those who were urging him forward, and the Pope had given no authority for haste or precipitate movements.<sup>1</sup>

The Emperor's letter was laid before a  
 August 6 Council of State at Windsor, on the 6th of August; and the council agreed with Charles that the legate's anxieties could not for the present be gratified. He was himself attainted, and Parliament had shown no anxiety that the attainder should be removed. The re-imposition of the Pope's authority was a far more ticklish matter than the restoration of orthodoxy,<sup>2</sup> and the temper of the people was uncertain. The Cardinal had, perhaps, intelligence with persons in England of a suspicious and dangerous kind, and the execution of his commission must depend on the pleasure of the next Parliament. He was not to suppose that he might introduce changes in the constitution of the country by

l'auctorité du siège apostolique en ce costel-là — The Emperor to Renard *Granvelle Papers*, vol iv pp 282, 283.

<sup>1</sup> Nous sçavons que le dict Cardinal n'a commission de presser si chaudement en cette affaire—ains avons heu soubz main advissement du nuncce propre de sa Sainc-

teté que la résolution de la commission dudict Cardinal est que toutes choses se traictent comm'il nous semblera pour le mieulx et qu'il tienne cecy pour règle — *Granvelle Papers*, vol iv.

<sup>2</sup> Trop plus chastolleux que celui de la vraye religion — Renard to the Emperor *Ibid.* p 287.

the authority of a Papal commission, or try experiments which might put in peril the sacred person of the Prince <sup>1</sup>

Once more the cup of hope was dashed to the ground, and Reginald Pole was sent back to his monastery at Dhillngghen like a child unfit to be trusted with a dangerous plaything. In times of trial his pen was his refuge, and in an appeal to Philip he poured out his characteristic protest

‘For a whole year,’ he wrote, ‘I have been now knocking at the door of that kingdom, and no person will answer, no person will ask, Who is there? It is one who has endured twenty years of exile that the partner of your throne should not be excluded from her rights, and I come in the name of the vicar of the King of kings, the Shepherd of mankind Peter knocks at your door, Peter himself. The door is open to all besides. Why is it closed to Peter? Why does not that nation make haste now to do Peter reverence? Why does it leave him escaped from Herod’s prison, knocking?’

‘Strange, too, that this is the house of Mary. Can it be Mary that is so slow to open? True, indeed, it is, that when Mary’s damsel heard the voice she opened not the door for joy; she ran and told Mary. But Mary came with those that were with her in the house; and though at first she doubted, yet, when Peter continued knocking, she opened the door, she took him in, she regarded not the danger, although Herod was yet alive, and was King.

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to the Emperor *Grünville Papers*, vol iv p 287

‘Is it joy which now withholds Mary, or is it fear? She rejoices, that I know, but she also fears. Yet why should Mary fear now when Herod is dead? The providence of God permitted her to fear for awhile, because God desired that you, sire, who are Peter’s beloved child, should share the great work with her. Do you, therefore, teach her now to cast her fears away. It is not I only who stand here—it is not only Peter—Christ is here—Christ waits with me till you will open and take him in. You who are King of England, are defender of Christ’s faith; yet, while you have the ambassadors of all other princes at your Court, you will not have Christ’s ambassador; you have rejected your Christ.

‘Go on upon your way. Build on the foundation of worldly policy, and I tell you, in Christ’s words, that the rain will fall, the floods will rise, the winds will blow, and beat upon that house, and it will fall, and great will be the fall thereof’<sup>1</sup>

The pleading was powerful, yet it could bear no fruits—the door could not open till the Pope pronounced the magic words which held it closed. Neither Philip nor Mary was in a position to use violence or force the bars.

After the ceremony at Winchester, the King and Queen had gone first to Windsor, and thence the second week in August they went to Richmond. The entry into London was fixed for the 18th; after which, should it pass off without disturbance, the Spanish fleet might

---

<sup>1</sup> Pole to Philip *Epist REG POL.* vol. iv.



sail from Southampton Water The Prince himself had as yet met with no discourtesy; but disputes had broken out early between the English and Spanish retinues, and petty taunts and insolences had passed among them.<sup>1</sup> The Prince's luggage was plundered, and the property stolen could not be recovered nor the thieves detected. The servants of Alva and the other lords, who preceded their masters to London, were insulted in the streets, and women and children called after them that they need not have brought so many things, they would be soon gone again. The citizens refused to give them lodgings in their houses, and the friars who had accompanied Philip were advised to disguise themselves, so intense was the hatred against the religious orders.<sup>2</sup> The council soon provided for their ordinary comforts, but increase of acquaintance produced no improvement of feeling.

The entry passed off tolerably Gog and Magog stood as warders on London Bridge, and there were the usual pageants in the city. Renard conceived that the impression produced by Philip had been rather favourable than otherwise; for the people had been taught to expect some monster but partially human, and they saw instead a well-dressed cavalier, who had learnt by this time to carry his hand to his bonnet Yet, although there were no open signs of ill-feeling, the day

---

<sup>1</sup> Avecques d'autres petits deportements de mocquerie qui croissent tous les jours d'ung cousté et d'autre.—Noailles to the King of

France, August 1

<sup>2</sup> NOAILLES, and compare Pole to Miranda, Oct 6. *Epist REG.* POL. vol. v.

did not end without a disagreeable incident. The conduit in Gracechurch Street had been newly decorated: 'the nine Worthies' had been painted round the winding turret, and among them were Henry VIII and Edward. The first seven carried maces, swords, or pole-axes. Henry held in one hand a sceptre, in the other he was presenting a book to his son, on which was written *Verbum Dei*. As the train went by, the unwelcome figure caught the eye of Gardiner. The painter was summoned, called 'knave, traitor, heretic,' an enemy to the Queen's Catholic proceedings. The offensive Bible was washed out, and a pair of gloves inserted in its place.<sup>1</sup>

Nor did the irritation of the people abate. The Spaniards, being without special occupation, were seen much in the streets; and a vague fear so magnified their numbers that four of them, it was thought, were to be met in London for one Englishman.<sup>2</sup> The halls of the city companies were given up for their use; a fresh provocation to people who desired to be provoked. A Spanish friar was lodged at Lambeth, and it was said at once he was to be Archbishop of Canterbury; at the beginning of September twelve thousand Spanish troops were reported to be coming to 'fetch the crown.' Rumour and reality inflated each other. The peers, who had collected for the marriage, dispersed to their counties; and on the 10th of September.

---

<sup>1</sup> *Chronicle of Queen Mary*. Contemporary Narrative MS. Harleyan, 419

<sup>2</sup> *Chronicle of Queen Mary*.

ber, Pembroke, Shrewsbury, and Westmoreland were believed to have raised a standard of revolt at York. Frays were continually breaking out in the streets, and there was a scandalous brawl in the cloisters at Westminster. Brief entries in diaries and council books tell continually of Englishmen killed, and Spaniards hanged, hanged at Tyburn, or hanged more conspicuously at Charing Cross, and on the 12th, Noailles reported that the feeling in all classes, high and low, was as bad as possible.

There was dread, too, that Philip was bent on drawing England into the war. The French ambassador had been invited to be present at the entry into London; but the invitation had been sent informally by a common messenger not more than half an hour before the royal party were to appear. The brief notice was intended as an affront, and only after some days Noailles appeared at Court to offer his congratulations. When he came at last, he expressed his master's hope to Philip that the neutrality of England would continue to be observed. Philip answered with cold significance, that he would keep his promise and maintain the treaties, as long as by doing so he should consult the interests of the realm.<sup>1</sup>

Other menacing symptoms were also showing themselves: the claim for the pensions was spoken of as likely to be revived; the English ships in the Channel were making the neutrality one-sided, and protecting

---

<sup>1</sup> Tant et si longuement que se seroit l'utilité et commodité de ce dict Royaulme d'Angleterre — Noailles to the King of France

the Spanish and Flemish traders ; and Philip, already weary of his bride, was urging on Renard the propriety of his hastening, like an obedient son, to the assistance of his father. Under pretence of escort he could take with him a few thousand English cavalry and men-at-arms, who could be used as a menace to France, and whose presence would show the attitude which England was about to assume. Sick, in these brief weeks, of maintaining the show of an affection which he did not feel, and sick of a country where his friends were insulted if he was treated respectfully himself, he was already panting for freedom, and eager to utilize the instruments which he had bought so dearly.<sup>1</sup>

Happily for the Queen's peace of mind, Renard was not a man to encourage impatience. The factions in the council were again showing themselves ; Elizabeth lay undisposed of at Woodstock. Pomfret, Belgium, even Hungary, had been thought of as a destination for her, and had been laid aside one after the other, in dread of the people. If she was released, she would again be dangerous, and it was uncertain how long Lord Howard would endure her detention. A plan suggested by Lord Paget seemed, after all, to promise the best—to marry her to Philibert of Savoy, and thus make use of her as a second link to connect England with the House of Austria. But here the difficulty would be with the Queen, who in that case would have to recognize her sister's rank and expectations.

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V., *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv p 294.

The question ought in Renard's opinion to be settled before Philip left England, and he must have faced Parliament too, and, if possible, have been crowned. If he went now, he could never come back; he must court the people; he must play off the working classes against the Lords; there was ill blood between the rich and poor, let him use the opportunity.

The state of public feeling did not improve when, at the end of September, Bonner commenced an inquiry into the conduct and opinions of the clergy of his diocese. In every parish he appointed a person or persons to examine whether the minister was or ever had been married; whether, if married and separated from his wife, he continued in secret to visit her; whether his sermons were orthodox, whether he was a 'brawler, scolder, hawker, hunter, fornicator, adulterer, drunkard, or blasphemer;' whether he duly exhorted his parishioners to come to mass and confession; whether he associated with heretics, or had been suspected of associating with them; his mind, his habits, his society, even the dress that he wore, were to be made matter of close scrutiny.

The points of inquiry were published in a series of articles which created an instantaneous ferment. Among the merchants they were attributed to the King, Queen, and Gardiner, and were held to be the first step of a conspiracy against English liberties. A report was spread at the same time that the King meditated a seizure of the Tower; barriers were forthwith erected in the great

thoroughfares leading into the city, and no one was allowed to pass unchallenged.<sup>1</sup>

The Bishop of London was called to account for having ventured so rash a step without permission of crown or council. He replied that he was but doing his duty; the council, had he communicated with them, would have interfered with him, and in the execution of his office he must be governed by his own conscience.<sup>2</sup> But the attitude of the city was too decided even for the stubborn Bonner; he gave way sullenly, and suspended the execution of his order.

Worse clouds than these nevertheless had many times gathered over the Court and dispersed again. It was easy to be discontented; but when the discontent would pass into action, there was nothing definite to be done; and between the leading statesmen there were such large differences of opinion, that they could not co-operate.<sup>3</sup> The Court, as Renard saw, could accomplish everything which they desired with caution and prudence. The humours of the people might flame out on a sudden if too hastily irritated, but the opposite tendencies of parties effectually balanced each other, and even the Papal difficulty might be managed, and Pole might in time be brought over, if only there was no precipitation, and the Pope was compelled to be reasonable.

<sup>1</sup> Renard to the Bishop of Ar-  
ras *Granvelle Papers*, p. 330

<sup>2</sup> Same to the Emperor Ibid  
p. 321

<sup>3</sup> Entre les seigneurs et gens de  
la noblesse et de credit et adminis-  
tration, il y a telle partialité que l'un  
ne se fie de l'autre — Ibid.

But prudence was the first and last essential; the legate must be content to wait, and also Philip must wait. The winter was coming on, and <sup>October</sup> the Court, Renard said, was giving balls; the English and Spanish noblemen were learning to talk with one another, and were beginning to dance with each other's wives and daughters. The ill-feeling was gradually abating; and, in fact, it was not to be believed that God Almighty would have brought about so considerable a marriage without intending that good should come of it.<sup>1</sup> The Queen believed herself *encontrée*, and if her hopes were well founded, a thousand causes of restlessness would be disposed of; but Philip must not be permitted to harass her with his impatience to be gone. She had gathered something of his intentions, and was already pretending more uncertainty than in her heart she felt, lest he should make the assurance of her prospects an excuse for leaving her. In a remarkable passage, Renard urged the Emperor on no account to encourage him in a step so eminently injudicious, from a problematic hope of embroiling England and France. 'Let Parliament meet,' he said, 'and pass off quietly, and in February his Highness may safely go.

---

<sup>1</sup> Les choses se vont accommoder à ce quoy sert la saison de l'hiver et ce que en la court l'on y danse souvent, que les Espaignolz et Angloys commencent à converser les uns avec les autres . . . et n'y a personne qui puisse imaginer que Dieu ait voulu ung si grand mariage et de telz princes, pour en esperer sinon ung grand bien publique pour la Chrestienté, et pour restabli et assseurer les estatx de vostre majesté troublez par ses ennemis — Renard to the Emperor, *Granville Papers*, vol. iv. p. 519.

Irreparable injury may and will follow, however, should he leave England before. Religion will be overthrown, the Queen's person will be in danger, and Parliament will not meet. A door will be opened for the practices of France, the country may throw itself in self-protection on the French alliance, and an undying hatred will be engendered between England and Spain. As things now are, prudence and moderation are more than ever necessary; and we must allow neither the King nor the Queen to be led astray by unwise impatient advisers, who, for the advancement of their private opinions, or because they cannot have all the liberty which they desire, are ready to compromise the commonwealth.' <sup>1</sup>

So matters stood at the beginning of October, when Parliament was about to be summoned, and the great experiment to be tried whether England would consent to be re-united to Catholic Christendom. The writs went out on the 6th, and circulars accompanied them, addressed to those who would have the conduct of the elections, stating that, whatever false reports might have been spread, no 'alteration was intended of any man's possessions' At the same time the Queen required the mayors of towns, the sheriffs, and other influential persons to admonish the voters to choose from among themselves 'such as, being eligible by order of the laws, were of a wise, grave, and Catholic sort; such as indeed meant the true honour of God and the prosperity of the commonwealth.' <sup>2</sup> These general directions

---

<sup>1</sup> *Grainville Papers*, vol iv p 320

<sup>2</sup> Royal Circular, printed in BURNET'S *Collectanea*



were copied from a form which had been in use under Henry VII, and the citizens of London set the example of obedience in electing four members who were in every way satisfactory to the Court<sup>1</sup> In the country the decisive failure of Carew, Suffolk, and Crofts showed that the weight of public feeling was still in favour of the Queen notwithstanding the Spanish marriage; and the reaction against the excesses of the Reformation had not yet reached its limits On the accession of Mary, the restoration of the mass had appeared impossible, but it had been effected safely and completely almost by the spontaneous will of the people In the spring the Pope's name could not be mentioned in Parliament; now, since the Queen was bent upon it, and as she gave her word that property was not to be meddled with, even the Pope seemed no longer absolutely intolerable

The reports of the elections were everywhere favourable In the Upper House, except on very critical points, which would unite the small body of the lay peers, the Court was certain of a majority, being supported of course by the bishops,—and the question of Pole's coming over, therefore, was once more seriously considered The Pope had been given to understand that, however inconsistent with his dignity he might

<sup>1</sup> Les lettres de la convocation du parlement sont esté pourjectées sur la vieille forme dont l'on usoit au temps du Roy Henry septième pour avoir en icelluy gens de bien Catholiques et à propos et selon ce  
ceux de Londre en publique assemblée ont choiziz quatre personnaiges que l'on tient estre fort saiges et modestes —Renard to the Emperor. *Granvelle Papers*, vol iv p 324

consider it to appear to purchase English submission by setting aside the canons of the Church, he must consent to the English terms, or there was no hope whatever that his supremacy would be recognized. If in accepting these terms he would agree to a humiliating reconciliation, only those who objected on doctrinal grounds to the Papal religion were inclined to persist in refusing a return of his friendship. The dream of an independent orthodox Anglicanism which had once found favour with Gardiner was fading away. The indifferent and the orthodox alike desired to put an end to spiritual anarchy; and the excommunication, though lying lightly on the people, and despised even by the Catholic powers, had furnished, and might furnish, a pretext for inconvenient combinations. Singularity of position, where there was no especial cause for it, was always to be avoided.

These influences would have been insufficient to have brought the English of themselves to seek for a reunion. They were enough to induce them to accept it with indifference when offered them on their own conditions, or to affect for a time an outward appearance of acquiescence.

Philip, therefore, consulted Renard, and Charles invited Pole to Brussels. Renard, to whom politics were all-important, and religion useful in its place, but inconvenient when pushed into prominence, adhered to his old opinion. He advised the 'King' to write privately to the Pope, telling him that he had already so many embarrassments on his hands that he could not afford

to increase them ; ' the changes already made were insincere, and the legatine authority was odious, not only in England, but throughout Europe , ' the Queen, on her accession, had promised a general toleration,<sup>1</sup> and it was useless to provoke irritation, when not absolutely necessary ' Yet even Renard spoke less positively than before. ' If the Pope would make no more reservations on the land question—if he would  
Oct 15  
volunteer a general absolution, and submit to conditions, while he exacted none—if he would sanction every ecclesiastical act which had been done during the schism, the marriages and baptisms, the ordinations of the clergy, and the new creations of episcopal sees—above all, if he would make no demand for money under any pretence, the venture might, perhaps, be made.' But, continued Renard, ' his Holiness, even then, must be cautious in his words, he must dwell as lightly as possible on his authority, as lightly as possible on his claims to be obeyed in offering absolution, he must talk merely of piety and love, of the open arms of the Church, of the example of the Saviour, and such other generalities.'<sup>2</sup> Finally, Renard still thought the legate had better remain abroad The reconciliation, if it could be effected at

<sup>1</sup> Le mandement et declaration que vostre Majesté a faict publier sur le point de la religion, laissant la liberté à ung chacun pour tenir quelle religion l'on voudra — Renard to Philip and Mary *Granvelle Papers*, vol iv p 327

<sup>2</sup> Et que sa Sancteté le fonde in

pietate Christianâ et Ecclesiasticâ quia nunquam Ecclesia claudit gremium, semper indulget exemplo Salvatoris, et Evangelium semper consolatur, semper remittit, et sui plures aultres, fondemens generaux. —Ibid p 326.

all, could be managed better without his irritating presence.

Pole himself had found the Emperor more gracious. Charles professed the greatest anxiety that the Papal authority should be restored. He doubted only if the difficulties could be surmounted. Pole replied that the obstacles were chiefly two—one respecting doctrine, on which no concession could be made at all; the other respecting the lands, on which his Holiness would make every concession. He would ask for nothing, he would exact nothing; he would abandon every shadow of a claim.

If this was the case, the Emperor said, all would go well. Nevertheless, there was the reservation in the brief, and the Pope, however generous he might wish to be, was uncertain of his power. The doctrine was of no consequence. People in England believed one doctrine as little as another;<sup>1</sup> but they hated Rome, they hated the religious orders, they hated cardinals; and as to the lands, *could* the Church relinquish them?<sup>2</sup> Pole might believe that she could; but the world would be more suspicious, or less easy to convince. At all events, the dispensing powers must be clogged with no reservations; nor could he come to any decision till he heard again from England.

The legate was almost hopeless; yet his time of

<sup>1</sup> Perciocche quanto alla Dottrina disse che poco se ne curavano questo tali non credendo ne all' una ne all' altra via — Pole to the Pope, October 13 BURNET'S *Collectanea* -

è <sup>2</sup> Disse anche che essendo stati questi beni dedicati a Dio non era da concedere così ogni cosa a quelli che le tenevano — Ibid

triumph—such triumph as it was—had nearly arrived. The Queen's supposed pregnancy had increased her influence; and, constant herself in the midst of general indecision, she was able to carry her point. She would not mortify the legate, who had suffered for his constancy to the cause of her mother, with listening to Renard's personal objections; and when the character of the approaching House of Commons had been ascertained, she gained the consent of the council November. a week before the beginning of the session, to send commissioners to Brussels to see Pole and inspect his faculties. With a conclusive understanding on the central question, they might tell him that the hope of his life might be realized, and that he might return to his country. But the conditions were explicit. He must bring adequate powers with him, or his coming would be worse than fruitless. If those which he already possessed were insufficient, he must send them to Rome to be enlarged,<sup>1</sup> and although the Court would receive

<sup>1</sup> The greatest and only means to procure the agreement of the noblemen and others of our council was our promise that the Pope's Holiness would, at our suit, dispense with all possessors of any lands or goods of monasteries, colleges, or other ecclesiastical houses, to hold and enjoy their said lands and goods without any trouble or scruple, without which promise it had been impossible to have had their consent, and shall be utterly impossible to have any fruit and good concord ensue. For which purpose you shall

earnestly pray our said cousin to use all possible diligence, and say that if he have not already, he may so receive authority from the See Apostolic to dispense in this manner as the same, being now in good towardness, may so in this Parliament take the desired effect, whereof we see no likelihood except it may be therewithal provided for this matter of the lands and goods of the Church.—Instructions to Paget and Hastings, November 5, TITLER, vol. II p. 446.

him as legate *de latere*, he had better enter the country only as a cardinal and ambassador, till he could judge of the state of things for himself<sup>1</sup> On these terms the commissioners might conduct him to the Queen's presence.

The bearers of this communication were Lord Paget and Sir Edward Hastings, accompanied, it is curious to observe, by Sir William Cecil.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> TYTLER, vol 11 p 446

<sup>2</sup> Cecil had taken no formal part in Mary's Government, but his handwriting can be traced in many papers of State, and in the Irish department he seems to have given his assistance throughout the reign. In religion Cecil, like Paget, was a latitudinarian. His conformity under Mary has been commented upon bitterly, but there is no occasion to be surprised at his conduct—no occasion, when one thinks seriously of his position, to blame his conduct. There were many things in the Catholic creed of which Cecil disapproved, and when his opportunity came, he gave his effectual assistance for the abolition of them, but as long as that creed was the law of the land, as a citizen he paid the law the respect of external obedience.

At present religion is no longer under the control of law, and is left to the conscience. To profess openly, therefore, a faith which we do not believe is justly condemned as hypocrisy. But wherever public law extends, personal responsibility is

limited. A minority is not permitted to resist the decisions of the legislature on subjects in which the legislature is entitled to interfere, and in the sixteenth century opinion was as entirely under rule and prescription as actions of things. Men may do their best to improve the laws which they consider unjust. They are not, under ordinary circumstances, to disobey them so long as they exist. However wide the basis of a Government, questions will ever arise between the individual and the State—questions, for instance, of peace or war, in which the conscience has as much a voice as any other subject, where, nevertheless, individuals, if they are in the minority, must sacrifice their own opinions, they must contribute their war taxes without resistance, if they are soldiers, they must take part as combatants for a cause of which they are convinced of the injustice. That is to say, they must do things which it would be impious and wicked in them to do, were they as free in their obligations as citizens as they

They presented themselves to the Emperor, who, after the report which they brought with them, made no more difficulty. The enlarged powers had been sent for three weeks before; but there was no occasion to wait for their arrival. They might be expected in ten days or a fortnight, and could follow the legate to England.<sup>1</sup>

The effect on Pole of the commissioners' arrival 'there needed not,' as they said themselves, 'many words to declare.'<sup>2</sup> His eager tempera-

Nov 11

are now free in the religion which they will profess

This was the view in which the mass was regarded by statesmen like Cecil, and generally by many men of plain straightforward understanding, who believed transubstantiation as little as he. In Protestantism, as a constructive theology, they had as little interest as in Popery, when the alternative lay between the two, they saw no reason to sacrifice themselves for either.

It was the view of common sense. It was not the view of a saint. To Latimer, also, technical theology was indifferent—indifferent in proportion to his piety. But he hated lies—legalized or unlegalized—he could not tolerate them, and he died sooner than seem to tolerate them. The counsels of perfection, however, lead to conduct neither possible, nor, perhaps, desirable for ordinary men.

<sup>1</sup> Charles was particular in his inquiries of Mary's prospect of a

family. He spoke to Sir John Mason about it, who was then the resident ambassador —

'Sir, quoth I,' so Mason reported the conversation, 'I have from herself nothing to say, for she will not confess the matter till it be proved to her face, but by others I understand, to my great joy, that her garments wax very straight. I never doubted, quoth he, of the matter, but that God, that for her had wrought so many miracles, would make the same perfect to the assisting of nature to his good and most desired work. And I warrant it shall be, quoth he, a man-child. Be it man, quoth I, or be it woman, welcome it shall be, for by that we shall be at the least come to some certainty to whom God shall appoint by succession the government of our estates.'—Mason to the King and Queen, November 9. TITLEN, vol. II p. 444.

<sup>2</sup> Paget and Hastings to the Queen. Ibid. p. 459.

ment, for ever excited either with wild hopes or equally wild despondency, was now about to be fooled to the top of its bent. On the Pope's behalf, he promised everything; for himself, he would come as ambassador, he would come as a private person, come in any fashion that might do good, so only that he might come.

Little time was lost in preparation. Parliament met on the 12th of November. The opening speech was read, as usual, by Gardiner, and was well received, although it announced that further measures would be taken for the establishment of religion, and the meaning of these words was known to every one. The first measure brought forward was the repeal of Pole's attainder. It passed easily without a dissentient voice, and no obstacle of any kind remained to delay his appearance. Only the cautious Renard suggested that Courtenay should be sent out of the country as soon as possible, for fear the legate should take a fancy to him, and the Prince of Savoy had been invited over to see whether anything could be done towards arranging the marriage with Elizabeth. Elizabeth, indeed, had protested that she had no intention of marrying, nevertheless, Renard said, she would be disposed of, as the Emperor had advised,<sup>1</sup> could the Queen be induced to consent.

England was ready therefore, and the happy legate set out from Brussels like a lover flying to his mistress. His emotions are reflected in the journal of an Italian

---

<sup>1</sup> Neantmoins il sera necessaire achever avec elle selon l'advis de vostre Majesté.—Renard to the Emperor! *Granvelle Papers*, vol. iv



friend who attended him. The journey commenced on Tuesday, the 13th; the retinues of Paget and Hastings, with the Cardinal's household, making in all a hundred and twenty horse The route was by Ghent, Bruges, and Dunkirk. On the 19th the party reached Gravelines, where, on the stream which formed the boundary of the Pale, they were received in state by Lord Wentworth, the Governor of Calais. In the eyes of his enthusiastic admirers the apostle of the Church moved in an atmosphere of marvel. The Calais bells, which rang as they entered the town, were of preternatural sweetness The salutes fired by the ships in the harbour were 'wonderful' The Cardinal's lodging was a palace, and as an august omen, the watchword of the garrison for the night was 'God long lost is found'<sup>1</sup> The morning brought a miracle. A westerly gale had blown for many days. All night long it had howled through the narrow streets; the waves had lashed against the piers, and the fishermen foretold a week of storms At daybreak the wind went down, the clouds broke, a light air from the eastward levelled the sea, and filled the sails of the vessel which was to bear them to England. At noon the party went on board, and their passage was a fresh surprise. They crossed in three hours and a half, and the distance, as it pictured itself to imagination, was forty miles<sup>2</sup> At Dover the legate slept.

<sup>1</sup> Dio gran tempo perduto e hora ritrovato — Descriptio Reductionis Angliæ: *Epist. REG. POL.* vol. v.

<sup>2</sup> Imbarcatosi adunque sua S. R. ad un hora di giorno, passo a Doure nell' Isola in tie hore et mezza che

Nov 21

The next day Lord Montague came with the Bishop of Ely, bringing letters of congratulation from the Queen and Philip, and an intimation that he was anxiously looked for. He was again on horseback after breakfast, and as the news of his arrival spread, respect or curiosity rapidly swelled his train. The Earl of Huntingdon, who had married his sister, sent his son Lord Hastings, with his tenants and servants, as an escort. But there was no danger. Whatever might be the feelings of the people towards the Papal legate, they gave to Reginald Pole the welcome due to an English nobleman.

The November evening had closed in when the cavalcade entered Canterbury. The streets were thronged, and the legate made his way through the crowd, amidst the cries of 'God save your Grace'. At the door of the house—probably the Archbishop's palace—where he was to pass the night, Harpsfeld, the Archdeacon, was standing to receive him, with a number of the clergy, and with the glare of torches lighting up the scene, Harpsfeld commenced an oration as the legate alighted, so beautiful, so affecting, says Pole's Italian friend, that all the hearers were moved to tears. The Archdeacon spoke of the mercies of God, and the marvellous workings of his providence. He dwelt upon the history of the Cardinal whom God had preserved through a thousand dangers for the salvation of his country; and, firing up at last in a blaze of enthusiasm, he exclaimed,

---

fu camino di quaranta miglia fatto con extraordinaria prestezza —*Eyst.*  
REG POL vol. v.

'Thou art Pole, and thou art our Polar star, to light us to the kingdom of the heavens. Sky, rivers, earth, these disfigured walls—all things—long for thee While thou wert absent from us all things were sad, all things were in the power of the adversary At thy coming all things are smiling, all glad, all tranquil.'<sup>1</sup> The legate listened so far, and then checked the flood of the adorning eloquence 'I heard you with pleasure,' he said, 'while you were praising God. My own praises I do not desire to hear Give the glory to Him.'

From Canterbury, Richard Pate, who, as titular Bishop of Worcester, had sat at the Council of Trent, was sent forward to the Queen with an answer to her letter, and a request for further directions The legate himself went on leisurely to Rochester, where he was entertained by Lord Cobham, at Cowling Castle So far he had observed the instructions brought to him by Paget, and had travelled as an ordinary ecclesiastic, without distinctive splendour On the night of the 23rd, however, Pate returned from the Court with a message that the legatine insignia might be displayed. A fleet of barges was in waiting at Gravesend, where Pole appeared early on the 24th; and, as a Saturday, further augury of good fortune, he found Nov 24

<sup>1</sup> 'Tu es Polus, qui aperis nobis Polum regni caelorum Aer, flumina, terra, parietes ipsi, omnia denique te desiderant Quamdiu abfuisti omnia fuerunt tristia et adversa In adventu tuo, omnia ridet, omnia læta, omnia tranquilla' I have endeavoured to preserve the play on the

word Polus, altering the meaning as little as the necessities of translation would allow It has been suggested to me that the word 'parietes' implies properly *interior* walls, and the allusion was to the defacement of the cathedral

there Lord Shrewsbury, with his early friend the Bishop of Durham, who had come to meet him with the repeal of his attainder, to which the Queen had given her assent in Parliament the day before.

To the fluttered hearts of the priestly company the coincidence of the repeal, the informality of an Act of Parliament receiving the royal assent before the close of a session, were further causes of admiration. They embarked; and the Italians, who had never seen a tidal river, discovered, miracle of miracles, that they were ascending from the sea, and yet the stream was with them. The distance to London was soon accomplished. They passed under the Bridge at one o'clock on the top of the tide, the legate's barge distinguished splendidly by the silver cross upon the bow. In a few minutes more they were at the palace-stairs at Whitehall, where a pier was built on arches out into the river, and on the pier stood the Bishop of Winchester, with the Lords of the Council.

The King and Queen were at dinner, the arrival not being expected till the afternoon. Philip rose instantly from the table, hurried out, and caught the legate in his arms. The Queen followed to the head of the grand staircase; and when Pole reached her, she threw herself on his breast, and kissed him, crying that his coming gave her as much joy as the possession of her kingdom. The Cardinal, in corresponding ecstasy, exclaimed, in the words of the angel to the Virgin, 'Ave Maria gratia plena, Dominus tecum, benedicta tu in mulieri-

bus '1 The first rapturous moments over, the King, Queen, and legate proceeded along the gallery, Philip and Pole supporting Mary on either side, and the legate expatiating on the mysteries of Providence.

'High thanks, indeed,' he exclaimed, 'your Majesty owes to the favour of the Almighty, seeing that, while he permits you to bring your godly desires to perfection, he has united at this moment in your favour the two mightiest powers upon earth—the Majesty of the Emperor represented in the King your husband, and the Pope's Holiness represented in myself.' The Queen, as she walked, replied 'in words of sweet humility,' pouring out gentle excuses for past delays. The legate, still speaking with ecstatic metaphor, answered that it was the will of God, God waited till the time was mature, till he could say to her Highness, 'Blessed be the fruit of thy womb '2

In the saloon they remained standing together for another quarter of an hour. When the Cardinal took his leave for the day, the King, in spite of remonstrance, re-attended him to the gate. Alva and the Bishop of Winchester were in waiting to conduct him to Lambeth

<sup>1</sup> 'Cardinalis cum reginam salutaret, nec ulla humana verba occurrerent tali muliere digna, Sanctus Scripturarum verbis abuti non verébatur, sed in primo congressu eisdem quibus matrem Dei salutavit Angelus, Reginam Polus alloquitur, Ave Maria,' &c —Salkyns to Bullinger

*Epistolæ TIGURINÆ*, p 169

<sup>2</sup> 'Il Signor Legato rispose che Dio havea voluto, che fusse tardato a tempo più maturo, perchè egli avesse potuto dire a sua Altezza come diceva, Benedictus fructus ventris tui' — *Descriptio Reductionis Angliæ*. •

Palace, which had been assigned him for a residence. The See of Canterbury was to follow as soon as Cranmer could be despatched.

Arrived at Lambeth, he was left to repose after his fatigues and excitements. He had scarcely retired to his apartments when he was disturbed again by a message from the Queen. Lord Montague had hurried over with the news that the angelic salutation had been already answered. 'The babe had leapt in her womb'<sup>1</sup> Not a moment was lost in communicating the miracle to the world. Letters of council were drawn out for *Te Deums* to be sung in every church in London. The next day being Sunday, every pulpit was made to ring with the testimony of Heaven to the truth.

On Monday the 26th the Cardinal went to the palace for an audience, and again there was more matter for congratulation. As he was approaching the King's cabinet, Philip met him with a packet of despatches. The last courier sent to Rome had returned with unheard-of expedition, and the briefs and commissions in which the Pope relinquished formally his last reservations, had arrived. Never, exclaimed the Catholic enthusiast, in a fervour of devout astonishment—never since the days of the apostles had so many tokens of divine approbation been showered upon a human enterprise. The moment of its consummation had arrived.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> Descriptio Reductionis Angliæ

<sup>2</sup> The Queen's assurances respecting her child were so emphatic, that even Noailles believed her.

Profane persons were still incredulous. On Sunday the 25th, the day after the *Te Deums*, Noailles says, 'S'est trouve ung placard attaché à

Since the thing was to be, no one wished for delay. Three days sufficed for the few necessary preparations, and the two Houses of Parliament were invited to be present unofficially at Whitehall on the afternoon of Wednesday the 28th. In the morning there was a procession in the city and a *Te Deum* at

Nov. 28.

St Paul's. After dinner, the Great Chamber was thrown open, and the Lords and Commons crowded in as they could find room. Philip and Mary entered, and took their seats under the cloth of state; while Pole had a chair assigned him on their right hand, beyond the edge of the canopy. The Queen was splendidly dressed, and it was observed that she threw out her person to make her supposed condition as conspicuous as possible.<sup>1</sup> When all were in their places, the chancellor rose.

'My Lords of the Upper House,' he said, 'and you my masters of the Nether House, here is present the Right Reverend Father in God the Lord Cardinal Pole, come from the Apostolic See of Rome as ambassador to the King's and Queen's Majesties, upon one of the weightiest causes that ever happened in this realm, and which pertaineth to the glory of God and your universal benefit; the which embassy it is their Majesties' pleasure that it be signified unto you all by his own mouth, trusting that you will accept it in as benevolent and thankful wise as their Highnesses have done, and

---

la porte de son palais, y estant ces

mots en substance: 'serons nous si  
bestes, oh nobles Angloys, que croy  
renotre reyne estre enceinte si non

d'un marmot ou d'un dogue'''

<sup>1</sup> Contemporary Diary: *MS*

*Harleian*, iv. 19

•

that you will give an attent and inclinable ear to him.'

The legate then left his chair and came forward. He was now fifty-four years old, and he had passed but little of his life in England, yet his features had not wholly lost their English character. He had the arched eye-brow, and the delicately-cut cheek, and prominent eye of the beautiful Plantagenet face; a long, brown, curling beard flowed down upon his chest, which it almost covered; the mouth was weak and slightly open, the lips were full and pouting, the expression difficult to read. In a low voice, audible only to those who were near him, he spoke as follows:—'My Lords all, and you that are the Commons of this present Parliament assembled, as the cause of my repair hither hath been wisely and gravely declared by my Lord Chancellor, so, before I enter into the particulars of my commission, I have to say somewhat touching myself, and to give most humble and hearty thanks to the King's and Queen's Majesties, and after them to you all—which of a man exiled and banished from this commonwealth, have restored me to be a member of the same, and of a man having no place either here or elsewhere within this realm, have admitted me to a place where to speak and where to be heard. This I protest unto you all, that though I was exiled my native country without just cause, as God knoweth, yet the ingratitude could not pull from me the affection and desire that I had to your profit and to do you good.

'But, leaving the rehearsal hereof, and coming more near to the matter of my commission, I signify unto



you all, that my principal travail is for the restitution of this noble realm to the antient nobility, and to declare unto you that the See Apostolic, from whence I come, hath a special respect to this realm above all others, and not without cause, seeing that God himself, as it were, by providence hath given to this realm prerogative of nobility above others, which to make plain unto you, it is to be considered that this island first of all islands received the light of Christ's religion'

Going into history for a proof of this singular proposition, the legate said that the Britons had been converted by the See Apostolic, 'not one by one, as in other countries, as clocks denote the hours by distinction of times,' 'but altogether, at once, as it were, in a moment' The Saxons had brought back heathenism, but had again been soon converted, and the Popes had continued to heap benefit upon benefit on the favoured people, even making them a present of Ireland, 'which pertained to the See of Rome' The country had prospered, and the people had been happy down to the time of the late schism, from that unhappy day they had been overwhelmed with calamities

The legate dwelt in some detail on the misfortunes of the preceding years He then went on 'But, when all light of true religion seemed extinct, the churches defaced, the altars overthrown, the ministers corrupted, even like as in a lamp, the light being covered yet it is not quenched—even so in a few remained the confession of Christ's faith, namely, in the breast of the Queen's Excellency, of whom to speak without adulation, the

saying of the prophet may be verified, *ecce quasi derelicta* and see how miraculously God of his goodness preserved her Highness contrary to the expectation of men, that when numbers conspired against her, and policies were devised to disinherit her, and armed power prepared to destroy her, yet she, being a virgin, helpless, naked, and unarmed, prevailed, and had the victory of tyrants. For all these practices and devices, here you see her Grace established in her estate, your lawful Queen and governess, born among you, whom God hath appointed to govern you for the restitution of true religion and the extirpation of all errors and sects And to confirm her Grace more strongly in this enterprise, lo how the providence of God hath joined her in marriage with a prince of like religion, who, being a King of great might, armour, and force, yet useth towards you neither armour nor force, but seeketh you by way of love and amity; and as it was a singular favour of God to conjoin them in marriage, so it is not to be doubted but he shall send them issue for the comfort and surety of this commonwealth

‘Of all princes in Europe the Emperor hath travailed most in the cause of religion, yet, haply by some secret judgment of God, he hath not obtained the end. I can well compare him to David, which, though he were a man elect of God, yet for that he was contaminate with blood and wars, he could not build the temple of Jerusalem, but left the finishing thereof to Solomon who was *Rex pacificus*.’ So it may be thought that the appeasing of controversies of religion in Christendom is

not appointed to this Emperor, but rather to his son, who shall perform the building that his father had begun, which Church cannot be builded unless universally in all realms we adhere to one head, and do acknowledge him to be the vicar of God, and to have power from above—for all power is of God, according to the saying, *non est potestas nisi in Deo*.

‘All power being of God, he hath derived that power into two parts here on earth, which is into the powers imperial and ecclesiastical, and these two powers, as they be several and distinct, so have they two several effects and operations. Secular princes be ministers of God to execute vengeance upon transgressors and evil livers, and to preserve the well-doers and innocents from injury and violence, and this power is represented in these two most excellent persons the King’s and Queen’s Majesties here present. The other power is of ministration, which is the power of keys and orders in the ecclesiastical state, which is by the authority of God’s word and example of the apostle, and of all holy fathers from Christ hitherto attributed and given to the Apostolic See of Rome by special prerogative from which See I am here deputed legate and ambassador, having full and ample commission from thence, and have the keys committed to my hands. I confess to you that I have the keys—not as mine own keys, but as the keys of him that sent me, and yet cannot I open, not for want of power in me to give, but for certain impediments in you to receive, which must be taken away before my commission can take effect.

This I protest before you, my commission is not of prejudice to any person. I am come not to destroy, but to build, I come to reconcile, not to condemn, I am not come to compel, but to call again; I am not come to call anything in question already done; but my commission is of grace and clemency to such as will receive it—for, touching all matters that be past, they shall be as things cast into the sea of forgetfulness.

‘But the mean whereby you shall receive this benefit is to revoke and repeal those laws and statutes which be impediments, blocks, and bars to the execution of my commission. For, like as I myself had neither place nor voice to speak here amongst you, but was in all respects a banished man, till such time as ye had repealed those laws that lay in my way, even so cannot you receive the benefit and grace offered from the Apostolic See until the abrogation of such laws whereby you had disjoined and dis severed yourselves from the unity of Christ’s Church.

‘It remaineth, therefore, that you, like true Christians and provident men, for the weal of your souls and bodies, ponder what is to be done in this so weighty a cause, and so to frame your acts and proceedings as they may first tend to the glory of God, and, next, to the conservation of your commonwealth, surety, and quietness.’

The speech was listened to by such as could hear it with profound attention, and several persons were observed to clasp their hands again and again, and raise them convulsively before their faces. When the legate

sat down, Gardiner gave him the thanks of Parliament, and suggested that the two Houses should be left to themselves to consider what they would do. Pole withdrew with the King and Queen, and Gardiner exclaimed A prophet has 'the Lord raised up among us from among our brethren, and he shall save us' For the benefit of those who had been at the further end of the hall, he then recapitulated the substance of what had been said. He added a few words of exhortation, and the meeting adjourned

The next day, Thursday, Lords and Commons sat as usual at Westminster. The repeal Nov. 29 of all the Acts which directly, or by implication, were aimed at the Papacy, would occupy, it was found, a considerable time, but the impatient legate was ready to accept a promise as a pledge of performance, and the general question was therefore put severally in both Houses whether the country should return to obedience to the Apostolic See. Among the Peers no difficulty was made at all. Among the Commons, in a house of 360, there were two dissentients—one, whose name is not mentioned, gave a silent negative vote; the other, Sir Ralph Bagenall, stood up alone to protest. Twenty years, he said, 'that great and worthy Prince, King Henry,' laboured to expel the Pope from England. He for one had 'sworn to King Henry's laws,' and, 'he would keep his oath.'<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> The writer of the Italian 'Description' says that Bagenall gave way the next day. The contemporary narrative, among the *Harleian MSS* says that he persisted, and refused to kneel at the absolution

But Bagenall was listened to with smiles. The resolution passed, the very ease and unanimity betraying the hollow ground on which it rested; and, again, devout Catholics beheld the evident work of supernatural agency. Lords and Commons had received separately the same proposition, they had discussed it, voted on it, and come to a conclusion, each with closed doors, and the messengers of the two Houses encountered each other on their way to communicate their several decisions.<sup>1</sup> The chancellor arranged with Pole the forms which should be observed, and it was agreed that the Houses should present a joint petition to the King and Queen, acknowledging their past misconduct, engaging to undo the anti-papal legislation, and entreating their Majesties, as undefiled with the offences which taunted the body of the nation, to intercede for the removal of the interdict. A committee of Lords and Commons sat to consider the words in which the supplication should be expressed, and all preparations were completed by the evening.

Nov 30 And now St Andrew's Day was come, a day, as was then hoped, which would be remembered with awe and gratitude through all ages of English history. Being the festival of the institution of the Order of the Golden Fleece, high mass was sung

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Mentre la casa alta mandava a far sapere la sua conclusione alla casa bassa, la casa bassa mandava anch' ella per fare intendere il medesimo alla casa alta, sicchè i messi s' incontrarono per via, segno  
evidentissimo che lo Spirito di Dio lavorava in amendue i luoghi in un tempo i di una medesima conformita' — *Descriptio Reductionis Angliæ.*

in the morning in Westminster Abbey, Philip, Alva, and Ruy Gomez attended in their robes, with six hundred Spanish cavaliers. The Knights of the Garter were present in gorgeous costume, and nave and transept were thronged with the blended chivalry of England and Castile. It was two o'clock before the service was concluded. Philip returned to the palace to dinner, and the brief November afternoon was drawing in when the Parliament reassembled at the palace. At the upper end of the great hall a square platform had now been raised several steps above the floor; on which three chairs were placed as before; two under a canopy of cloth of gold, for the King and Queen; a third on the right, removed a little distance from them, for the legate. Below the platform, benches were placed longitudinally towards either wall. The bishops sat on the side of the legate, the lay peers opposite them on the left. The Commons sat on rows of cross benches in front, and beyond them were the miscellaneous crowd of spectators, sitting or standing as they could find room. The Cardinal, who had passed the morning at Lambeth, was conducted across the water in a state barge by Lord Arundel and six other peers. The King received him at the gate, and, leaving his suite in the care of the Duke of Alva, who was instructed to find them places, he accompanied Philip into the room adjoining the hall, where Mary, whose situation was supposed to prevent her from unnecessary exertion, was waiting for them. The royal procession was formed. Arundel and the Lords passed in to their places. The King and Queen,

with Pole in his legate's robes, ascended the steps of the platform, and took their seats.

When the stir which had been caused by their entrance was over, Gardiner mounted a tribune, and in the now fast waning light he bowed to the King and Queen, and declared the resolution at which the Houses had arrived. Then turning to the Lords and Commons, he asked if they continued in the same mind. Four hundred voices answered, 'We do.' 'Will you then,' he said, 'that I proceed in your names to supplicate for our absolution, that we may be received again into the body of the Holy Catholic Church, under the Pope, the supreme head thereof?' Again the voices assented. The Chancellor drew a scroll from under his robe, ascended the platform, and presented it unfolded on his knee to the Queen. The Queen looked through it, gave it to Philip, who looked through it also, and returned it. The Chancellor then rose and read aloud as follows —

'We, the Lords Spiritual and Temporal, and the Commons of the present Parliament assembled, representing the whole body of the realm of England, and dominions of the same, in our own names particularly, and also of the said body universally, in this our supplication directed to your Majesties—with most humble suit that it may by your gracious intercession and means be exhibited to the Most Reverend Father in God the Lord Cardinal Pole, Legate, sent specially hither from our Most Holy Father Pope Julius the Third and the See Apostolic of Rome—do declare ourselves very sorry



and repentant for the schism and disobedience committed in this realm and dominions of the same, against the said See Apostolic, either by making, agreeing, or executing any laws, ordinances, or commandments against the supremacy of the said See, or otherwise doing or speaking what might impugn the same; offering ourselves, and promising by this our supplication that, for a token and knowledge of our said repentance, we be, and shall be always, ready, under and with the authority of your Majesties, to do that which shall be in us for the abrogation and repealing of the said laws and ordinances in this present Parliament, as well for ourselves as for the whole body whom we represent. Whereupon we most humbly beseech your Majesties, as persons undefiled in the offences of this body towards the Holy See—which nevertheless God by his providence hath made subject to your Majesties—so to set forth this, our most humble suit, that we may obtain from the See Apostolic, by the said Most Reverend Father, as well particularly as universally, absolution, release, and discharge from all danger of such censures and sentences as by the laws of the Church we be fallen in; and that we may, as children repentant, be received into the bosom and unity of Christ's Church; so as this noble realm, with all the members thereof, may, in unity and perfect obedience to the See Apostolic and Pope for the time being, serve God and your Majesties, to the furtherance and advancement of his honour and glory<sup>1</sup>

---

<sup>1</sup> FOXE, vol. vi. p. 571. The petition was in Latin, but, as I

Having completed the reading, the Chancellor again presented the petition. The King and Queen went through the forms of intercession, and a secretary read aloud, first, the legate's original commission, and, next, the all-important extended form of it.

Pole's share of the ceremony was now to begin.

He first spoke a few words from his seat. 'Much indeed,' he said, 'the English nation had to thank the Almighty for recalling them to his fold. Once again God had given a token of his special favour to the realm; for as this nation, in the time of the Primitive Church, was the first to be called out of the darkness of heathenism, so now they were the first to whom God had given grace to repent of their schism; and if their repentance was sincere, how would the angels, who rejoice at the conversion of a single sinner, triumph at the recovery of a great and noble people.'

He moved to rise; Mary and Philip, seeing that the crisis was approaching, fell on their knees, and the assembly dropped at their example, while, in dead silence, across the dimly-lighted hall came the low, awful words of the absolution

'Our Lord Jesus Christ, which with his most precious blood hath redeemed and washed us from all our sins and iniquities, that he might purchase unto himself a glorious spouse without spot or wrinkle, whom

---

have nowhere seen the original, I	when he pleased, perhaps relieved
have not ventured to interfere with	
Foxe's translation Foxe, who	
could translate very idiomatically	
	his indignation on the present occasion by translating as awkwardly as possible.

the Father hath appointed head over all his Church—he by his mercy absolves you, and we, by apostolic authority given unto us by the Most Holy Lord Pope Julius the Third, his vicegerent on earth, do absolve and deliver you, and every of you, with this whole realm and the dominions thereof, from all heresy and schism, and from all and every judgment, censure, and pain for that cause incurred, and we do restore you again into the unity of our Mother the Holy Church, in the name of the Father, of the Son, and of the Holy Ghost.’

Amidst the hushed breathing every tone was audible, and at the pauses were heard the smothered sobs of the Queen. ‘Amen, amen,’ rose in answer from many voices. Some were really affected; some were caught for the moment with a contagion which it was hard to resist; some threw themselves weeping in each other’s arms. King, Queen, and Parliament, rising from their knees, went immediately—the legate leading—into the chapel of the palace, where the choir, with the rolling organ, sang *Te Deum*, and Pole closed the scene with a benediction from the altar.

‘Blessed day for England,’ cries the Italian describer, in a rapture of devotion. ‘The people exclaim in ecstasies, we are reconciled to God, we are brought back to God—the King beholds his realm, so lately torn by divisions, at the mercy of the first enemy who would seize upon it, secured on a foundation which never can be shaken: and who can express the joy—who can tell the exultation of the Queen? She has shown herself the handmaid of the Lord, and all generations shall call

her blessed : she has given her kingdom to God as a thank-offering for those great mercies which He has bestowed upon her ' <sup>1</sup>

And the legate ;—but the legate has described his emotions in his own inimitable manner. Pole went back to Lambeth, not to rest, but to pour out his soul to the Holy Father.

In his last letter he said ' he had told his Holiness that he had hoped that England would be recovered to the fold at last ; yet he had then some fears remaining, so far estranged were the minds of the people from the Holy See, lest at the last moment some compromise might ruin all '

But the godly forwardness of the King and Queen had overcome every difficulty ; and on that evening, the day of St Andrew—of Andrew who first brought his brother Peter to Christ—the realm of England had been brought back to its obedience to Peter's See, and through Peter to Christ. The great act had been accomplished, accomplished by the virtue and the labour of the inestimable sovereigns with whom God had blessed the world.

' And oh,' he said, ' how many things, how great things, may the Church our mother, the bride of Christ, promise herself from these her children ? Oh piety ! oh ! antient faith ! Whoever looks on them will repeat the words of the prophet of the Church's early offspring ; This is the seed which the Lord hath blessed ' How

---

<sup>1</sup> Descriptio Reductionis Angliæ *Epist.* REG POL. vol. v.

earnestly, how lovingly, did your Holiness favour their marriage, a marriage formed after the very pattern of that of our Most High King, who, being Heir of the world, was sent down by his Father from his royal throne, to be at once the Spouse and the Son of the Virgin Mary, and be made the Comforter and the Saviour of mankind and, in like manner, the greatest of all the princes upon earth, the heir of his father's kingdom, departed from his own broad and happy realms, that he might come hither into this land of trouble, he, too, to be spouse and son of this virgin; for, indeed, though spouse he be, he so bears himself towards her as if he were her son, to aid in the reconciliation of this people to Christ and the Church <sup>1</sup>

'When your Holiness first chose me as your legate, the Queen was rising up as a rod of incense out of trees of myrrh, and as frankincense out of the desert And how does she now shine out in loveliness? What a savour does she give forth unto her people Yea, even

<sup>1</sup> This amazing comparison (for one cannot forget what Philip had been, was, and was to be) must be given in the original words of the legate.

'Quam sancte sanctitas vestra omni auctoritate studioque huic matrimonio favit, quod sane videtur præ se ferre magnam summi illius regis similitudinem, qui mundi hæres a regalibus sedibus a patre demissus fuit, ut esset virginis sponsus et filius, et hæc ratione universum genus humanum consolaretur ac

servaret Sic enim hic rex maximus omnium qui in terris sunt hæres, patris relictis regnis de illis quidem amplissimis ac felicissimis in hoc turbulentum regnum de contulit, hujusque virginis sponsus et filius est factus, ita enim eiga illam se gerit tanquam filius esset cum sit sponsus, ut quod jam plane perfectit sequestrem se atque adjutorem ad reconciliandos Christo et Ecclesiæ hos populos præberet'—Pole to the Pope *Epist.* REG. POL vol v

as the prophet saith of the mother of Christ, 'before she was in labour she brought forth, before she was delivered she hath borne a man-child.' Who ever yet hath seen it, who has heard of the similitude of it ? Shall the earth bring forth in a day, or shall a nation of men be born together ? but Mary has brought forth the nation of England before the time of that delivery for which we all are hoping ! '

Unable to exhaust itself in words, the Catholic enthusiasm flowed over in processions, in sermons, masses, and *Te Deums*. Gardiner at Paul's Cross, on the Sunday succeeding, confessed his sins in having borne a part in bringing about the schism. Pole rode through the city between the King and Queen, with his legate's cross before him, blessing the people. When December the news reached Rome, Julius first embraced the messenger, then flung himself on his knees, and said a Paternoster. The guns at St Angelo roared in triumph. There were jubilees and masses of the Holy Ghost, and bonfires, and illuminations, and pardons and indulgences. In the exuberance of his hopes, the Pope sent a nuncio to urge that, in the presence of this great mercy, peace should be made with France, where the King was devoted to the Church, the Catholic powers would then have the command of Europe, and the heretics could be destroyed.<sup>1</sup> One thing only seemed forgotten, that the transaction was a bargain. The Papal pardon had been thrust upon criminals, whose hearts were so culpably indifferent

---

<sup>1</sup> PALLAVICINO

that it was necessary to bribe them to accept it; and the conditions of the compromise, even yet, were far from concluded

The sanction given to the secularization of Church property was a cruel disappointment to the clergy, who cared little for Rome, but cared much for wealth and power. Supported by a party in the House of Commons who had not shared in the plunder, and who envied those who had been more fortunate,<sup>1</sup> the ecclesiastical faction began to agitate for a reconsideration of the question. Their friends in Parliament said that the dispensation was unnecessary. Every man's conscience ought to be his guide whether to keep his lands or surrender them. The Queen was known to hold the same opinion, and eager preachers began to sound the note of restitution.<sup>2</sup> Growing bolder, the Lower House of Convocation presented the bishops immediately after

<sup>1</sup> Renard to the Emperor. *Gravelle Papers*, vol. iv. \*

<sup>2</sup> 'It was this morning told me by one of the Emperor's council, who misliked much the matter, that a preacher of ours whose name he rehearsed, beateth the pulpit jollily in England for a restitution of abbey lands. It is a strange thing in a well-ordered commonwealth that a subject should be so hardy to cry unto the people openly such learning, whereby your winter work may in the summer be attempted with some storm. These unbridled preachings were so much misliked in the ill-governed time as men trusted in this

good governance it should have been amended, and so may it be when it shall please my Lords of the Council as diligently to consider it, as it is more than necessary to be looked unto. The party methinketh might well be put to silence, if he were asked how, being a monk, and having professed and vowed solemnly wilful poverty, he can with conscience keep a deanery and three or four benefices'—Mason to Petie. *MS Germany*, bundle 16, May, State Paper Office. It is not clear who the offender was. Perhaps it was Weston, Dean of Westminster and Prolocutor of Convocation.

with a series of remarkable requests. The Pope, in the terms on which he was reinstated, was but an ornamental unreality; and the practical English clergy desired substantial restorations which their eyes could see and their hands could handle

They demanded, therefore, first, that if a statute was brought into Parliament for the assurance of the Church estates to the present possessors, nothing should be allowed to pass prejudicial to their claims 'on lands, tenements, pensions, or tythe rents, which had appertained to bishops, or other ecclesiastical persons.'

They demanded, secondly, the repeal of the Statute of Mortmain, and afterwards the abolition of lay impropriations, the punishment of heretics, the destruction of all the English Prayer-books and Bibles, the revival of the Act *De Hæretico Comburendo*, the re-establishment of the episcopal courts, the restoration of the legislative functions of Convocation, and the exemption of the clergy from the authority of secular magistrates

Finally, they required that the Church should be restored absolutely to its ancient rights, immunities, and privileges, that no Premunire should issue against a bishop until he had first received notice and warning, that the judges should define 'a special doctrine of Premunire,' and that the Statutes of Provisors should not be wrested from their meaning.<sup>1</sup>

The petition expressed the views of Gardiner, and was probably drawn under his direction. Had the

---

<sup>1</sup> Demands of the Lower House of Convocation, December, 1554 printed in WILKINS's *Concilia*.



alienated property been no more than the estates of the suppressed abbeys, the secular clergy would have acquiesced without difficulty in the existing disposition of it. But the benefices impropriated to the abbeys which had been sold or granted with the lands, they looked on as their own ; the cathedral chapters and the bishops' sees, which had suffered from the second locust flight under Edward, formed part of the local Anglican Church : and Gardiner and his brother prelates declared that, if the Pope chose to set aside the canons, and permit the robbing of the religious orders, he might do as he pleased ; but that he had neither right nor powers to sanction the spoliation of the working bishops and clergy. Thus the feast of reconciliation having been duly celebrated, both Houses of Parliament became again the theatre of fierce and fiery conflict

There were wide varieties of opinion. The lawyers went beyond the clergy in limiting the powers of the Pope ; the lawyers also said the Pope had no rights over the temporalities of bishops or abbots, deans, or rectors ; but they did not any more admit the rights of the clergy. The English clergy, regular and secular, they said, had held their estates from immemorial time under the English Crown, and it was not for any spiritual authority, domestic or foreign, to decide whether an English King and an English Parliament might interfere to alter the disposition of those estates

On other questions the clerical party were in the ascendant ; they had a decided majority in the House of Commons ; in the Upper House there was a compact

body of twenty bishops ; and Gardiner held the proxies of Lord Rich, Lord Oxford, Lord Westmoreland, and Lord Abergavenny. The Queen had created four new peers, three of whom, Lord North, Lord Chandos, and Lord Williams, were bigoted Catholics ; the fourth, Lord Howard, was absent with the fleet, and was unrepresented. Lord North held the proxy of Lord Worcester ; and the Marquis of Winchester, Lord Montague, and Lord Stourton acted generally with the chancellor. Lord Russell was keeping out of the way, being suspected of heresy ; Wentworth was at Calais ; Grey was at Guisnes, and the proxies of the two last noblemen, which in the late Parliament were held by Arundel and Paget, were, for some unknown reason, now held by no one. Thus, in a house of seventy-three members only, reduced to sixty-nine by the absence of Howard, Russell, Wentworth, and Grey, Gardiner had thirty-one votes whom he might count upon as certain ; he knew his power, and at once made fatal use of it.

For two Parliaments the liberal party had prevented him from recovering the power of persecution. He did not attempt to pass the Inquisitorial Act on which he was defeated in the last session. But the Act to revive the Lollard Statutes was carried through the House of Commons in the second week in December ; on the 15th it was brought up to the Lords ; and although those who had before fought the battle of humanity, struggled again bravely in the same cause, this time their numbers were too small, they failed, and the lives of the Pro-

testants were in their enemies' hands<sup>1</sup> Simultaneously Gardiner obtained for the bishops' courts their long-coveted privilege of arbitrary arrest and discretionary punishment, and the clergy obtained, as they desired, the restoration of their legislative powers. The property question alone disintegrated the phalanx of orthodoxy, and left an opening for the principles of liberty to assert themselves. The faithful and the faithless among the laity were alike participators in Church plunder, and were alike nervously sensitive when the current of the reaction ran in the direction of a demand for restitution.

Here, therefore, Paget and his friends chose their ground to maintain the fight.

It has been seen that Pole especially dreaded the appearance of any sort of composition between the country and the Papacy. The submission had, in fact, been purchased, but the purchase ought to be disguised. As soon, therefore, as the Parliament set themselves to the fulfilment of their promise to undo the Acts by which England had separated itself from Rome, the legate required a simple statute of repeal. The Pope had granted a dispensation, it was enough, and it should be accepted gratefully, the penitence of sinners ought not to be mixed with questions of worldly interest; the returning prodigal, when asking pardon at his father's feet,

---

<sup>1</sup> 'La chambie haulte y faict difficulté pour ce que l'auctorité et jurisdiction des évesques est autorisée et renouvelée, et que le peina  
semble trop grievre Mais l'on tient qu'ilz s'accordeont par la pluralité'  
—Renard to the Emperor, Decem-ber 21 *Granvelle Papers*, vol. 17.

had made no conditions, the English nation must not disfigure their obedience by alluding, in the terms of it, to the Pope's benevolence to them

The holders of the property, on the other hand, thinking more of the reality than the form, were determined that the Act of Repeal should contain, as nearly as possible, a true statement of their case. They *had* made conditions, and those conditions had been reluctantly complied with; and, to prevent future errors, the nature of the compact ought to be explained with the utmost distinctness. They had replaced the bishops in authority, and the bishops might be made use of at some future time, indirectly or directly, to disturb the settlement. A fresh Pontiff might refuse to recognize the concessions of his predecessors. The Papal supremacy, the secularization of the Church property, and the authority of the episcopal courts should, therefore, be interwoven inextricably to stand or fall together, and as the lawyers denied the authority of the Holy See to pronounce upon the matter at all, the legal opinion might be embodied also as a further security.

After a week of violent discussion, the lay interest in the House of Lords found itself the strongest. Pole exclaimed that, if the submission and the dispensation were tied together, it was a simoniacal compact, the Pope's Holiness was bought and sold for a price, he said, and he would sooner go back to Rome, and leave his work unfinished, than consent to an Act so derogatory to the Holy See. But the protest was vain, if the legate was so anxious, his anxiety was an additional reason

why the opposition should persevere; if he chose to go, his departure could be endured.<sup>1</sup>

So keen was the debate that there was not so much as a Christmas recess. Christmas-day was kept as a holyday. On the 26th the struggle began again, and, fortunately, clouds had risen between the House of Commons and the Court. Finding more difficulty than he expected in embroiling England with France, Philip, to feel the temper of the people, induced one of the peers to carry a note to the Lower House to request an opinion whether it was not the duty of a son to assist his father. An answer was instantly returned that the question had been already disposed of by the late Parliament in the marriage treaty, and the further discussion of it was unnecessary.<sup>2</sup> Secretary Bourne, at the instigation of Gardiner, proposed to revive the claims on the pensions; but he met with no better reception. And

<sup>1</sup> 'Le parlement faict instance que, en statut de la dicte obediencie la dicte dispense soit inserée, ce que le dict cardinal ne veult admettre, à ce que ne semble la dicte obediencie avoir este rachetée, et est passée si avant la dicte difficulté que le dict cardinal a déclaré qu'il retourneroit plutôt à Rome et delaisseroit la chose imparfaite que consentir à chose contre l'auctorité dudict S. Siège, et de si grande préjudice'—Renard to the Emperor, December *Granville Papers*, vol. iv

<sup>2</sup> 'Ces jours passez, il y eust ung personnage de la haulte chambre, auquel il sembla pour ne perdre

temps devoit porter, (comme il fist) un billette à la basse par laquelle il mettait en avant s'il n'estoit pas raisonnable que le filz secourust le père, voullant dire de ce roy a l'Empereur. Ce qui fut si bien recueilly du tiers estat, si promptment et avecques grande raison respondu, comme par le dernier parlement et le traité de mariage d'entre ce roy et roynne cela avoit esté et estoit tellement considéré, qu'il n'estoit plus besoign mettre telles choses en avant pour les faire entrer à la guerre'—Noailles to the King of France *Ambassades*, vol. iv p. 76.

the Court made a further blunder. Mary had become so accustomed to success, that she assured herself she could obtain all that she desired. The object of the Court was to secure the regency for Philip, with full sovereign powers, should she die leaving a child, should she die childless, to make him her successor. The first step would be Philip's coronation, which had been long talked of, and which the House of Commons was now desired to sanction. The House of Commons returned a unanimous refusal<sup>1</sup>

The effects of these cross influences on the Papal statute, though they cannot be traced in detail, must have been not inconsiderable. At length, on <sup>1555</sup> January 4 the 4th of January, after passing backwards and forwards for a fortnight between the two Houses, the Great Bill, as it was called, emerged, finished, in the form of a petition to the Crown —

‘Whereas,’ so runs the preamble,<sup>2</sup> ‘since the 20th year of King Henry VIII, of famous memory, much false and erroneous doctrine hath been taught, preached, and written, partly by divers natural-born subjects of this realm, and partly being brought in hither from sundry foreign countries, hath been sown and spread abroad within the same—by reason whereof as well the

---

<sup>1</sup> ‘Je vous puis dire, Sire, que toutes ces choses ont passé bien loing de l’espérance qu’il avoit, puisqu’il s’attendoit de se faire couronner, comme despuis six jours il en avoit particulièrement faict rechercher

ceux de la basse chambre dudict parlement qui luy ont tous d’une voix rejeté’—Noailles to the King of France *Ambassades*, vol iv p 137

<sup>2</sup> 1 and 2 Philip and Mary, cap 8

spirituality as the temporality of your Highness's realm and dominions have swerved from the obedience of the See Apostolic, and declined from the unity of Christ's Church, and so have continued until such time as—your Majesty being first raised up by God, and set in the seat royal over us, and then by his divine and gracious Providence knyt in marriage with the most noble and virtuous prince the King our Sovereign Lord your husband—the Pope's Holiness and the See Apostolic sent hither unto your Majesties, as unto persons undefiled, and by God's goodness preserved from the common infection aforesaid, and to the whole realm, the Most Reverend Father in God the Lord Cardinal Pole, Legate *de Latere*, to call us again into the right way, from which we have all this long while wandered and strayed; and we, after sundry and long plagues and calamities, seeing, by the goodness of God, our own errours, have knowledged the same unto the said Most Reverend Father, and by him have been and are (the rather at the contemplation of your Majesties) received and embraced into the unity of Christ's Church, upon our humble submission, and promise made for a declaration of our repentance to repeal and abrogate such Acts and Statutes as had been made in Parliament since the said 20th year of the said King Henry VIII, against the supremacy of the See Apostolic, as in our submission exhibited to the said most Reverend Father in God, by your Majesties appeareth—it may like your Majesty, for the accomplishment of our promise, that all such laws be repealed. That is to say —

'The Act against obtaining Dispensations from Rome for Pluralities and non-Residence.<sup>1</sup>

'The Act that no person shall be cited out of the Diocese where he or she dwelleth <sup>2</sup>

'The Act against Appeals to the See of Rome <sup>3</sup>

'The Act against the Payment of Annates and First-fruits to the See of Rome.<sup>4</sup>

'The Act for the Submission of the Clergy.<sup>5</sup>

'The Act for the Election and Consecration of Bishops.<sup>6</sup>

'The Act against Exactions from the See of Rome.<sup>7</sup>

'The Act of the Royal Supremacy.<sup>8</sup>

'The Act for the Consecration of Suffragan Bishops <sup>9</sup>

'The Act for the Reform of the Canon Law.<sup>10</sup>

'The Act against the Authority of the Pope <sup>11</sup>

'The Act for the Release of those who had obtained Dispensations from Rome.<sup>12</sup>

'The Act authorizing the King to appoint Bishops by Letters Patent.<sup>13</sup>

'The Act of Precontracts and Degrees of Consanguinity <sup>14</sup>

'The Act for the King's Style <sup>15</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 21 Henry VIII cap 13

<sup>2</sup> 23 Ibid cap 9

<sup>3</sup> 24 Ibid cap 12

<sup>4</sup> 23 Henry VIII cap 20 The Act was repealed, but the annates were not restored

<sup>5</sup> 25 Henry VIII cap 19

<sup>6</sup> 25 Ibid cap 20

<sup>7</sup> 25 Ibid. cap. 21.

<sup>8</sup> 26 Ibid cap 1

<sup>9</sup> 26 Ibid cap 14

<sup>10</sup> 27 Ibid cap 15.

<sup>11</sup> 28 Ibid cap 10.

<sup>12</sup> 28 Ibid cap 16

<sup>13</sup> 31 Ibid cap 9

<sup>14</sup> 33 Ibid cap 38

<sup>15</sup> 35 Ibid. cap 3



‘The Act permitting the Marriage of Doctors of Civil Law.’<sup>1</sup>

In the repeal of these statutes the entire ecclesiastical legislation of Henry VIII was swept away; and, so far as a majority in a single Parliament could affect them, the work was done absolutely and with clean completeness.

But there remained two other Acts collaterally and accidentally affecting the See of Rome; for the repeal of which the Court was no less anxious than for the repeal of the Act of Supremacy, where the Parliament were not so complaisant.

Throughout the whole reaction under Mary there was one point on which the laity never wavered. Attempts such as that which has been just mentioned were made incessantly, directly or indirectly, to alter the succession and cut off Elizabeth. They were like the fretful and profitless chafings of waves upon a rock. The two Acts on which Elizabeth’s claims were rested<sup>2</sup> touched, in one or other of their clauses, the Papal prerogative, and were included in the list to be condemned. But, of these Acts, ‘so much only’ as affected the See of Rome was repealed. The rest was studiously declared to continue in force.

Yet, with this reservation, the Parliament had gone far in their concessions, and it remained for them to secure their equivalent.

They reinstated the bishops, but, in giving back a

---

<sup>1</sup> 37 Henry VIII cap 17

<sup>2</sup> 28 *Ibid.* cap 7, 35 *Ibid.* cap 1.

power which had been so much abused, they took care to protect—not, alas! the innocent lives which were about to be sacrificed—but their own interests. The bishops and clergy of the Province of Canterbury having been made to state their case and their claims, in a petition to the Crown, they were then compelled formally to relinquish those claims, and the petition and the relinquishment were embodied in the Act as the condition of the restoration of the authority of the Church courts<sup>1</sup>. In continuation, the Lords and Commons desired that, for the removal ‘of all occasion of contention, suspicion, and trouble, both outwardly and inwardly, ‘in men’s consciences,’ the Pope’s Holiness, as represented by the legate, ‘by dispensation, toleration, or permission, as the case required,’ would recognize all such foundations of colleges, hospitals, cathedrals, churches, schools, or bishoprics as had been established during the schism, would confirm the validity of all ecclesiastical acts

---

<sup>1</sup> ‘Albert, by the laws of the Church, the bishops and clergy were the defenders and protectors of all ecclesiastical rights, and would therefore in nature be bound to use their best endeavours for the recovery of the lands and goods lost to the Church during the late schism, they, nevertheless, perceiving the tenures of those lands and goods were now complicated beyond power of extrication, and that the attempt to recover them might promote disaffection in the realm, and cause the overthrow of the present happy settlement of religion, preferring public peace to private commodity, and the salvation of souls to worldly possessions, did consent that the present disposition of those lands and goods should remain undisturbed. They besought their Majesties to intercede with the legate for his consent, and, for themselves, they requested, in return, that the lawful jurisdiction of the Church might be restored’—  
1 and 2 Philip and Mary, cap 8, sec 31

which had been performed during the same period, and, finally, would consent that all property, of whatever kind, taken from the Church, should remain to its present possessors—‘so as all persons having sufficient conveyance of the said lands, goods, and chattels by the common laws, or acts, or statutes of the realm, might, without scruple of conscience, enjoy them without impeachment or trouble, by pretence of any general council, canon, or ecclesiastical law, and clear from all dangers of the censures of the Church’ The petitions, both of clergy and Parliament, the Act went on to say, had been considered by the Cardinal; and the Cardinal had acquiesced. He had undertaken, in the Pope’s name, that the possessors of either lands or goods should never be molested either then or in time to come, in virtue of any Papal decree, or canon, or council, that if any attempt should be made by any bishop or other ecclesiastic to employ the spiritual weapons of the Church to extort restitution, such act or acts were declared vain and of none effect. The dispensation was pronounced, nor could the legate’s protests avail to prevent it from appearing in the Statute. He was permitted, only in consideration of the sacrifice, to interweave amidst the legal technicalities some portion of his own feeling. The impious detainers of holy things, while permitted to maintain their iniquity, were reminded of the fate of Belshazzar, and were urged to restore the patens, chalices, and ornaments of the altars. The impropiators of benefices were implored, in the mercy of

Christ, to remember the souls of the people, and provide for the decent performance of the services of the churches.<sup>1</sup>

Here the Act might have been expected to end. The nature of the transaction between the Parliament and the Pope had been made sufficiently clear. Yet, had nothing more been said, the surrender of their claims by the clergy would have implied that they had parted with something which they might have legitimately required. Under the inspiration of the lawyers, therefore, a series of clauses were superadded, explaining that, notwithstanding the dispensation, "The title of all lands, possessions, and hereditaments in their Majesties' realms and dominions was grounded in the laws, statutes, and customs of the same, and by their high jurisdiction, authority royal, and crown imperial, *and in their courts only*, might be impleaded, ordeied, tried, and judged, and none otherwise ' and, therefore, 'whosoever, by any process obtained out of any ecclesi-

---

<sup>1</sup> 'Et licet omnes res mobiles ecclesiarum indistincte us qui eas tenent relaxaverimus, eos tamen admonitos esse volumus ut ante oculos habentes divini judicii severitatem contra Balthazarem Regem Babylonis, qui vasa sacra non a se sed a patre a templo ablata in profanos usus convertit, ea propriis ecclesiis si extant vel aliis restituant hortantes etiam et per viscera misericordie Jesu Christi obtestantes eos omnes quos hæc res tangit, ut salutis sue non omnino immemores hæc

saltem efficiant, ut ex bonis ecclesiasticis maxime us quæ ratione personatum et vicariatuum populi ministrorum sustentationi fuerint specialiter destinata, seu aliis cathedralibus et aliis quæ nunc extant inferioribus ecclesiis curam animarum exercentibus, ita provideatur, ut eorum pastores commode et honeste juxta eorum qualitatem et statum sustentari possint, et curam animarum laudabiliter exercere' — 1 and 2 Philip and Mary, cap 3, sec 31.

astical court within the realm or without, or by pretence of any spiritual jurisdiction or otherwise, contrary to the laws of the realm, should inquiet or molest any person or persons, or body politic, for any of the said lands or things above specified, should incur the danger of Premunire, and should suffer and incur the forfeitures and pains contained in the same<sup>1</sup>

Vainly the clergy had entreated for a limitation or removal of Premunire. That spectre remained unexorcised in all its shadowy terror; and while it survived, the penitence of England went no deeper than the lips, however fine the words and eloquent the phrases in which it was expressed. As some compensation, the Mortmain Act was suspended for twenty years. Yet, as if it were in reply to Pole's appeal, a mischievous provision closed the Act, that, notwithstanding anything contained in it, laymen entitled to tithes might recover them with the same readiness as before the first day of the present Parliament.<sup>2</sup>

Such was the great statute of reconciliation with Rome, with which, in the inability to obtain a better, the legate was compelled to be satisfied, and to reconsider his threat of going back to Italy.

This first conflict was no sooner ended than another commenced. The Commons would not consent that Philip should be crowned, but, as the Queen said she was *encomente*, provision had to be made for a regency, and a bill was introduced into the Upper House which has

---

<sup>1</sup> 1 and 2 Philip and Mary, cap. 8, sec. 31.

<sup>2</sup> Ibid

not survived, but which, in spirit, was unfavourable to the King<sup>1</sup> Gardiner, in the course of the debate, attempted to put in a clause affecting Elizabeth,<sup>2</sup> but the success was no better than usual. The Act went down to the Commons, where, however, it was immediately cancelled. Though the Commons would give Philip no rights as King, they were better disposed towards him than the Lords; and they drew another bill of their own, in which they declared the father to be the natural and fitting guardian of the child. The experience of protectorates, they said, had been uniformly unfortunate, and should the Queen die leaving an heir, Philip should be Regent of the realm during the minority; if obliged to be absent on the Continent, he might himself nominate his deputy,<sup>3</sup> and so long as it should be his pleasure to remain in England, his person should be under the protection of the laws of high treason.

Taking courage from the apparent disposition of the House, the friends of the Court proposed that, should the Queen die childless, the crown should devolve absolutely upon him for his life<sup>4</sup>. But in this

<sup>1</sup> 'It was suspected,' says Renard, 'que le dict act se proposoit à mauvais fin, qu'il estoit contre les traictes et capitulation de mariage pour hereder la couronne qui venoit de mauvais auteurs qu'ilz plustôt desuoient le mal dudict S. roy et inquietude dudict royaume que le bien'—Renard to the Emperor  
*Granville Papers*, vol. iv. p. 347.

<sup>2</sup> *Ibid* p. 348

<sup>3</sup> 'Et que en son absence il y pourra nommer qui luy plaira'—*Granville Papers*, vol. iv. p. 348

<sup>4</sup> 'Aulcuns particuliers proposaient en ladicte chambre basse que le dict S. roy deust demeurer ioy absolu dudict royaume mourant ladicte dame sans houis sa vie durant'—*Granville Papers*, vol. iv. p. 348

they were going too far. The suggestion was listened to coldly; and Philip, who had really calculated on obtaining from Parliament, in some form or other, a security for his succession, despatched Ruy Gomez to Brussels, to consult the Emperor on the course which should be pursued.<sup>1</sup> On the whole, however, could the bill of the House of Commons be carried, Renard was disposed to be contented; the Queen was confident in her hopes of an heir, and it might not be worth while to irritate the people unnecessarily about Elizabeth.<sup>2</sup> The clause empowering Philip to govern by deputy in his absence was especially satisfactory.<sup>3</sup>

But the peers, whom the Commons had refused to consult on the new form of the measure, would not part so easily with their own opinions; they adopted the phraseology of the Lower House, but this particular and precious feature in it they pared away. The bill, as it eventually passed, declared Philip Regent till his child should be of age, and so long as he continued in the realm; but, at the same time, fatally for the objects at which he was aiming, it bound him again to observe

<sup>1</sup> 'Ruy Gomez est allé vers l'Empereur pour faire entendre les difficultez qu'ilz trouvent de faire demeurer ceste couronne à son dict filz, au cas que la royne sa femme allast de vie à trespas sans enfans, et d'autant qu'ilz ont congreu la volonté de ceulx cy estre bien loin de leur intention, et pour ce scavoir par quelz moyens il semblera bon audit Empereur qu'on pusse mettre

cela en termes devant la fin de ce pailement'—NOAILLES

<sup>2</sup> 'Et quant à la declaration de bastardise l'on n'est d'opinion qu'elle se doige entamer au dict pailement, puisque l'apparence d'heretier est certaine et pour l'evident et congrue contrariete que seroit en toute le royaume'—Renard to the Emperor *Si anuelle Papers*, p. 348

<sup>3</sup> Ibid

all the articles of the marriage treaty, 'which, during the time that he should hold the government, should remain and continue in as full force and strength, as if they were newly inserted and rehearsed in the present Act.'<sup>1</sup>

The disposition of the House of Lords was the more dangerous, because the bishops, of course, voted with the Government, and the strength of the opposition, therefore, implied something like unanimity in the lay peers. The persecuting Act had been carried with difficulty, and in the reconciliation with Rome the legate had been studiously mortified. On the succession and the coronation the Court had been wholly baffled; and in the Regency Bill they had obtained but half of what they had desired. At the least Mary had hoped to secure for the King the free disposal of the army and the finances, and she had not been able so much as to ask for it. Compelled to rest contented with such advantages as had been secured, the Court would not risk the results of further controversy by prolonging the session; and on the 16th of January, at four o'clock in the afternoon, the King and Queen came to the House of Lords almost unattended, and with an evident expression of dissatisfaction dissolved the Parliament.<sup>2</sup>

<sup>1</sup> 1 and 2 Philip and Mary, cap 10

<sup>2</sup> 'Ilz sont pour cejourd'hui bien esloignez de ce qu'ilz pensoient faire il y a six semaines en ce parlement, ou ilz faisoient compte que ne pouvoient couronner ce roy ou luy faire

succeder ce royaume, à tout le moins de luy en faire tumber l'administration, avecques tel pouvoir sur les forces et finances qu'il en eust peu disposer à sa volonté. Toutefois la chose a prins telle issue que pour ce coup il fault qu'il se



I have been particular in relating the proceedings of this Parliament, because it marks the point where the flood tide of reaction ceased to ascend, and the ebb recommenced. From the beginning of the Reformation in 1529, two distinct movements had gone on side by side—the alteration of doctrines, and the emancipation of the laity from Papal and ecclesiastical domination. With the first, the contemporaries of Henry VIII, the country gentlemen and the peers, who were the heads of families at the period of Mary's accession, had never sympathized, and the tyranny of the Protestants while they were in power had converted a disapproval which time would have overcome, into active and determined indignation. The Papacy was a mixed question, the Pilgrims of Grace in 1536, and the Cornish rebels in 1549, had demanded the restoration of the spiritual primacy to the See of St Peter, and Henry himself, until Pole and Paul III called on Europe to unite in a crusade against him, had not determined wholly against some degree of concession. In the Pope, as a sovereign who claimed reverence and tribute, who interfered with the laws of the land, and maintained at Rome a supreme Court of Appeal—who pretended a right to depose kings and absolve subjects from their allegiance—who

contente à beaucoup moins qu'il ne s'attendoit

'Ce qui a tellement despleu à ledict roy et royne, que le 16 de ce mois ilz allerent par eau tous deux clore et terminer ledict parlement, sui les quatre heures du sou, assez

petitement accompagnez et sans aulcune ceremonie, monstians et faisans congnoistre à ung chascun avou quelque grand mescontentement contre l'assemblée d'icelluy'—  
Noailles to the Constable *Ambas-  
sades*, vol iv. p 153

held a weapon in excommunication as terrible to the laity as Premunire was terrible to ecclesiastics—in the Pope under this aspect, only a few insignificant fanatics entertained any kind of interest.

But experience had proved that to a nation cut off from the centre of Catholic union, the maintenance of orthodoxy was impossible · the supremacy of the Pope, therefore, came back as a tolerated feature in the return to the Catholic faith, and the ecclesiastical courts were reinstated in authority to check unlicensed extravagance of opinion. Their restored power, however, was over opinion only ; wherever the pretensions of the Church would come in collision with the political constitution, wherever they menaced the independence of the temporal magistrate or the tenure of property, there the progress of restoration was checked by the rock, and could eat no further into the soil. The Pope and the clergy recovered their titular rank, and in one direction unhappily they recovered the reality of power. But the temporal spoils of the struggle remained with the laity, and if the clergy lifted a hand to retake them, their weapons would be instantly wrenched from their grasp.

If the genuine friends of human freedom had acquiesced without resistance in this conclusion, if the nobility had contented themselves with securing their worldly and political interests, and had made no effort to restrain or modify the exercise of the authority which they were giving back, they might be accused of having accepted a dishonourable compromise. But they did

what they could. They worked with such legal means as were in their power, and for two Parliaments they succeeded in keeping persecution at bay; they failed in the third, but failed only after a struggle. The Protestants themselves had created, by their own misconduct, the difficulty of defending them; and armed unconstitutional resistance was an expedient to be resorted to, only when it had been seen how the clergy would conduct themselves. English statesmen may be pardoned if they did not anticipate the passions to which the guardians of orthodoxy were about to abandon themselves. Parliament had maintained the independence of the English courts of law. It had maintained the *Premunire*. It had forbidden the succession to be tampered with. If this was not everything, it was something—something which in the end would be the undoing of all the rest.

The Court and the bishops, however, were for the present absolute in their own province. The persecuting Acts were once more upon the Statute Book; and when the realities of the debates in Parliament had disappeared, the Cardinal and the Queen could again give the rein to their imagination. They had called up a phantom out of its grave, and they persuaded themselves that they were witnessing the resurrection of the spirit of truth, that heresy was about to vanish from off the English soil, like an exhalation of the morning, at the brightness of the Papal return. The chancellor and the clergy were springing at the leash like hounds with the game in view, fanaticism and revenge lashing them

forward. If the temporal schemes of the Court were thwarted, it was, perhaps, because Heaven desired that exclusive attention should be given first to the salvation of souls.

For all past political offences, therefore, there was now an amnesty, and such prisoners as remained unexecuted for Wyatt's conspiracy were released from the Tower on the 18th of January. On the 25th a hundred and sixty priests walked in procession through the London streets, chanting litanies, with eight bishops walking after them, and Bonner carrying the host. On the 28th the Cardinal issued his first general instructions. The bishops were directed to call together their clergy in every diocese in England, and to inform them of the benevolent love of the Holy Father, and of the arrival of the legate with powers to absolve them from their guilt. They were to relate the Acts of the late Parliament, with the reconciliation and absolution of the Lords and Commons, and they were to give general notice that authority had been restored to the ecclesiastical courts to proceed against the enemies of the faith, and punish them according to law.

A day was then to be fixed on which the clergy should appear with their confessions, and be received into the Church. In the assignment of their several penances, a distinction was to be made between those who had taught heresy and those who had merely lapsed into it.

When the clergy had been reconciled, they were again in turn to exhort the laity in all churches and

cathedrals, to accept the grace which was offered to them, and that they might understand that they were not at liberty to refuse the invitation, a time was assigned to them within which their submissions must be all completed. A book was to be kept in every diocese, where the names of those who were received were to be entered. A visitation was to be held throughout the country at the end of the spring, and all who had not complied before Easter day, or who, after compliance, 'had returned to their vomit, would be proceeded against with the utmost severity of the law.<sup>1</sup>

The introduction of the Register was the Inquisition under another name. There was no limit, except in the humanity or the prudence of the bishops, to the tyranny which they would be enabled to exercise. The Cardinal professed to desire that, before heretics were punished with death, mild means should first be tried with them;<sup>2</sup> the meaning which he attached to the words was illustrated in an instant example

---

<sup>1</sup> Instructions of Cardinal Pole to the Bishops. BURNET's *Col-lectanea*

<sup>2</sup> The opinion of Pole, on the propriety of putting men to death for nonconformity, was strictly orthodox. He regarded heretics, he said, as rebellious children, with whom persuasion and mild correction should first be tried. 'Nec tamen, negârîm fieri posse,' he continued,

'ut alicujus opiniones tam perniciosæ existant, ipseque jam corruptus tam sit ad corrumpendos alios promptus ac sedulus ut non dubitârîm dicere eum e vitâ tolli oportere et tanquam putridum membrum e corpore excercari. Neque id tamen priusquam ejus sanandi causâ omnis leviter medendi tentata sit ratio'—Pole to the Cardinal of Augsburg *Epist. R&G* POL. vol. IV.

The instructions were the signal for the bishops to  
commence business On the day of their  
Jan 28 appearance, Gardiner, Bonner, Tunstal, and  
three other prelates, formed a court in St Mary  
Overy's Church, in Southwark; and Hooper, and  
Rogers, a canon of St Paul's, were brought up before  
them.

Rogers had been distinguished in the first bright  
days of Protestantism. He had been a fellow-labourer  
with Tyndal and Coverdale, at Antwerp, in the trans-  
lation of the Bible. Afterwards, taking a German  
wife, he lived for a time at Wittenberg, not unknown,  
we may be sure, to Martin Luther On the accession  
of Edward, he returned to England, and worked  
among the London clergy till the end of the reign;  
and on Mary's accession he was one of the preachers at  
Paul's Cross who had dared to speak against the  
reaction. He had been rebuked by the council, and  
his friends had urged him to fly, but, like Cranmer, he  
thought that duty required him to stay at his post,  
and, in due time, without, however, having given  
fresh provocation, he was shut up in Newgate by  
Bonner.

Hooper, when the unfortunate garment controversy  
was brought to an end, had shown by his conduct in  
his diocese that in one instance at least doctrinal fa-  
naticism was compatible with the loftiest excellence  
While the great world was scrambling for the Church  
property, Hooper was found petitioning the council for  
leave to augment impoverished livings out of his own

income.<sup>1</sup> In the hall of his palace at Gloucester a profuse hospitality was offered daily to those who were most in need of it. The poor of the city were invited by relays to solid meat dinners, and the Bishop with the courtesy of a gentleman dined with them, and treated them with the same respect as if they had been the highest in the land. He was one of the first persons arrested after Mary's accession, and the cross of persecution at once happily made his peace with Ridley. In an affectionate interchange of letters, the two confessors exhorted each other to constancy in the end which both foresaw, determining 'if they could not overthrow, at least to shake, those high altitudes' of spiritual tyranny.<sup>2</sup> The Fleet prison had now been Hooper's house for eighteen months. At first, on payment of heavy fees to the warden, he had lived in some degree of comfort, but as soon as his deprivation was declared, Gardiner ordered that he should be confined in one of the common prisoners' wards; where 'with a wicked man and a wicked woman' for his companions, with a bed of straw and a rotten counterpane, the prison sink on one side of his cell and Fleet ditch on the other, he waited till it would please Parliament to permit the dignitaries of the Church to murder him.<sup>3</sup>

These were the two persons with whom the Marian persecution opened. On their appearance in the court,

---

<sup>1</sup> *Privy Council Register*, Edward VI. MS

<sup>2</sup> Correspondence between Hooper and Ridley. Foxe, vol. vi.

<sup>3</sup> Account of Hooper's Imprisonment, by himself. Ibid.

they were required briefly to make their submission. They attempted to argue; but they were told that when Parliament had determined a thing, private men were not to call it in question, and they were allowed twenty-four hours to make up their minds. As they were leaving the church Hooper was heard to say, 'Come, brother Rogers, must we two take this matter first in hand and fry these faggots?' 'Yea, sir, with God's grace,' Rogers answered. 'Doubt not,' Hooper said, 'but God will give us strength.'

Jan 29 They were remanded to prison. The next morning they were brought again before the court. 'The Queen's mercy' was offered them, if they would recant, they refused, and they were sentenced to die. Rogers asked to be allowed to take leave of his wife and children. Gardiner, with a savage taunt, rejected the request. The day of execution was left uncertain. They were sent to Newgate to wait the Queen's pleasure. On the 30th, Taylor of Hadley, Laurence Sandars, rector of All Hallows, and the illustrious Bradford, were passed through the same forms with the same results. Another, a notorious preacher, called Card-maker, flinched, and made his submission.

Rogers was to 'break the ice,' as Bradford described Monday, it<sup>1</sup> On the morning of the 4th of February  
Feb 4 the wife of the keeper of Newgate came to his bedside. He was sleeping soundly, and she woke him with difficulty to let him know that he was wanted

---

<sup>1</sup> Bradford to Cranmer, Ridley, and Latimer. Foxe



The Bishop of London was waiting, she said, to degrade him from the priesthood, and he was then to go out and die. Rubbing his eyes, and collecting himself, he hurried on his clothes 'If it be thus,' he said, 'I need not tie my points.' Hooper had been sent for also for the ceremony of degradation. The vestments used in the mass were thrown over them, and were then one by one removed. They were pronounced deposed from the priestly office, incapable of offering further sacrifice—except, indeed, the only acceptable sacrifice which man can ever offer, the sacrifice of himself. Again Rogers entreated permission to see his wife, and again he was refused.

The two friends were then parted. Hooper was to suffer at Gloucester, and returned to his cell, Rogers was committed to the sheriff, and led out to Smithfield. The Catholics had affected to sneer at the faith of their rivals. There was a general conviction among them, which was shared probably by Pole and Gardiner, that the Protestants would all flinch at the last, that they had no 'doctrine that would abide the fire.' When Rogers appeared, therefore, the exultation of the people in his constancy overpowered the horror of his fate, and he was received with rounds of cheers. His family, whom he was forbidden to part with in private, were waiting on the way to see him—his wife with nine little ones at her side and a tenth upon her breast—and they, too, welcomed him with hysterical cries of joy, as if he were on his way to a festival<sup>1</sup>. Sir Robert Ro-

<sup>1</sup> 'Cejourd'uy a esté faicte la confirmation de l'alliance entre le

chester was in attendance at the stake to report his behaviour. At the last moment he was offered pardon if he would give way, but in vain. The fire was lighted. The suffering seemed to be nothing. He bathed his hands in the flame as 'if it was cold water,' raised his eyes to heaven, and died.

The same night a party of the royal guard took charge of Hooper, the order of whose execution was arranged by a mandate from the Crown. As 'an obstinate, false, and detestible heretic,' he was to be burned in the city 'which he had infected with his pernicious doctrines;' and 'forasmuch as being a vain-glorious person, and delighting in his tongue,' he 'might persuade the people into agreement with him, had he liberty to use it,' care was to be taken that he should not speak either at the stake or on his way to it<sup>1</sup>. He was carried down on horseback by easy stages; and on the forenoon of Thursday the 7th, he dined at Cirencester, 'at a woman's house who had always hated the truth, and spoken all evil she could of him.' This woman had shared in the opinion that Protestants had no serious convictions, and had often expressed her belief that Hooper, particularly, would fail if brought

---

Pape et ce Royaulme par ung sacrifice publique & solempnel d'ung docteur predicant nommé Rogerus, lequel a esté brulé tout vif pour estre Lutherien, mais il est mort persistant en son opinion, à quoy la plus grand part de ce peuple a prins tel plaisir qu'ilz n'ont eu crainte de luy

faire plusieurs acclamations pour comforter son courage, et mesmes ses enfans y ont assistés le consolantes de telle façon qu'il sembloit qu'on le merast aux nopces'—Noailles to Montmorency *Ambassades*, vol. iv

<sup>1</sup> Mandate for the execution of Hooper. BURNET's *Collectanea*

to the trial. She found that both in him and in his creed there was more than she had supposed ; and ‘ perceiving the cause of his coming, she lamented his case with tears, and showed him all the friendship she could ’

At five in the evening he arrived at Gloucester. The road, for a mile outside the town, was lined with people, and the mayor was in attendance, with an escort, to prevent a rescue. But the feeling was rather of awe and expectation, and those who loved Hooper best knew that the highest service which he could render to his faith was to die for it.

A day’s interval of preparation was allowed him, with a private room. He was in the custody of the sheriff ; ‘ and there was this difference observed between the keepers of the bishops’ prisons and the keepers of the Crown prisons, that the bishops’ keepers were ever cruel, the keepers of the Crown prisons showed, for the most part, such favour as they might.’<sup>1</sup> After a sound night’s rest, Hooper rose early, and passed the morning in solitary prayer. In the course of the day, young Sir Anthony Kingston, one of the commissioners appointed to superintend the execution, expressed a wish to see him. Kingston was an old acquaintance, Hooper having been the means of bringing him out of evil ways. He entered the room unannounced. Hooper was on his knees, and, looking round at the intruder, did not at first know him.

Feb 8

---

<sup>1</sup> FOXE

Kingston told him his name, and then, bursting into tears, said —

‘Oh, consider; life is sweet and death is bitter, therefore, seeing life may be had, desire to live, for life hereafter may do good’

Hooper answered —

‘I thank you for your counsel, yet it is not so friendly as I could have wished it to be True it is, alas! Master Kingston, that death is bitter and life is sweet; therefore I have settled myself, through the strength of God’s Holy Spirit, patiently to pass through the fire prepared for me, desiring you and others to commend me to God’s mercy in your prayers’

‘Well, my Lord,’ said Kingston, ‘then there is no remedy, and I will take my leave I thank God that ever I knew you, for God appointed you to call me, being a lost child. I was both an adulterer and a fornicator, and God, by your good instruction, brought me to the forsaking of the same’

They parted, the tears on both their faces Other friends were admitted afterwards The Queen’s orders were little thought of, for Hooper had won the hearts of the guard on his way from London. In the evening the mayor and aldermen came, with the sheriffs, to shake hands with him ‘It was a sign of their good will,’ he said, ‘and a proof that they had not forgotten the lessons which he used to teach them’ He begged the sheriffs that there might be ‘a quick fire, to make an end shortly;’ and for himself he would be as obedient as they could wish.

‘If you think I do amiss in anything,’ he said, ‘hold up your fingers, and I have done; for I am not come hither as one enforced or compelled to die, I might have had my life, as is well known, with worldly gain, if I would have accounted my doctrine falsehood and heresy.’

In the evening, at his own request, he was left alone. He slept undisturbed the early part of the night. From the time that he awoke till the guard entered, he was on his knees.

The morning was windy and wet. The scene of the execution was an open space Feb 9 opposite the college, near a large elm tree, where Hooper had been accustomed to preach. Several thousand people were collected to see him suffer; some had climbed the tree, and were seated in the storm and rain among the leafless branches. A company of priests were in a room over the college gates, looking out with pity or satisfaction, as God or the devil was in their hearts.

‘Alas!’ said Hooper, when he was brought out, ‘why be all these people assembled here, and speech is prohibited me?’ He had suffered in prison from sciatica, and was lame, but he limped cheerfully along with a stick, and smiled when he saw the stake. At the foot of it he knelt; and as he began to pray, a box was brought, and placed on a stool before his eyes, which he was told contained his pardon if he would recant.

‘Away with it!’ Hooper only cried, ‘away with it!’

‘Despatch him, then,’ Lord Chandos said, ‘seeing there is no remedy.’

He was undressed to his shirt, in the cold ; a pound of gunpowder was tied between his legs, and as much more under either arm ; he was fastened with an iron hoop to the stake, and he assisted with his own hands to arrange the faggots round him.

The fire was then brought, but the wood was green ; the dry straw only kindled, and burning for a few moments was blown away by the wind. A violent flame paralyzed the nerves at once, a slow one was torture. More faggots were thrown in, and again lighted, and this time the martyr’s face was singed and scorched ; but again the flames sank, and the hot damp sticks smouldered round his legs. He wiped his eyes with his hands, and cried, ‘For God’s love, good people, let me have more fire !’ A third supply of dry fuel was laid about him, and this time the powder exploded, but it had been ill-placed, or was not enough. ‘Lord Jesu, have mercy on me !’ he exclaimed ; ‘Lord Jesu, receive my spirit !’ These were his last articulate words ; but his lips were long seen to move, and he continued to beat his breast with his hands. It was not till after three quarters of an hour of torment that he at last expired.

The same day, at the same hour, Rowland Taylor was burnt on Aldham Common in Suffolk. Laurence Sandars had been destroyed the day before at Coventry, kissing the stake, and crying, ‘Welcome the cross of Christ ! welcome everlasting life !’ The first-fruits of

the Whitehall pageant were gathered By the side of the rhetoric of the hysterical dreamer who presided in that vain melodrama, let me place a few words addressed by the murdered Bishop of Gloucester to his friends, a week before his sentence.

‘The grace of God be with you, amen I did write unto you of late, and told you what extremity the Parliament had concluded upon concerning religion, suppressing the truth, and setting forth the untruth, intending to cause all men, by extremity, to forswear themselves; and to take again for the head of the Church him that is neither head nor member of it, but a very enemy, as the word of God and all ancient writers do record And for lack of law and authority they will use force and extremity, which have been the arguments to defend the Pope and Popery since their authority first began in the world But now is the time of trial, to see whether we fear more God or man. It was an easy thing to hold with Christ whilst the Prince and the world held with him; but now the world hateth him, it is the true trial who be his.

‘Wherefore in the name, and in the virtue, strength, and power of his Holy Spirit, prepare yourselves in any case to adversity and constancy. Let us not run away when it is most time to fight. Remember, none shall be crowned but such as fight manfully; and he that endureth to the end shall be saved. Ye must now turn your cogitations from the perils you see, and mark the felicity that followeth the peril—either victory in this world of your enemies, or else a surrender of this life to

inherit the everlasting kingdom Beware of beholding too much the felicity or misery of this world, for the consideration and too earnest love or fear of either of them draweth from God Wherefore think with yourselves as touching the felicity of the world, it is good, but none otherwise than it standeth with the favour of God, it is to be kept, but yet so far forth as by keeping it we lose not God It is good abiding and tarrying still among our friends here, but yet so that we tarry not therewithal in God's displeasure, and hereafter dwell with the devils in fire everlasting There is nothing under God but may be kept, so that God, being above all things we have, be not lost Of adversity judge the same Imprisonment is painful, but yet liberty upon evil conditions is more painful The prisons stink, but yet not so much as sweet houses, where the fear and true honour of God lack I must be alone and solitary, it is better so to be, and have God with me, than to be in company with the wicked Loss of goods is great, but loss of God's grace and favour is greater. I am a poor simple creature, and cannot tell how to answer before such a great sort of noble, learned, and wise men It is better to make answer before the pomp and pride of wicked men than to stand naked, in the sight of all heaven and earth, before the just God at the latter day I shall die by the hands of the cruel men; but he is blessed that loseth this life full of miseries, and findeth the life of eternal joys It is pain and grief to depart from goods and friends, but yet not so much as to depart from grace and heaven itself Wherefore there is



neither felicity nor adversity of this world that can appear to be great, if it be weighed with the joys or pains in the world to come.’<sup>1</sup>

Of five who had been sentenced, four were thus despatched. Bradford, the fifth, was respited, in the hope that the example might tell upon him. Six more were waiting their condemnation in Bonner’s prisons. The enemies of the Church were to submit or die. So said Gardiner, in the name of the English priesthood, with the passion of a fierce revenge. So said the legate and the Queen, in the delirious belief that they were chosen instruments of Providence.

So, however, did not say the English lay statesmen. The first and unexpected effect was to produce a difference of opinion in the Court itself. Philip, to whom Renard had insisted on the necessity of more moderate measures, found it necessary to clear himself of responsibility and the day after Hooper suffered, Alphonso a Castro, the King’s chaplain, preached a sermon in the royal presence, in which he denounced the execution, and inveighed against the tyranny of the bishops. The Lords of the Council ‘talked strangely;’ and so deep was the indignation, that the Flemish ambassador again expected Gardiner’s destruction. Paget refused to act with him in the council any more, and Philip himself talked more and more of going abroad. Renard, from the tone of his correspondence, believed evidently at this moment that the game of the Church was played

---

<sup>1</sup> Hooper to his friends. *FOXE*, vol. VI.

out and lost. He wrote to the Emperor to entreat that when the King went he might not himself be left behind · he was held responsible by the people for the Queen's misdoings; and a party of the young nobility had sworn to kill him <sup>1</sup>

Among the people the constancy of the martyrs had called out a burst of admiration. It was rumoured that bystanders had endeavoured to throw themselves into the fire to die at their side <sup>2</sup>. A prisoner, on examination before Bonner, was asked if he thought he could bear the flame. You may try me, if you will, he said. A candle was brought, and he held his hand, without flinching, in the blaze <sup>3</sup>. With such a humour abroad,

<sup>1</sup> 'L'évesque de Londres avec les autres évesques assemblée en ce lieu pour l'exécution du statut conclu en dernier Parlement sur le faict de la religion, a fait brusler trois hérétiques, l'un en ce lieu et les deux autres en pays, et sont après pour continuer contre les obstenez dont les nobles et le peuple hérétique murmure et s'altère, selon que l'ay faict entendre au roy par ung billet par escript duquel la copie va avec les présentes, et la noblesse tousjours désire d'avoir occasion d'attirer le peuple et le faire joindre à révolte avec elle, et priévoys si Dieu n'y remédie, ou que telle précipitation ne se modère, les choses prendront dangereux succès, et signamment les partiaux, contre le chan celier ne perdront ceste commodité de vengeance. Les dictes conseillers se retirent de négoces. Pa-

get se voyant en la male grâce de la royne, et de la pluspart du conseil, se tiouve souvent au quartier dudit Sieur roy le peuple parle contre la royne estrangement . . . Comme j'entendz que l'on parle pour me faire demeurer, et séjourner par deça après le départ du roy, je n'ay peu délaissier de supplier très humblement vostre majesté me excuser je suys certain l'on me tueroit incontinant après ledict parlement,' &c — Renard to Charles V. *Gravelle Papers*, vol. iv pp 400—402

<sup>2</sup> 'Et a l'on dict que plusieurs . se sont voulu volontairement mettre sur le bûche à costé de ceulx que l'on brusloit'—*Ibid* p. 404

<sup>3</sup> 'Un bourgeois estant inter-rougé par ledict évesque de Londres se souffriront bien le feug, respondist qu'il en fist l'expérience et aiant fait apporter une chandelle allumée,

it seemed to Renard that the Lords had only to give the signal and the Queen and the bishops would be overwhelmed

He expected the movement in the spring. It is singular that, precisely as in the preceding winter, the deliberate intentions of moderate and competent persons were anticipated and defeated by a partial and premature conspiracy. At the end of February a confederate revealed a project for an insurrection, partly religious and partly agrarian. Placards were to be issued simultaneously in all parts of the country, declaring that the Queen's pregnancy was a delusion, and that she intended to pass upon the nation a supposititious child; the people were, therefore, invited to rise in arms, drive out the Spaniards, revolutionize religion, tear down the enclosures of the commons, and proclaim Courtenay King under the title of Edward VII.<sup>1</sup> In such a scheme the lords and country gentlemen could bear no part. They could not risk a repetition of the popular rebellions of the late reign, and they resolved to wait the issue of the Queen's pregnancy, while they watched over the safety of Elizabeth. The project of the Court was now to send her to Flanders, where she was to remain under charge of the Emperor; if possible, she was to be persuaded to go thither of her own accord; if she

il met la main dessus sans la retirer ny se mouvoir'—Renard to Charles V *Granvelle Papers*, vol vi p 404. The man's name was Tomkins Foxe, who tells the story as an illustration of Bonner's brutality,

says that the Bishop himself held the hand. But Renard's is probably the truer version.

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V *Granvelle Papers*, vol iv p 403.

could not be persuaded, she would be otherwise removed. Lord William Howard, her constant guardian, requested permission to see and speak with her, and learn her own feelings. He was refused; but he went to her notwithstanding, and had a long private interview with her, and the Court could only talk bitterly of his treason among themselves, make propositions to send him to the Tower which they durst not execute, and devise some other method of dealing with their difficulty<sup>1</sup>

Meantime, Philip, who had pined for freedom after six weeks' experience of his bride, was becoming unmanageably impatient. A paper of advice and exhortation survives, which was addressed on this occasion by the ambassador to his master, with reflections on the condition of England, and on the conduct which the King should pursue.

'Your Majesty must remember,' said Renard, 'the purpose for which you came to England. The French had secured the Queen of Scotland for the Dauphin. They had afterwards made an alliance with the late King, and spared no pains to secure the support of England. To counteract their schemes, and to obtain a counter-advantage in the war, the Emperor, on the accession of the Queen, resolved that your Highness should marry her. Your Highness, it is true, might wish that she was more agreeable,<sup>2</sup> but, on the other hand, she is infinitely virtuous, and, things being as

---

<sup>1</sup> Renard to Charles V. *Gravelle Papers*, vol. iv pp 404, 405. —Renard to Philip. *Ibid* p 394.

<sup>2</sup> 'Et combien l'on pouvoit se-

they are, your Highness, like a magnanimous prince, must remember her condition, and exert yourself, so far as you conveniently may, to assist her in the management of the Kingdom.

‘Your Highness must consider that your departure will be misrepresented, your enemies will speak of it as a flight rather than as a necessary absence. The French will be busy with their intrigues, and the Queen will not be pleased to lose you. The administration is in confusion, the divisions in the council are more violent than ever. Religion is unsettled; the heretics take advantage of these late barbarous punishments to say, that they are to be converted by fire, because their enemies are unable to convince them by reason or example. The orthodox clergy are still unreformed, and their scandalous conduct accords ill with the offices to which they are called<sup>1</sup>

‘Further, your Highness will do well to weigh the uncertainty of the succession. Should the Queen’s pregnancy prove a mistake, the heretics will place their hopes in Elizabeth and here you are in a difficulty whatever be done; for if Elizabeth be set aside, the crown will go to the Queen of Scots, if she succeed, she will restore heresy, and naturally attach herself to France. Some step must be taken about this before you leave the country, and you must satisfy the Queen

---

<sup>1</sup> ‘Les gens d’église ne sont reformées, il y a plusieurs abus qui donnent scandale et mauvaïse impression, et ilz ne respondent aux

offices auxquels ilz sont appelez’—  
Renard to Philip. *Granville Papers*,  
vol iv p 395

that you will assist her in her general difficulties, as a good lord and husband ought to do <sup>1</sup>

‘The council must be reformed, if possible, and the number diminished; those who remain must be invited to renew their oaths to your Majesty. Regard must be had to the navy, and especially to the admiral Lord William Howard; and above all there must be no more of this barbarous precipitancy in putting heretics to death. The people must be won from their errors by gentleness and by better instruction. Except in cases of especial scandal, the bishops must not be permitted to irritate them by cruelty, and the legate must see that a better example is set by the clergy themselves <sup>2</sup> The debts of the Crown must be attended to, and your Majesty should endeavour to do something which will give you popularity with the masses. Before all things, attend to the succession.

‘You cannot set aside the dispositions of King Henry in favour of Elizabeth without danger of rebellion. To recognize her as heir-presumptive without providing her with a husband, who can control her, will be perilous to the Queen. The mean course between the ex-

---

<sup>1</sup> ‘Donner ce contentement à la royne d’avon intention de asseurer et establir ses affaires et la secourir comme bon Seigneur et mari’

<sup>2</sup> ‘Que ès choses de la religion l’on ne use de précipitation par punition cruelle, ains avec la modération, et mansuétude requise, et dont l’église a tousjours usé; retirant le peuple de l’erreur par doctrine et

prédication, et que si ce n’est un acte scandaleux l’on ne passe oultre en chastoy que puisse altérer le peuple et le desgouter, que la reformation requise pour le bon exemple, soit introduite sur les gens de l’église comme le légat advisea pour le mieulx’ — Renard to Philip. *Granvelle Papers*, vol iv p<sup>e</sup> 395

tremes will be, therefore, for your Highness to bring about her marriage with the Prince of Savoy. It will please the English, provided that her rights of inheritance are not interfered with, and although they will not go to war for our quarrel, they will not in that case be unwilling to assist in expelling the French from Piedmont.

‘If your Majesty approve, the thing can be done without delay. At all events, before you leave the country, you should see the Princess yourself, give her your advice to be faithful to her sister, and, on your part, promise that you will be her friend, and assist her where you can find opportunity.’